





# GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 06

*Zi Chan Bao Zeng*

Epub creation by Lisa Hayes

# God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

# Synopsis

---

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 501: Vietnamese Princess

---

If it were in Gui Ning City, the common benchmark was a 100 sets of equipment for 10,000 tonnes of rations.

After negotiations had ended, Yao Li Hua heaved another sigh of relief, although his heart was bitter.

This time, Yao Li Hua knew he had suffered the short end of the stick. It was partly because Mu Xiang Ling was truly devious, as well as the VPDC's urgent need of the 10,000 tonnes of rations.

Without the 10,000 tonnes of rations, the survivors under the VPDC would definitely not be able to survive the winter. Because of this, Yao Li Hua could only allow Mu Xiang Ling to take advantage bit by bit in the negotiations, until she reached his threshold.

Yao Li Hua then turned to Yue Zhong and introduced the 2 ladies with him: "Leader Yue Zhong, this is our Vietnam 1st Princess Ruan Lan and 2nd Princess Ruan Ju. Our VPDC hopes that you will be willing to take them in as wives."

Mu Xiang Ling eyed the both of them and the corners of her mouth lifted in a smile as she spoke: "I remember that Vietnam was a communist regime, there wasn't even a king, how can there be princesses?"

Yao Li Hua smiled lightly as he explained: "It's true that we did not have a king. However, our princesses hailed from a bloodline of the late King Ruan Shi before his regime fell in the rise of communism. They truly possess the precious bloodline of royalty."

Ruan Lan and Ruan Ju were truly beautiful women. Prior to the apocalypse, they had been leading pampered lives. After the apocalypse set in, they came to belong to Yao Li Hua, who had kept them as bargaining chips.

Yao Li Hua knew that this sort of precious women would easily

attract the possessiveness of men. While he personally didn't consider the bloodline to be anything, he knew that it could attract countless people from higher positions. At the same time, Ruan Lan and Ruan Ju had undergone many lessons in culture, etiquette, and with their looks, they were the most valuable resource in Yao Li Hua's hands.

Hearing those words, pain flashed in the eyes of the young Vietnamese man who had followed Yao Li Hua. He looked somewhat blankly at the beautiful Ruan Lan, as though his heart had broken into countless pieces.

Yue Zhong eyed them and replied indifferently: "I just so happen to be in need of 2 serving girls. Let them come here!"

Hearing that indifferent tone of Yue Zhong, Ruan Lan gritted her teeth and clenched her fists. Before the apocalypse, countless youths had fallen at her feet trying to get her attention.

At that point in time, she would not have even spared Yue Zhong a second look with such ordinary features. However, in such a situation, where her status as the princess of the previous Vietnam kingdom wouldn't matter for shit, she had to marry a guy in which she had no say in choice. She felt extremely sad.

Yao Li Hua's eyes flashed with an amused light, but he firmly refused: "No way, they're the pride of our Vietnam. If you were to marry them, I wouldn't say anything. But if you want them as your serving maids, without any special reasons, I have no way of agreeing."

Yue Zhong didn't seem to mind and replied: "Then it's fine."

Yue Zhong had come across his fair share of beautiful women, and while Ruan Lan and Ruan Ju were truly top beauties, he had even more beautiful women amongst his harem, Zhuo Ya Tong, Chen Yao, Ji Qing Wu, Guo Yu, and even Xin Jia Rou. They were all beautiful in their own right and had the charm to boot. Mu Xiang Ling was still young, and had not grown, but after a few

years, she was sure to become a beauty that would not lose to Ruan Lan. Hence, Yue Zhong did not feel like he must obtain Ruan Lan or Ruan Ju.

Yao Li Hua hastily spoke: "Leader Yue Zhong, I just want a little bit of dowry! Say... 100 tonnes of rations? As long as you give me a 100 tonnes of rations, our Vietnam Princess is willing to become your most loyal serving maid."

Yao Li Hua truly lacked rations now, and he had to rack his brains and find ways to obtain rations and weapons. Only then the VPDC could continue to develop and not crumble or collapse. Furthermore, he hoped that he can place some Vietnamese women by Yue Zhong's side to help speak for the Vietnamese. Only then, would the treatment of the Vietnamese under Yue Zhong would be better.

Hearing those words, a huge sense of shame welled up in Ruan Lan's heart. She was the Princess of Vietnam in the past, and she was the favoured daughter of the heavens! Now she was actually being used to bargain for 100 tonnes of rations.

Yue Zhong chuckled condescendingly: "Alright! I'll issue you another 100 tonnes in rations. As an added bonus, you may use 5 ammo casings to exchange for a bullet."

Yao Li Hua immediately thanked Yue Zhong in excitement: "Thank you Leader Yue Zhong!! Thank you!!"

In the war against zombies, humans lacked ammo the most. Now that Yue Zhong had promised such an exchange, Yao Li Hua was naturally beyond happy. He felt that he had not lost out on offering those 2 precious princesses. If Yue Zhong had given him such a deal in the first place, he wouldn't have minded giving the 2 princesses right away.

As for Yue Zhong, he was celebrating inwardly that there was still the use of this blockade of the VPDC in the way of the zombies in Hanoi. As for giving the bullets to Yao Li Hua, those would be



reloaded bullets anyway, only his troops would be issued new bullets.

Yao Li Hua then gazed at Ruan Lan and Ruan Ju with a solemn face: "Princess Ruan Lan, Princess Ruan Ju, from today on, you 2 are Leader Yue Zhong's serving maids! Aren't you going to greet your master?"

Yao Li Hua simply did not care about the royal bloodline in Ruan Lan and Ruan Ju's veins. He just thought of them as more valuable bargaining chips.

Ruan Lan gritted her teeth as she heard those words, holding her sister's hands and came in front of Yue Zhong. She then knelt and used some halting Chinese: "Ruan Lan greets master!"

The loli Ruan Ju beside Ruan Lan also used the same greeting: "Ruan Ju greets master!"

Yue Zhong eyed Yao Li Hua mildly and said: "You guys are dismissed!"

Yao Li Hua brought his bodyguard along with him in a satisfied manner, having achieved what he came here to do.

The moment Yao Li Hua left, Mu Xiang Ling bounded to his side and grabbed onto him like a koala bear: "Big Brother! You can't look at them, if you want a woman, go find my mother. My mother is so much more beautiful than these 2."

"Or if you like her type, I can satisfy you too~~!" Mu Xiang Ling looked at Ruan Ju, as she looked at Yue Zhong with an evil grin, blowing lightly into his ear.

"Idiot! What do you take me as?" Yue Zhong pried Mu Xiang Ling away from his body and stared at her gravely.

Mu Xiang Ling chuckled: "A huge pervert who does not have mercy on any woman, not even to a little loli like me, you huge lolicon!"

Yue Zhong was angry this time and he grabbed Mu Xiang Ling and placed her on his legs, hitting her buttocks: "You're getting too audacious, see how I'll teach you a lesson!"

"Ah~~! Ya~~~! No~~~! Ah~~~! No!!" Mu Xiang Ling began shrieking and moaning in sounds that would cause most people to turn red with embarrassment.

"Yue Zhong, how can you act against a child!!" At this time, the doors were pushed open as Chen Yao came rushing in with an anxious look. She could tolerate Yue Zhong having other women, but she would not allow him to prey on a child.

When she barged in and saw clearly that the matter was not what she imagined, she became lost and felt extremely awkward.

Yue Zhong also felt awkward as he shot Mu Xiang Ling a stare, gritting his teeth: "Stupid lass! What are you shouting for? My reputation is gone because of you."

Mu Xiang Ling pried herself away and glared back at Yue Zhong in indignation, laughing shrilly: "Who ask you to bully me? You deserve it, stupid lolicon. Hehe!!"

Mu Xiang Ling then bounced away, passing by Chen Yao. At the same time, she flashed Chen Yao a provocative smile, saying: "Chen Yao-Jiejie! Don't worry, he doesn't dare to lay his hands on me. But be careful! Sooner or later, he'll belong to my mother and I!" With that she bounded off.

Seeing that free-spirited girl coming and going as she pleased, with her antics, Yue Zhong was also at a loss. If he tried to, he was no match for her wily antics and cunning. However, he couldn't bear to truly hurt her, nor did he want to affect her character. After all, he had plenty of women who held him in fear and awe. He didn't need another one.

At this time, Nangong Bing Yun came into the room beside Chen Yao.

Ming Jia Jia was seated on Yue Zhong's lap, and leaned back in his arms, looking like a bolster and some sort of mascot.

Yue Zhong turned to look at Chen Yao and directly asked: "Chen Yao, your timing was just nice. I want to ask you, are you interested in running Thai Nguyen and Lang Son City?"

Hearing those words, Nangong Bing Yun and Ruan Lan's eyes burned with passion. Such a role of managing over 200,000 survivors was a huge responsibility, and was a huge attraction to anyone with ambition.

"If only that position was mine!!" Nangong Bing Yun's ambitious heart was set ablaze. She had her taste of power before the apocalypse, and after losing it, she sought for it even more. She wanted to become a ruler of a faction badly.

Chen Yao thought for a while, before shaking her head: "I can't do it!! I don't have the ability to manage these 2 cities."

Chen Yao had been a leader for a period of time as well, and with it, she came to recognize the huge burden of responsibility. She knew herself now, that she wasn't a capable leader, because she lacked the viciousness and decisiveness of a leader. She could not make the decisions in a critical situation to save her faction, which could potentially destroy what Yue Zhong had built up.

Hearing Chen Yao's refusal, Nangong Bing Yun could not resist anymore and stepped forward: "Let me! Please let me do it! I'm willing to run the cities well for you, Leader!"

# Chapter 502: Roadblock!

---

"You?" Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed as he stared at Nangong Bing Yun for quite a while.

Nangong Bing Yun stood straight, accentuating her figure that was full of vitality and curves. For power, she would not hesitate to use her body in exchange.

Yue Zhong could detect a strong ambition in her eyes, and he flat-out refused: "No! You may have the ability, but your qualifications and contributions are lacking."

Yue Zhong had considered Chen Yao to become the leader of the Vietnam district because she had been the earliest to follow him to Vietnam. Furthermore, to support him, she had done her best to raise troops, resulting in soldiers like Gan Tao and Pan Jin Yong. These people were also willing to die for her.

Of course, amongst his current subordinates, handing the huge responsibility to Nangong Bing Yun was not impossible, however, he had no current plans to do so.

Nangong Bing Yun was able to round up over 200 Vietnamese survivors to lend their hand to his cause within a short amount of time, forming a decent-sized power. Her abilities were truly astounding, very few women were as decisive and intelligent as her. Even Chen Yao might not match her in this area.

However, there were plenty of capable people, and Yue Zhong was still unfamiliar with Nangong Bing Yun, and he was not willing to just casually hand her a position of power.

To Yue Zhong, he would like to utilize capable people, but more importantly, they had to be loyal subordinates. Otherwise, this establishment that he had painstakingly obtained would become a ripe peach for others to pluck.

Nangong Bing Yun had a look of bitterness as she retreated

behind Chen Yao, with a single: "Yes!"

Yue Zhong then thought for a few moments, before asking Ming Jia Jia: "Jia Jia! What about you?"

Ming Jia Jia had fought alongside Yue Zhong all the way to Guang Xi, having been with him almost every step of the way. Her position amongst the Chinese survivors in Vietnam was also high. If she was to run the cities, nobody would object.

Ming Jia Jia looked at Yue Zhong with those bright eyes of hers, replying as though she couldn't bear to: "If that is Master's wish, Jia Jia would definitely listen, and do a good job! However, Jia Jia hopes to stay by your side, and pour tea for you!"

If she became the leader of a base, then Ming Jia Jia would not be able to stay by Yue Zhong's side. She had to run the affairs of the Vietnamese cities. Everyone had different ambitions. Ming Jia Jia preferred staying by Yue Zhong's side as a maid compared to running a city.

Nangong Bing Yun looked at the loli lying in Yue Zhong's arms with a hint of envy. She had proposed to take up the role and was declined, but that little girl had obtained it so easily. This caused her to be filled with jealousy.

Yue Zhong rubbed her little head and said: "Then you just have to stay here for a year. After that, I will send someone to replace you."

Yue Zhong had already laid down the regulatory frameworks and basic outline of how things were going to be run. Ming Jia Jia just had to be here to ensure it all ran smoothly, and there wouldn't be any major problems.

Currently, in the north of Vietnam, Yue Zhong was basically the biggest. Furthermore, he could transport resources from Guang Xi in. The VPDC that was stuck between Thai Nguyen and the zombies in Hanoi could not compare at all.

Ming Jia Jia replied softly: "En!"

Chen Yao hesitated a while before asking: "Are you returning to Guang Xi?"

"En! I want to go and do some preparations for the future clash in Yan Zhou!" Yue Zhong nodded in reply.

Yan Zhou was one of the largest industrial cities in the Guang Xi region, and it had the largest steel factories and military plants. If they could obtain Yan Zhou, then Yue Zhong's establishments would gain a huge upgrade in power. Hence, his entire attention was going to be focused there.

The number of zombies in Yan Zhou's direction numbered at least 3 million. At the same time, between Gui Ning City and Yan Zhou, there was Bin Qi City. There were at least another 2 million zombies there. It wasn't going to be a simple matter of taking over Yan Zhou.

Chen Yao's expression turned resolute as she spoke up: "I'll follow you to Guang Xi!"

Yue Zhong eyed Chen Yao and nodded slightly: "Fine!"

Nangong Bing Yan immediately stepped forwards with a strange glint in her eyes, saying: "Please allow me to join you as well, I want to fight alongside you!"

Nangong Bing Yun was an intelligent woman. She knew that the old order of society was gone, and things were different. Only by accumulating enough merits would she be able to gain a footing and a high position in this new order.

"Good!" Yue Zhong eyed Nangong Bing Yun and agreed to her request. This woman was ambitious and capable, however, with him around, she would not be able to overstep her boundaries.

=====

Out on the vast plains, which was covered by snow, a military jeep, an IFV, a fuel truck, a bus, as well as 10 Humvees drove along the road.

Out of the blue, 3 survivors leapt out from the side, and knelt in front of the fleet of armored vehicles, their eyes showing hints of despair.

The jeep at the front of the fleet came to a stop, and out stepped Yue Zhong, Chen Yao, Xin Jia Rou and Ning Yu Xin.

Yue Zhong eyed the 3 survivors and frowned: "Who are you people?"

"Sir! Please, please help us! Please!! If you don't, I'm willing to kneel till I die here!" One of the survivors began to kowtow and plead.

"If you want death, I can grant you that wish. Don't use it to threaten me!" Yue Zhong became irritated, and pulled out a handgun to fire a shot at that survivor.

Peng! A single bullet pierced the ground in front of the survivor, leaving a hole.

Seeing how forceful Yue Zhong was, the 3 survivors trembled, and did not dare move in fear.

Yue Zhong eyed them coldly and barked: "What happened? Speak properly!"

The leader of the trio began to kowtow as tears flowed: "Sir, we are survivors from Bin Qi City. We had been hiding nearby in order to survive. However, just a few days prior, a number of bandits charged into our base and began pillaging and killing. We barely managed to escape, and hope that someone can come help us. Our families are still within the base! As long as Sir can help us, we are willing to dedicate our entire lives to you!"

When Yue Zhong heard it, he knew what sort of thing had happened. Forcefully conquering establishments was a common thing in the current world, and most bigger factions would want to swallow up the smaller factions.

Yue Zhong's icy gaze swept past all three survivors, and under

the intense pressure, one of them couldn't bear the stress and lowered his head.

Yue Zhong looked towards the direction that the 3 survivors had jumped out from, noting that it was all snow-covered ground. There was a small valley beyond, where little houses could be seen at the foot of the hill.

Yue Zhong signaled, and Bai Xiao Sheng and Li Shi Min shot forwards like arrows, bringing 8 other experts with them.

After being baptized through countless slaughter, Li Shi Min's potential had been released fully. He had already become a formidable expert, and even if it was a kid who wielded a weapon in front of him, he would not hesitate to kill the child without mercy. His Explosive Arrows could wreck even an armored vehicle totally from a distance of 500m. His combat prowess was truly astonishing.

Seeing those soldiers running off to the distance, the middle-aged survivor who had been crying had a change in expression, turning into one of uneasiness.

In a forest near those small buildings, there were 200 militants hiding, each of them wielding different melee weapons. They looked at the 10 men running over, and their faces turned.

One slightly tanned man, with a white tiger tattoo approached another burly man who was bald, and asked: "What do we do Boss? Shall we act?"

The baldy looked at Bai Xiao Sheng, Li Shi Min and the other soldiers with hint of greed towards their equipment, and said: "Do it!! Kill them, then we shall quickly disperse!"

Bai Xiao Sheng, Li Shi Min and the other soldiers were basically armed to the teeth. Each of them wielded a .05 submachine gun, a Raven Combat Uniform, 6 hand-grenades, 6 magazine rounds, Tang Replica Blades, 3-edged knives and Type 2 Mutant Beasts



hide. They were really covered head to toe in valuable items. With those amazing items, each of their combat abilities could be exhibited to the extreme.

As for the baldy, amongst his 200 subordinates, only 18 had rifles, 16 had handguns, as well as 200 rounds. The majority relied on melee weapons, and when they saw this group of soldiers with decent equipment, their eyes turned red with greed.

Bai Xiao Sheng and Li Shi Min were experienced fighters. They proceeded with caution, and searched the area for enemies effectively and efficiently. Finally, with the help of one of the soldiers with the [Bio-Sense] ability, they were led closer to the forest with the militants.

The moment Bai Xiao Sheng came near the forest, he activated his Second Order High Speed Movement, and instantly, his movement speed exceeded that of a Type 2 Lightning, shooting through the forest like a spectre. With a flash of his blade, one of the militants had his head decapitated.

Taking down a militant in one move, Bai Xiao Sheng did not stop there as he flashed about, firing his gun, and a number of militants were shot full of holes before they even had the chance to react.

The baldy saw how easily Bai Xiao Sheng had killed over 20 of his subordinates and his face turned pale and his back broke out in cold sweat. He bellowed: "Do it!! Kill them!! Only then will we live!!"

Under that command, the militants began to charge at Bai Xiao Sheng with their melee weapons.

Only to hear multiple gunshots, as the militants were sprayed with bullets, and they slumped to the floor.

"Surrender! Or Die!" Right as the baldy was thinking of escaping, a sharp blade stopped at his neck, with Bai Xiao Sheng's cold hiss sounding behind him.

# Chapter 503: Terrifying Hailstorm!

---

"I surrender!!" The baldy did not hesitate to scream out his choice, as he knew he had no way of standing up against these fearsome experts. He still wanted to live.

The moment the baldy surrendered, the rest of the militants began to throw their weapons down. They were already collapsing from the rate at which Bai Xiao Sheng had almost eliminated them.

Yue Zhong eyed those militants as they were marched out of the forest towards them, before he turned to look at the middle-aged man coldly.

Being looked at by that piercing gaze, the middle-aged survivor began to shake uncontrollably, as he kowtowed: "Sir!! Sir!! Please!! I was forced!! I was forced by them!! Please spare my dog life!! Please!!"

Chen Yao eyed the middle-aged survivor and spoke coldly: "Tell me your background!"

"Yes!!" The middle-aged man kowtowed profusely before he proceeded to explain.

It turned out that this middle-aged survivor was called Zhang Xiao, and he was an ordinary mechanical engineer prior to the apocalypse. After the apocalypse happened, his profession was not as popular, since farming and other sort of manual labour was sought after. Hence, his circumstances had been dire ever since, until he met this bunch of bandits, and became their bait, to lure kind-hearted souls to fall into the trap set by these bandits.

However, they never imagined for a huge shark like Yue Zhong to bite, causing them to suffer, on top of not being able to get anything.

The bald leader was called Hu Fei, and he was a Level 23 Enhancer. However, he had never learnt any skills, and relied on

enhancements to improve his body attributes.

Since the apocalypse, a year had passed, and the chances of drops from killing zombies and monsters were decreasing rapidly. In fact, to gain any skill book, one had to hunt at least a high level Mutant Beast or high level zombie. However, these were not easy existences to deal with. Plus, since Hu Fei had missed the best time to become stronger, without any backing, it became even harder for him to get strong.

Zhang Xiao pleaded sincerely with Yue Zhong: "This lowly servant knows the area well. Please spare this lowly servant's life, and this lowly servant is willing to lead the way."

At the initial stages of the apocalypse, Zhang Xiao had still maintained an aura of a know-it-all. However, when he accidentally offended the leader of a small faction, he had been thrown into a pit to wallow for one day. Ever since, he had lost his arrogance and was willing to stoop to any level, foregoing any backbone or self-pride just to survive.

Yue Zhong then asked: "Are you clear on what factions are there around here?"

Zhang Xiao began to ramble on: "Yes! Yes! I know them all. At about 50 miles from here, Mao County is the territory of the Greater China Alliance. West of here, about 40 miles, there's the all-female Snow Palace. And about 60 miles north of here, there's the Thousand Hero Alliance. There are also a few other mid-sized factions like the Green Wolves Triad, Tiger Head Triad, Huge Blade Triad, Small Blade Association...:"

Yue Zhong's thoughts grew when he heard: "So many factions!"

With the huge Greater China Alliance, the Snow Palace, and the Thousand Hero Alliance, all the other factions would at least have 500 or 600 survivors per faction. This meant a whole resource out there for him.

There were many in China who had the habit of pulling together scattered groups to form gangs. The moment things went to shit, there would be all sorts of random factions appearing. Such ambitious little warlords would also jump out at the chance.

When Yue Zhong heard about the Greater China Alliance again, he sank into his own thoughts: "The Greater China Alliance eh? Seems like we have some old 'friends'!"

The Greater China Alliance had left a deep impression with Yue Zhong back during his Gui Ning period. At that time, their power was decent, but they were led by bumbling fools and thrashes. That was why it was easy for Yue Zhong to have defeated them. However, while he had crushed half of their strength, the remaining half was not a faction Yue Zhong and his hundred-plus soldiers could deal with at this point.

Yue Zhong looked out at the snow-covered plains and sighed: "What a pity! Damn this weather!"

If it wasn't for the weird weather, Yue Zhong would be able to lead his entire army to just steamroll their way across the country. With the 800,000 people at Guang Xi, Yue Zhong was definitely the strongest in this area.

Right at this time, the weather suddenly turned dark. A cold and harsh wind began to blow, as snowflakes began to fall.

Yue Zhong's face fell as he shouted: "No good!! Everyone, heed my command! Immediately head to the town to wait out this snowstorm!!"

With the skies turning dark, and the roaring of winds, as well as snowflakes, these were all signs of a snowstorm or worse, a hailstorm.

Without a satellite, Yue Zhong had no way of predicting the weather in the next few days. However, he could rely on his experience to deal with it.

After the apocalypse, the weather had really turned unpredictable. Originally, Guang Xi was a region that would not snow, yet now, there were various hailstorms of different magnitudes. Even the smallest one could cause a number of trees to be uprooted. A huge one would be able to even destroy a building.

The moment they heard Yue Zhong's words, everyone's faces fell, and began to scramble onto their vehicles, driving towards the town.

The moment they just got on their vehicles, the entire sky had turned completely overcast, and the snowflakes were becoming bigger. Some hail began to fall on the vehicles, resulting in loud "plik plak" sounds.

As everyone rushed for the town, the might of the hailstorm began to increase exponentially, as a few trees were uprooted and began to soar through the air, threatening to crash into their vehicles.

"Shit!" Yue Zhong eyed the incoming trees, his expression turning ugly. If they were hit by that tree that was at least a dozen metres long, the jeep would be overturned.

With a thought, a huge nether hole appeared in mid air, as a sharp bone spike shot out from the hole, piercing the tree.

The moment White Bones stepped out from the nether hole, a violent gust blew, and swept it up to the sky.

White Bones shot out 2 sharp bone spikes with its hands towards the ground, but before they even hit the ground, it was blown at least a hundred metres up into the skies.

Witnessing this, Yue Zhong's heart ran cold, if it was him, after falling from that height, even if he used all his skills, he would at the very least be heavily injured, if he wasn't already dead.

Behind, the bus began to tremble, and Hu Fei brought his men to

escape from the bus. This was the only chance they had, and since they didn't know Yue Zhong and wasn't clear on his personality, they weren't willing to take chances. They would rather leave it up to fate.

The moment Hu Fei and 4 of his men just exited the bus, another violent gust blew past them, causing 6 tree trunks to knock into their bodies. With the sudden and tremendous impact, they were all knocked into the sky, spitting blood out of their mouths.

Seeing that, the rest were stunned and did not dare to get out, instead staying docilely inside the bus.

After White Bones was blown away, a huge tree struck the jeep that Yue Zhong was on.

At that moment, the jeep was sent flying slightly though the air, before tumbling a few rounds due to the winds.

"Leader!! Are you alright!!" From behind, Li Shi Min used the radio in the other vehicle to communicate after seeing the jeep tumble.

"Don't mind me! Continue to rush forwards!! Quick into the town! This is an order!!" Yue Zhong roared back.

In the face of nature, humans were truly still so vulnerable. Even if Li Shi Min and the rest rushed over, they would not be able to help Yue Zhong.

"Continue!!" Bai Xiao Sheng gritted his teeth and passed the order, as the vehicle fleet continued their mad rush towards the town. Once they entered the town, and hid within the buildings, they would then be safer.

The huge violent gales of winds caused a large amount of snow to fall on the ground, and soon, a thick layer of snow had covered the entire area. At the same time, the speed of increase in the layer of snow could be seen with the naked eye.

Under those conditions, Yue Zhong and the rest in the jeep would

be buried in the snow.

"I'll have to go out!" Yue Zhong immediately leapt out the jeep.

"Be careful!!" From the car, the worried voices of Chen Yao, Xin Jia Rou and Ning Yu Xin sounded.

When Yue Zhong leapt out the vehicle, a cold and harsh gale blew towards him, causing his body to feel slightly cold. Due to his increased body attributes and constitution, the current cold was not threatening to him yet. He sucked in a deep breath and grabbed the jeep, before flipping it over with his 9-times Strength.

Just as he was about to board again, another violent gust swept through the area, bringing with it a number of uprooted tree trunks.

Chen Yao gritted her teeth and revealed a flash of green in her eyes, as a number of vines appeared instantly to defend against the incoming assault.

Backed by the power of the wind, the trees carried a mighty force and as they slammed into the shield formed by the tree vines, the impact caused her to spit out a mouth of fresh blood, her face turning slightly pale.

In such weather, Chen Yao's ability suffered a huge decrease in efficiency. If they were in the forest, then it would be a different story.

# Chapter 504: Fracture!

---

"You guys go on ahead... I'll handle the rest." Yue Zhong pulled out his 2m-long Black-Tooth Blade and hollered to the rest. With a casual wave, he sliced the incoming tree trunks apart.

Chen Yao had been a leader before, and she wiped the blood from the side of her mouth and started the jeep: "Go!!"

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps, as he charged alongside the jeep to its front, slashing out once in awhile to deal with the tree trunks. Every step he took felt extremely tedious. The harsh cold wind sliced his skin. If it wasn't for his toughened body, his blood would have long since frozen over. His Stamina was slowly being depleted in this weather.

Ning Yu Xin looked at the man braving the dangers in front of the jeep, and a look of warmth passed in her eyes. She knew that this man was lacking in many ways, but when the situation called for it, he was willing to shoulder every and any problem. Such a man was already extremely rare in this apocalyptic world. Her heart was already moved by Yue Zhong, and as she watched the back of her man, her legs twisted slightly, she was obviously wet.

Under his protection, the jeep managed to enter the town with difficulty. The moment it reached the town, the effects of the hailstorm would be slightly bearable, due to the structures around dispersing the winds.

Right as Yue Zhong prepared to enter the town, a dozen landscape trees by the entrance were uprooted by the strong winds and flung towards the jeep.

If it were just Yue Zhong himself, he would be able to dodge those incoming projectiles easily. However, at this time, he couldn't afford to do so, and used his body to shield the jeep, the Black-Tooth blade in his hands slashing out towards the trees.



With the sword shadows shooting out in a fury, the trees were all chopped up in pieces. However, because he had expended much of his stamina earlier in braving the storm, he was struck by a stray tree trunk, knocking him to the ground.

The next instant, a strong gale blew and brought Yue Zhong along with the pieces of debris into the sky.

"No!!!!" As Ning Yu Xin watched Yue Zhong being swept into the sky, she screamed out in a wail. She had just truly felt herself falling hard for him, and felt so secure, and the next moment, he was taken by the storm. It was too cruel.

Chen Yao glanced at Yue Zhong with a complicated gleam, and gritted her teeth as she continued to manoeuvre the jeep towards the town. She might have been naive and innocent when she first left school, but through her various experiences, especially in Vietnam, she had matured and grown. She was not rash anymore.

Yue Zhong on the other hand was brought up towards higher altitudes, reaching a 100m height. In the skies, the temperature was freezing, and even with an Endurance 10 times that of a normal person, Yue Zhong felt the chill.

Forced by the freezing temperatures, Yue Zhong had no choice but to activate his Devil Flames, as a layer shrouded him, providing him with warmth.

It was just that amidst the harsh and merciless weather, the usage of his Devil Flame caused his Stamina to be depleted fast and its effect little. Barely 5 seconds, it was snuffed out from the violent winds.

Like Chen Yao and her Plant Manipulation, Yue Zhong's Devil Flame suffered greatly in the snow.

Within the storm, Yue Zhong had equipped himself with the Kabuki Mask, covering himself from head to toe. Even so, the cold seeped in from the gaps in his clothings, chipping away at his body

temperature. His hands were almost frozen solid.

Left without a choice, he could only cast his Devil Flame for another 5 seconds, warming himself up. Otherwise, he would be frozen rock solid.

Yue Zhong was blown for quite a distance, before the winds started to slow down.

"Chance!!" Yue Zhong felt the winds subsiding and immediately activated his Gravity Manipulation. A strong gravitational force weighed down on him, increasing his weight by two-folds.

He then descended like a falling boulder.

After a certain height, he activated his Gravity Manipulation again, changing his weight to half its original. His descent began to slow down. When the winds brought him up, he would double his weight again, ensuring that he kept on descending.

Yue Zhong had truly expended much of his Stamina and Spirit, having utilized the Gravity Manipulation 8 times, before exhausting himself. He then dropped straight from a height of 30m.

When he landed on both legs, a terrifying force traveled up from below, instantly shattering both of them. The excruciating pain and impact caused him to crumple onto the ground.

"I've become a cripple again!" He chuckled bitterly, swallowing a Life-Saving Grass and began to crawl with his hands towards the distance.

Most ordinary people would require at least a 100 days to recover from something like this. For Yue Zhong, due to his Regeneration ability, coupled with his high Vitality, it would take at most a single day to return to his tiptop condition.

The area he had landed was still experiencing some strong winds, but fortunately, it was not too violent or dangerous. However, Yue Zhong didn't dare to be careless, and continued to

drag himself. He had expended all his strength, staying at one location was dangerous.

The summoning of White Bones through the Nether Hole also had a cooldown, and Yue Zhong had no means of summoning it out yet.

In the snowstorm, Yue Zhong's fingers were like hooks, as they dug into the ground, dragging himself forwards without stop. He definitely did not want to die out in the snow.

After some time, goodness knows how long, he finally came across an unknown town, and his eyes lit up. Mustering the remainder of his stamina, he dragged himself there.

The various houses were all closed, their windows and doors shut tight. A number of cool and indifferent faces peered out the windows, looking at Yue Zhong without a hint of pity. No one wanted to let him in. They just wanted to see if this cripple was a zombie or not.

In this apocalyptic world, where ration was precious, the various families were naturally less willing to hand out any.

Yue Zhong did not beg as well. He just wanted to look for a place to hide from the storm. As long as he could rest properly for one night, he wouldn't be afraid of anything.

Within a such a town, there would usually be some run down buildings, and those were Yue Zhong's targets.

Right at this time, a door suddenly swung open, as a young woman stuck her head out and looked at Yue Zhong, pity flashing in her eyes: "Do you want to come in?"

Yue Zhong eyed the young woman warily. In this apocalypse, most humans were selfish, and with the problem of scarce food, some people were even forced to resort to cannibalism. Yue Zhong had come across numerous factories processing human meat. He did not want to become someone else's dinner.

However, Yue Zhong did not discover hunger nor greed in her eyes, and he nodded silently, before crawling into the house.

The moment he went in, she closed and locked the door.

A slight warm current was circulating within the room, allowing Yue Zhong's body to recover from its cold state. It was practically heaven compared to outside. Although the room was still cold to normal people, to Yue Zhong and his insane body constitution, it was good enough.

After he entered, he silently crawled to a corner and eyed everywhere else with a guarded look.

He discovered about 8 children of different ages, and the young woman who let him in and another housewife of about 35 or 36.

The young woman had a slightly oval-shaped face, wheat-coloured skin, and a skinny figure. Her looks were ordinary, and nothing could be said about her figure. She was even incomparable to the slightly older housewife.

10 of them squeezed in that small house, and they looked at Yue Zhong with curiosity.

In truth, anybody with broken legs were considered to be having both legs amputated. In such an apocalypse, doctors were a rarity, even if one was found, if it didn't happen to be an orthopedist, it was hard to treat such a case.

"This is for you!" A 13 year old boy with blond hair handed Yue Zhong a bowl, his expression slightly unkind.

Yue Zhong eyed the small bowl and noticed a pitiful amount of water and gruel, and there was even a slight rancid smell.

"Thank you! But it's ok!" Yue Zhong shook his head, and replied in a raspy voice.

That little blondy coldly snorted, and drank everything up before laughing: "Pei! You don't know how to appreciate. Teacher Wei,

you shouldn't have cared about this cripple. Look at how big his head is, he looks down on gruel."

The housewife shot a look at little blondie and scolded: "Du Qiang, come here. How did I teach you, you can't laugh at others. It's rude."

Du Qiang's eyebrows arched as he smiled coldly: "Rude?"

"Open the door!! Open the door!! You better open the door for this daddy!!" Right at this time, an enraged voice resounded, together with urgent pounding on the door.

# Chapter 505: The Glory of Humanity!

---

Hearing that voice outside, the expressions of everyone in the room immediately changed, even the young girl who let Yue Zhong in looked towards the housewife.

Teacher Wei's face turned dark, before saying helplessly: "Go open it!"

The young woman hesitated before going.

Following a gust of cold wind, a 1.74m tall and muscled man stepped in. His features were somewhat twisted, and his facial hair disheveled.

"It so fricking cold! Why did you guys take in another cripple? Shit! You guys can't even take care of yourselves and you want to help these useless shits!" The middle-aged man swore when he saw Yue Zhong in the corner, cursing Teacher Wei.

Teacher Wei kept silent, accepting his tirade of insults without replying.

The middle-aged man then said impatiently: "Forget it! If you want to be crazy, it's not my problem. Come, let's fuck." He then proceeded to take off Teacher Wei's clothes without caring for the people around.

Seeing this, there were various expressions on the children's faces, some fear, some hurt, some were excited, and some were curious.

Little Blondie's face was exceptionally ugly, as he gritted his teeth, and a look of pain and helplessness flash in his eyes. He turned away.

Teacher Wei did not struggle nor resist, and allowed the man to brazenly feel her up and remove her clothes. All she did was ask mildly: "Where's the ration?"

"Here!!" The middle-aged man was impatient and threw out a bag, before licking her exposed neck, turning aroused.

The young woman who had let Yue Zhong in immediately took the bag to check its contents, before hugging it carefully. Her eyes were filled with sadness and helplessness as she watched the middle-aged man sprawled atop Teacher Wei's body and doing all sorts of things.

Right as the man was about to remove his trousers, his 'gun' erect and prepared to 'fire', an actual bullet penetrated his leg, resulting in a small hole.

The man slumped down to the floor in fright, looking towards Yue Zhong in the corner with fear.

In the room, everyone's attention was drawn to Yue Zhong, their gazes fixed on the gun in his hands.

Yue Zhong stared at the man with a rising killing intent. That Teacher Wei was truly a decent person that was hard to find in this world. He had guessed that because of her, the children were able to survive in this cruel world. And the price that the teacher had to pay was to offer her own body in exchange for food.

Yue Zhong did not think that he was any decent person, but he hoped that the good people truly deserves better lives. As long as they didn't hamper his way, he was willing to do all he could within his power to protect those kind-hearted souls.

"Don't kill him!" Right at this time, Teacher Wei, who was under the man, stood in front to shield him, her body topless and arms stretched out wide.

Yue Zhong's Spirit was extremely powerful, and the killing intent that was emitted from him could be felt by everybody in the room.

Yue Zhong eyed the teacher with a complicated gaze as he spoke slowly: "Seeing that he has treated you like so, yet you want to protect him. Give me a reason not to kill him."

Teacher Wei looked straight back without fear in her eyes, and smiled sadly: "Yes, I use my body to exchange for food. It is not the best solution, but I'm the willing party. Without his help, everyone here would have starved long ago. Furthermore, for the sake of survival, I have given myself to a number of people. Compared to the rest, I can't really complain about how he treats me."

Yue Zhong sank into his thoughts, and kept his gun, before looking at the man and barked out coldly: "You're getting off easy! Get lost!"

"Yes! Yes! I'll scram! I'll scram!!" The man wiped his perspirations off and mumbled to Yue Zhong before scurrying out the door.

The moment the man left the room, Yue Zhong's gaze swept over the fair and voluptuous bosom of Teacher Wei, and a strange feeling arose in his heart. He had not been with any of his women for nearly a week, and due to his work, he had not managed to take a rest. Now that things have settled down, his body began to react. It was nothing to do with love, it was just purely a sexual need.

The charming Teacher Wei felt the passionate gaze from Yue Zhong and felt the looks from the children, and quickly wore her clothes.

After she was dressed, Yue Zhong asked: "What's your name? What's this place? I want the specific province, city or county."

Teacher Wei collected her thoughts before replying: "I'm called Wei Jie, and I was a primary school teacher before the apocalypse. This is Ding Town, within the province of Bin Xi City in Guang Xi Province. The leader is called Zhang Liu He."

"Fortunately, I wasn't blown too far away!" Hearing her words, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief.

Bin Xi City was not too far from Gui Ning City, as long as he could get to a road he recognized, he could reach Gui Ning in a few hours.

Yue Zhong continued asking: "Do you know the way to Gui



Ning?"

Wei Jie directly shook her head: "No!"

She was just an ordinary teacher in the past, going to Gui Ning City or Nan Ning City would require the train or a car. If she had to go there by herself, she could not manage.

Yue Zhong was also an ordinary university student before, without even a license. Everywhere he went, he had a subordinate to lead him, but he himself was unable to locate the road to Gui Ning City.

"Oh!" He sunk back into his thoughts, and brought out 2 chocolate bars from his chest, and threw one to the girl who let him in, the other to Wei Jie. This was the repayment for letting him stay.

Even if she had not allowed him to enter, he would have ways to survive. However, her kindness and sympathy was rare in a world where humanity was almost eroded. To Yue Zhong, that was something precious.

Wei Jie's eyes lit up as she received the chocolate and thanked him: "Thank you!"

Chocolate was a high calorie food and was also tasty, in times of trouble, it could be a life-saver.

"Thank you! I'm called Liu Xiao Hong!" The young lady who let Yue Zhong in thanked him as well.

Yue Zhong replied coolly: "No need for thanks! This is payment for borrowing your room."

After which, Yue Zhong brought out more chocolate and drinks from his bag as he began to dig in.

These chocolates and drinks were all high-calorie food, and provided the necessary energy to him. With it, he could recover faster.

On the other side, the little rascals looked at Yue Zhong eating heartily all by himself, and began to salivate. However, they remembered the heavy killing intent that he had released earlier, and were afraid of him. Therefore, they didn't dare approach him to ask.

Wei Jie opened up the chocolate bar that Yue Zhong threw to her, and begun splitting it, giving an equal portion to each kid, leaving none for herself.

Yue Zhong watched this silently, and felt a little appeased. Even in this cruel world, where order had crumbled, there were still people who kept their humanity and kindness. Furthermore, it was from a fellow Chinese, and it gave him some form of consolation, having witnessed and experienced countless dark and morbid events.

After looking, he then laid quietly and shut his eyes to rest. However, he maintained a half-asleep posture, the moment there was some killing intent, or the slight movement from a blade of grass, he would be ready.

Wei Jie looked at this young man in front of her, with a complicated gaze in her eyes as well. With her experience, she could tell that this man was still a little humane. However, even if he was an expert, with his legs broken, it would be hard to move around in this world. Otherwise, she would have offered herself, just so she can keep the kids alive.

Even as he laid quietly, everyone could still feel the pressure emitted by him, and they maintained their silence.

Only Du Qiang was staring at Yue Zhong fixedly like a hungry wolf with cold eyes, at the same time, his gaze would turn to Wei Jie from time to time, with hints of love, hate as well as jealousy and all sorts of complicated feelings.

Like this, the night passed quietly, early the next morning, the snow storm had subsided entirely. Du Qiang pushed open the door

and began to walk out.

Wei Jie eyed the boy and could not help but call out: "Du Qiang, where are you going? You haven't eaten your breakfast!"

Du Qiang retorted briskly without even turning his head: "None of your business!"

She watched him go, and sighed.

Liu Xiao Hong reached out to assure her: "Teacher Wei! Don't bother about him. We're different from him."

Du Qiang's personality was rebellious, and in this little group, it was hard for him to fit in. Other than Wei Jie, the rest hated him.

Wei Jie didn't say much, and just replied: "Time for breakfast!"

Soon, some hot smoke rose from this small house.

Everyone obtained a small bowl of gruel.

The children took them carefully and savoured every single last drop, as though it was the most delicious meal they ever had. Before the apocalypse, many had been little tyrants and kings, wasting food after every few bites. They didn't even like to eat proper food, they just like to munch on snacks. However, with the harsh reality of the apocalypse, they had begun to savour even the most meagre of meals.

Liu Xiao Hong also prepared a bowl to hand to Yue Zhong.

He shook his head and threw 2 cans of meat to Liu Xiao Hong and Wei Jie.

When the 2 women saw it, their eyes were filled with a strange glint. In this Ding Town, a can of meat could easily purchase a beautiful woman like Wei Jie for 4 nights. Yue Zhong had just thrown two out, his generosity and casual attitude caused them to be delighted, yet apprehensive at the same time.

# Chapter 506: Conquering the Town!

---

The little rascals within the room stared at the cans of meat in Wei Jie and Liu Xiao Hong's hands.

Wei Jie hesitated a little, before gritting her teeth: "Let's open one!"

Liu Xiao Hong gulped her saliva down and opened her can.

Wei Jie spoke: "One slice per person!!"

"Yay!"

"That's great! You're the best!"

The children whooped in delight and surrounded them. Each one was given a slice, and they began to nibble bit by bit, savoring the taste for as long as possible. It was over half a year since they last had some meat.

In the apocalyptic world, there were many strong people in their factions that led better lives than even before the disaster. However, the people at the lower rungs of society were worse off, many starving and suffering.

Just as they were enjoying their meat, 10 burly men, led by a muscled man with buck tooth and a single eye, stormed into the small house.

Du Qiang pointed at Yue Zhong, before putting on a fawning expression towards the bucktoothed man and said: "Boss Xun, it's that man, he has a gun! It was him who fired a shot last night!"

Boss Xun swept his gaze over Yue Zhong and threatened loudly: "Fuck!! Damn cripple, this is I, your father's, territory! Hand over your gun! Otherwise, I'll break your arms and turn you into a disabled person without his limbs!"

After barking out his threat, his gaze landed on Wei Jie, and a hint of perverse lust flashed past his eyes. He licked his lips and

continued: "Shit!! There's such a quality good over here. What a waste! Come and make yourself useful!"

After that, he didn't even bother about the eyes in the room and reached out for Wei Jie's hair.

In this region, this Boss Xun led a life like a king. Since the apocalypse, where morality and humanity was basically eroding away, he didn't care how others viewed him. He was the close brother of Zhang Liu He, the boss of Ding Town, and as long as he was loyal to him, fucking a few women wasn't a big deal.

"No!! Boss Xun!!" A huge sense of anger welled up in Du Qiang's heart, and he lurched forward, trying to stop Boss Xun from grabbing Wei Jie.

"Fucking trash! Go to hell!" Boss Xun shot Du Qiang a ferocious glare and threw out a vicious punch. A Strength 3 times that of a normal person exploded out, causing Du Qiang to fly towards a wall, crashing into it heavily. He spat out a mouthful of blood, the light in his eyes disappearing, as he turned into a corpse and slumped slowly to the ground.

Seeing that bloody scene, the rest of the children, Wei Jie and Liu Xiao Hong trembled with fear. Killing a person with a single punch, it was the first time they had witnessed such a fearsome scene.

Boss Xun spat out a glob of saliva on the floor, eyeing Wei Jie and ordered venomously: "Pei! Trash! He dares disrupt this father's matters. Crawl over here! You better lick my boots clean!"

Boss Xun was a lowly farmer prior to the apocalypse. Due to his looks, he had suffered plenty of disdain in the city, and many women had recoiled at the sight of him. This caused him to be filled with inferiority and anger. After the apocalypse, he gained some strength and started to retaliate against any beautiful women. He liked to watch them grovel at his feet like dogs.

Wei Jie's face was pale as a sheet. Although she had sold herself out, she wasn't willing to throw away her pride as well.

"Trash!" Yue Zhong snapped coldly.

When Boss Xun heard that, he pointed at Yue Zhong and bellowed: "Fuck! Damn cripple, what the fuck did you say? Men, go break his arms, then hang him outside to dry!"

"Piece of shit! Just die!!" 7 of the men rushed towards Yue Zhong with a hint of madness in their eyes.

With a flash of a blade, before they even reached Yue Zhong, their bodies were chopped into several pieces. Fresh blood and steaming innards splattered everywhere. The whole room was covered in a grotesque bloody color.

Yue Zhong stood up slowly, his Crocodile Saw Tooth Blade raised in his arms, as he looked at Boss Xun coldly.

"AH!!!" Seeing his 7 comrades sliced apart like tofu, one of the other subordinates was frightened and trembled as he tried to run out.

Boss Xun's face had a huge change, and he knew at once that he wasn't a match for Yue Zhong. He himself had no way of instantly slaughtering 7 men, and this man had just casually done so. He was obviously a dangerous and powerful opponent.

Boss Xun immediately came to a decision and made a mad dash for Wei Jie. As long as he had a hostage, he would have a sliver of chance.

Just as he was about to reach for her, a blade beam slashed past his neck, and his head fell off without any resistance. The headless corpse stumbled a few steps forward, before slumping to the ground as blood fountained in a falling arc through the air.

When Wei Jie, Liu Xiao Hong and the rest of the children witnessed this, they were truly frightened out of their wits. They have never come across such an inhumane sight before.

"Nice reaction! Too bad, it was too slow!" Yue Zhong eyed the corpse of Boss Xun, before suddenly disappearing from his position.

At the next instant, he appeared beside the remaining hooligan, his blade held at the neck as he barked coldly: "Bring me to Zhang Liu He!"

"Yes! Yes!" The burly man immediately stammered out, he didn't dare disobey such a terrifying existence.

Led by the burly man, Yue Zhong came to a villa.

The man pointed to the villa and spoke: "Zhang Liu He is inside!"

At the same time, a middle-aged man stepped out, exuding an imposing aura. He had huge coarse hands, his face was slightly tanned, but his eyes were sharp. He was accompanied by 8 other Enhancers.

Zhang Liu He eyed Yue Zhong and his eyes narrowed: "Friend, I'm Zhang Liu He. Is there some sort of misunderstanding between us?"

Yue Zhong eyed him coldly and said: "Ding Town is now mine! I'll only give you 3 seconds to consider, you can surrender or die."

Ding Town was in between Bin Qi City and Gui Ning City and would be a place within Yue Zhong's control in the future. Since he came here, he might as well set his plans in motion early.

A man with spiky hair and a gold leather jacket stepped out and cursed: "Damn you! Who the fuck are you! Are you looking to die?!"

Yue Zhong's eyes turned icy, as the Stinger appeared in his hands and he fired a single shot at the loudmouth.

The man with the spiky hair had his head directly blasted apart, as the sloppy red and white brain matter splattered onto the ground, beautifying the pavement.

Zhang Liu He's heart turned cold as he barked out: "Move!! Kill him!!"

Zhang Liu He's words had just come out his mouth when Yue Zhong had already activated his [Shadow Steps], shooting forwards like an arrow, nigh instantly appearing in front of Zhang Liu He like a spectre.

Yue Zhong waved his Crocodile Saw Tooth Blade, and a blade beam flashed past Zhang Liu He's neck.

Zhang Liu He had no way of reacting in time when his head was sliced off cleanly. It rolled to the ground, fresh blood splattering everywhere.

Seeing how casually he had taken down their boss, the 4 experts felt their heart turn cold. They were drenched in fear and did not dare move.

The remaining 3 Enhancers who were Agility and Strength-based charged forth towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong eyed those 3 Enhancers and the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade in his hands danced again.

In the blink of an eye, the 3 Enhancers were sliced apart, their dismembered bodies dropping to the floor. It was a gruesome sight.

"I surrender!! I surrender!!"

"I surrender!!"

"Don't kill me! I surrender!"

The remaining 4 experts had their confidence shattered, and they immediately knelt on the ground, shivering as they took the initiative to surrender. It was the first time that they had come across such a terrifying expert, and while the 8 of them could join forces against Zhang Liu He, in front of this man, they had obviously been slaughtered like chickens. They knew they were



absolutely nothing.

Yue Zhong eyed them coolly and asked: "Report your names!"

"Zhang En!"

"Tang Jun!"

"Ma Jian!"

"Lu Feng!"

Yue Zhong ordered: "Go gather the soldiers of Ding Town, await my orders."

"Yes!" The 4 men immediately headed out.

Within Ding Town, there were 300 survivors, and of which, 80 were soldiers. The rest were just ordinary survivors.

Most of them did not have any good impression of Zhang Liu He, even if the leader was changed, they didn't have any response. They were the lowest of society anyway.

Yue Zhong split the 80 soldiers into 4 teams led by each of the 4 experts.

"Boss Yue! Not good! There's an enemy raid!!" Right as Yue Zhong was reorganizing them, Zhang En came running with a pale expression, flanked by 6 or 7 of his men as he reported loudly.

"What? Bring me there!!" Yue Zhong frowned and left with huge strides.

Ding Town was now considered an establishment under his control, and that meant its citizens were his people. If he had the means, he would protect them properly.

Tang Jun and the other 2 exchanged glances as they followed closely.

When Yue Zhong came to the town centre, he saw a group of 100 men and women carrying weapons, each of them sporting a scorpion tattoo. They were killing and raping the survivors of the

Ding Town.

Tang Jun saw those tattoos and his face lost color: "Violent Scorpions!! It's actually them!!"

# Chapter 507: Purple Scorpion Xue Ning!

---

The Violent Scorpions were the strongest armed force aside from the 3 main powers. They were located near Bin Qi City, and while they might only have about three to four hundred members, every one of them were strong Enhancers. At the same time, they were cruel and every time they went on a raid, they would not leave any survivors.

Hearing the name, Zhang En, Ma Jun and the rest turned pale and retreated a few steps. They wanted to turn and run, as Enhancers with enhanced bodies, they could definitely make a run for it.

Yue Zhong eyed those inhumane acts of the Violent Scorpions and frowned, as he waved his hand and a heavy machine gun appeared. He aimed at those gang members currently in the midst of killing and pillaging and pressed the trigger.

At the next moment, a fearsome line of fire spat out and 5 or 6 of the Violent Scorpions were directly punched full of holes, causing blood to spill everywhere.

With that sudden assault, the members of the Violent Scorpions began to curse out of shock and fear, as they hurried to dodge for cover.

Yue Zhong made use of his heavy machine gun to take down another 3 soldiers. By that time, the hundred others had found cover.

Zhang En and the rest saw how Yue Zhong magically pulled out his heavy machine gun and proceeded to fire at the Violent Scorpions without batting an eyelid, and were stunned speechless.

It was especially shocking due to the nature of those heavy caliber bullets. A single round could blast a head apart, or tear a person's body in two if it struck the waist. Its ability to sweep

across its enemies was fearsome and a testament to its might.

Yue Zhong saw that the soldiers had managed to find cover, and he frowned slightly. It was going to be harder to deal with them.

Yue Zhong then shot forwards towards the hiding places of the soldiers.

"Go to hell!!" Right in the middle of his charge, 6 Violent Scorpions Enhancers leaped out of an alley and made to attack Yue Zhong with their daggers and Replica Tang Swords.

Yue Zhong whipped out his dual .05 submachine guns and with lightning speed, he aimed at their heads and fired off mercilessly.

With a short clean burst of gunfire, the 6 Violent Scorpions Enhancers were turned into sieves.

'Kuang lang!' Following the sounds of glass shattering, 2 Agility-based Enhancers broke through a window and charged at Yue Zhong. However, they had just emerged from the windows, when the holes of the guns were pointed at their heads, before spraying a line of fire. In that moment, bullets pierced their brain, turning them into lifeless corpses that slumped to the floor.

At a hidden corner, a dozen young men and women were dressed in tattered clothes and they huddled together. They were dressed simply, and it could be seen that their constitution was stronger than most, otherwise they would not be able to tolerate the cold.

The stronger the body, the stronger the resistance towards extreme temperatures. With Yue Zhong's current body, as long as he wasn't blanketed by that violent snowstorm, he wouldn't be affected by the cold at all.

One of the young males, who looked about 16 or 17 and had a blond mohawk hairstyle, as well as piercings, eyed Yue Zhong who was going around killing the members of the Violent Scorpions. His eyes flashed with fear, and immediately spoke urgently to a young woman with purple hair beside him: "Big Sis!! What do we

do? That guy is a freak! He's too terrifying! Why don't... why don't we retreat first?"

Beside the mohawk boy, the young woman was dressed in black leather, her head full of purple hair. Her figure was explosively stunning, and her skin fair. Her legs were slender and seemed more taut with her choice of high heels. Her lips were thick and full, her features exquisite. The gaze in her eyes was sharp for her age, and she had an imposing aura as well as a charm, giving her the feel as though she was a sexy female leopard.

The various young men and women were gathered around her, awaiting her orders. It was obvious she was the ringleader.

The purple-hair beauty cursed out without regard for her image, as a string of profanities came out with her Dark Magic Blade pointed at Yue Zhong before she charged over: "Mountain Chicken! To hell with retreating! Fuck that fellow, let's fucking do him in!"

"Attack!!" With her lead, the rest of the young men and women began to rush over.

Yue Zhong eyed them approaching and immediately pulled out his QJZ8 heavy machine gun, aiming at them.

"Don't shoot! I have something to say!" The beauty with purple hair eyed the heavy machine gun and her expression changed before she came to a stop. She raised her hands and got the rest of her subordinates to stop in their tracks as well.

Yue Zhong frowned and lifted the heavy machine gun slightly as he spoke coldly: "Surrender now, and become my subordinates. Otherwise, you can all die here. Choose."

Yue Zhong had never had the habit of going easy on his enemies. Since this bunch of jokers had decided to attack his town, he didn't mind killing them all.

The vivacious woman licked her alluring lips and pointed at Yue Zhong with her Dark Magic Blade. Her sharp eyes were fixed on

Yue Zhong, as she spoke with an excited and passionate look: "My name is Xue Ning. The Big Sister of the Violent Scorpions, Purple Scorpion Xue Ning. What's the point of using a gun! If you have the balls, come and take up your blade against this Queen! If you can win me, I'm willing to be your woman, even if you want this Queen to strip naked and be fucked by you, this Queen will do it. However, if you lose to me, you must join me, and become my man!"\*

Xue Ning was extremely interested in Yue Zhong's marksmanship and ability to conjure a gun out of nowhere. She lacked such a force in her team. If he joined her, her Purple Scorpion Team would then become the top force amongst the 3 factions of the Violent Scorpions.

"Let's see if you have the ability!" Yue Zhong flipped his hand, and the heavy machine gun disappeared before he turned into a flash and charged towards Xue Ning.

"Little Handsome, your speed ain't too bad!! What a pity, you've met me! Today, you're destined to be mine!"

Xue Ning eyed Yue Zhong and licked her lips again. She activated her Second Order High-Speed Movement, and her entire body disappeared, rushing towards Yue Zhong with a spectre-like speed. She was a naturally awakened Agility-based Evolver, and at the point of her evolution, she had gained insight into the Second Order High-Speed Movement. It was precisely because of that she could rise to become one of the 3 leaders in the Violent Scorpions.

After activating her skill, Xue Ning's speed exploded out with double her original speed. It exceeded a normal person by at least 13 times, as that slender leg of hers lashed out viciously towards Yue Zhong's waist. She wanted to beat down this man thoroughly, to get him to submit to her totally.

"Too slow!" Yue Zhong's hand easily grabbed her leg, as he took a casual step forwards, and his right hand locking onto Xue Ning's

throat like a venomous snake.

Xue Ning was over Level 30, and facing Yue Zhong who was over Level 60 and equipped with an entire set of equipment, she was simply powerless.

"You've lost!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a cold gaze as he strengthened his grip, resulting in his handprint to cause a deeper impression on her fair neck.

"Let go of Big Sis!!" A few of the young hooligans exploded out in rage and raised their weapons towards Yue Zhong.

The mohawk youth was the most devastated, as he had a long-time crush on Xue Ning, seeing another man grabbing his saintess like that, his heart was brimming with fury, and he pulled out a gun to aim at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong stood quietly, but a nether hole appeared in mid-air, with White Bones taking a step out, and immediately shooting out a bone spike to pierce mohawk boy's head. With the flash of White Bones' blades, the 7 or 8 other young hooligans that rushed forwards were instantly sliced into multiple parts, dropping onto the floor.

That ruthless and gory scene shocked everyone present, as they trembled. Their fear towards Yue Zhong had reached an apex, causing them to stay still.

When the other Violent Scorpions at the other locations saw this, they were also filled with fear. Their number one expert Purple Scorpion Xue Ning had been easily subdued but his man, and there was a freakish monster by his side that could slice out with bone blades. Every single one of them instantly stopped what they were doing, for fear of angering Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong grabbed Xue Ning's snow-white neck for a while, sweeping his gaze around, before loosening his grip. He then eyed the coughing Xue Ning and asked coldly: "Are you going to make

your decision now to follow me, or do you want everyone to accompany you in death?"

Xue Ning coughed a few times before she lifted her head and replied in a straightforward manner: "I've lost! Since this Queen has lost, I'm naturally your woman. I, Purple Scorpion Xue Ning, am your girlfriend now! My Purple Scorpion team is yours as well! Kids, get the hell out here. Come and greet your new boss. Oh yes, what's your name? You can't keep getting me to call you boss right?"

Yue Zhong eyed Xue Ning, with an appreciative look: "I'm called Yue Zhong."

Although this Xue Ning was loud and obnoxious, calling herself 'this Queen', and spoke like a little gangster, it was undeniable that she was an incredibly sexy and beautiful girl. At the same time, she was strong in her own right, it was just that Yue Zhong was vastly overpowered.

Xue Ning eyed Yue Zhong, with a likewise strange glint in her eyes and she spoke directly: "Great! Boss Yue, from today onwards, you're my man, I'm your woman."

Xue Ning was not an idiot, she could tell in that instant during their exchange that the gap between them was truly too huge. If she insisted on being at loggerheads with him, the Purple Scorpions would be wiped from the earth on this day.

TN—

Note 1: Actual Chinese Raws put 爷 爷 爷 爷 which directly translates to the female version of "your daddy/your father/this laozi" I've decided to use queen as an arrogant way that she refers to herself.

Note 2: I've never seen anyone refer to Yue Zhong as little handsome. LOL



## Chapter 508: Hidden Concern!

---

This Purple Scorpion Team was originally Xue Ning's private troop, under her orders, they began to gather quickly.

Xue Ning pointed to Yue Zhong and ordered her subordinates: "This is your boss, quick, acknowledge him!"

The youths immediately called out loudly: "Greetings Boss!"

Yue Zhong carefully observed this group of hooligans, a bunch of teenagers ranging from age 15 to 19. Everyone of them had strange outfits, and their hair were dyed different colours. Adding on to the bits of gold they wore, it was even more strange.

Zhang En and the other Enhancers saw how easily Yue Zhong had subdued and controlled this faction of the Violent Scorpions and were speechless.

Yue Zhong proceeded to ask Xue Ning: "Why did you guys decide to attack Ding Town?"

Xue Ning's eyes flashed with helplessness: "The crazy bitches from the Snow Palace had launched an attack out of nowhere on the surrounding powers. Our Violent Scorpions were not a match against those crazy women, and had no choice but to run in this direction. We had intended to shrug, say fuck it, and relocate here."

Yue Zhong asked curiously: "Snow Palace, I heard that they were an all-female bunch, with your power, going there should be more beneficial for you, why didn't you do so?" Xue Ning was not weak, with her Second Order Divine Speed, on top of her Agility-based Evolver status, she would be welcomed anywhere. That was why Yue Zhong was curious. Xue Ning's voice turned solemn: "No can do. If I brought my people there, other than those of us who are women, the rest of my brothers would be sentenced to lead their lives as lowly slaves." Xue Ning wasn't a power hungry woman, nor

was she an absolutely capable leader. However, she was caring enough to not abandon her subordinates nor condemn them to a life of suffering.

Through her explanation, Yue Zhong discovered what it was like to be in the all-women faction, Snow Palace. The leader was a powerful and terrifying female expert, and other than her, the rest of the upper echelons were also strong female experts.

There were a total of 3,000 women in Snow Palace, and they were all disciples of the faction. Other than them, there about 12,000 men who were slaves. They had to slog for the Snow Palace, and ate the worst food, did the most horrible jobs, and lived in the most uninhabitable places. Everyday, there would be men who died from the cold, but the Snow Palace basically ignored their plight.

Hearing that description, Yue Zhong was sullen: "The world has really changed. What kind of stupid hellhole did that leader of the Snow Palace crawl out from, to be so antagonistic to all men?" It was obvious that the head of the Snow Palace viewed men with disdain.

Yue Zhong continued to ask: "How many of your Violent Scorpions are left?"

Xue Ning did not hide anything and replied: "Of the original 3 factions of the Violent Scorpions, the Purple Scorpions, the Yellow Scorpions and the Scarlet Scorpions, the Yellow Scorpions have been wiped out. The Red Scorpions under Toilet and this group are all that's left."

Yue Zhong continued: "Is there any way to get in contact with Toilet?"

Xue Ning looked straight at Yue Zhong with her beautiful eyes and shook her head slowly: "Boss Yue, this Queen might be your girlfriend, but this Queen will not betray her brothers even if you got people to torture me. You can force me to do anything, but this

Queen will definitely not betray her brothers."

Yue Zhong could not take it anymore and rebuked her: "Can you stop using 'this Queen', and just speak normally?"

Looking at such a hot and beautiful little minx actually refer to herself as 'Queen' caused Yue Zhong to be uncomfortable. Xue Ning replied, albeit a little awkwardly: "Got it, from now on, this Queen...no, I will take note of it."

Right at this moment, following the loud roars of motors, 2 assault helicopters flew overhead, passing this small town as they headed into the distance. Yue Zhong saw those assault helicopters and a strange glint flashed in his eyes: "Those are the Eurocopter Tigers, are they from the Kingdom of God?"

The Kingdom of God originated from Europe, Germany, and the Eurocopters were the most common form of weapons they had utilized when they were expanding in Vietnam. Yue Zhong pointed at the direction which those Eurocopters flew towards and asked Xue Ning: "What faction lies over there?"

Xue Ning took a look before replying: "It should be the territory of the Thousand Heroes Association. The boss, Dan Ba, is a lustful sex pervert, but his strength is genuine. I heard they are on equal footing with the Snow Palace, with over ten thousand survivors."

Yue Zhong eyed that direction and a bad premonition arose in his heart.

Seeing that this street-wise mouthy female leader knew the area well, he continued to ask: "I want to go to Gui Ning City. Do you know the way?" Xue Ning asked: "I know, but to get there, we need to pass through any of the 3 major powers. Which road will you prefer?"

"Which road is the fastest?"

"The road that passes through the territory of the Greater China Alliance." He immediately brought an end to the discussion: "Then

let's head to the Greater China Alliance."

Xue Ning looked at her subordinates within the town, her face turning slightly downcast: "But Boss Yue, what about about my brothers, sisters and the people of Ding Town?"

Through the experiences of the apocalypse, Xue Ning had grown accustomed and distant to the loss of lives, but she was extremely loyal to her people. Since this band of rogue teenagers had followed her, she was determined to be responsible for them. That was why even though she was an Evolver that possessed a Second Order skill, she was only Level 30, because she focused on empowering the rest. Due to her tireless efforts to support and protect them, they were all loyal to her.

"There's enough food to support everyone here for a week. Wei Jie, come over." Yue Zhong eyed Wei Jie who was standing a distance away and called for her.

Wei Jie came to his side and asked with a little apprehension: "Boss Yue, what's the matter?"

Yue Zhong's measures were decisive and vicious, and his merciless attitude to his enemies had thoroughly shocked this kind-hearted teacher who only had the best interest of her children in mind. She found it hard to breathe just by standing beside him.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze over the people present, before pointing to White Bones and said coldly: "Everyone listen up, from now on, Wei Jie is the temporary leader of the town. Zhang En, you and the rest will assist her in the running of the town. White Bones will be aiding you as well. Whoever does not listen, it will directly kill the offender. The whole lot of you, better run the town properly. Wait for my return, is that understood?"

Zhang En and the rest felt a chill down their spine as they replied respectfully: "Yes, Leader."

Although they were not wholeheartedly submissive to Yue Zhong

yet, they had been frightened by his fearsome methods. As long as he was not dead, or without the assistance of any other larger power, they would not dare to entertain any strange thoughts.

Xue Ning also lectured a few of her little leaders, before deciding to bring along a 13 or 14 year old, whose hair was dyed tea-green. She had thick makeup on, and her figure was just beginning to blossom.

Xue Ning pointed to this girl with tea-green hair and introduced: "This is Liu Xiao Cha, you can call her Little Tea. She has the ability to forecast the weather up to a day in advance, and she's extremely accurate. She can even predict how long before the next rain fall, and how long the rain will take."

Liu Xiao Cha looked at Yue Zhong and shot him a provocative smile: "Boss Yue, you're really cool. I'm all wet from watching you. If you want to fuck, just find me hehe."

"Get on." He eyed them impassively, and pointed to the Swift Shadow Bike that he retrieved from his Storage Ring.

The girls in the current society were truly audacious and open, there were many young females who were not closed to experimenting with their bodies, and when the topic came to sex, they were even more daring than most guys. Yue Zhong did not view such people with contempt, after all, it was their choice. However, it did not mean that he liked them.

However, her nature-predicting ability was important to Yue Zhong who did not control a satellite. If he had someone like her earlier, he wouldn't have been blown away by that monstrous snowstorm.

Liu Xiao Cha took one look at the sleek and powerful looking motorcycle and her eyes shone with anticipation: "Wa! What a cool motorcycle!"

Xue Ning slapped Liu Xiao Cha's perky butt and said: "Get on, you

havoc vixen."

"Yes, Big Sis!" She exclaimed and leapt on.

Xue Ning chuckled seductively at Yue Zhong and got on as well: "Boss Yue, Little Tea is not a bad girl, she's one of the two virgins I have in my troop, and she's relatively clean. There are no problems if you wanna fuck her."

"Am I some lustful sex maniac in your eyes?" Yue Zhong was speechless as he got on the bike. The moment he climbed behind Xue Ning, he could smell the bewitching scent of the young girl in front of him, and felt her perky and bouncy figure in front of him. He instantly got aroused, and his rod pressed against her bottom. Xue Ning nestled deeper into his arms and teased: "Hehe, you're hard, ain'tcha?"

"Shut up and sit tight." He was a little embarrassed and irritated, barking out before flooring the accelerator, causing the motorbike to roar to life and charged into the horizon. Before the apocalypse, this Yang County had over 100,000 residents, now, the entire place had become the territory of the Greater China Alliance.

Yue Zhong brought Xue Ning and Liu Xiao Cha to the outskirts of Yang County, observing and making their preparations.

# Chapter 509: Evil Youth!

---

Outside Yang County, there was a river of about 6m width that flowed around it. Prior to the apocalypse, the moat didn't exist. It was apparent that the Greater China Alliance had gotten manual labor to be carried out, digging such a moat and redirecting water to flow in it.

Furthermore, there was a city wall of about 5m surrounding the city within the moat. There were all sorts of defence fortifications on top of the wall. There were also numerous heavy machine guns pointed outwards, prepared to tear any enemy into shreds.

With the combination of the 6m-wide moat and the 5m-high city wall, even if 100,000 zombies attacked, Yang County could defend itself comfortably. Even Mutant Beasts hordes and other human factions would have to think twice before launching an assault.

The fortifications and structures were built impressively, and the huge moat having been erected at the expense of a huge amount of manual labour was also a stroke of genius. It was also partly because the county was near a water source, that was why it was possible. If it was a city, the moat would be too huge, and the amount of manpower required would be overwhelming. It would not have been possible to do it in a short time. If it was a small town, then the number of survivors would be too little to dig an effective moat.

With such defences in place, even if Yue Zhong activated his elite troops, he would have to pay quite a price to be able to take it down.

Yue Zhong scrutinized every available detail before saying: "Let's go."

Xue Ning and Liu Xiao Cha followed behind as the trio made their way towards Yang County.

For the sake of preventing unwanted attention, both the girls had ruffled their hair, and wore distasteful clothes, hiding their looks and figures.

When the sentries saw this small group approaching harmlessly, they waved them in with disgust.

Yue Zhong then led the 2 of them silently as they walked towards the other side of the county.

The current atmosphere in the county was bleak, as most of the survivors were hiding in their own homes, avoiding the cold. The homeless were huddled together at various corners, their eyes blinking soullessly awaiting their deaths. There wasn't a sign of life on the streets, and it felt as though the inhabitants were already zombies.

At this time, there was a loud commotion resounding from a distance away: "Get the hell out of the way! Get the hell away! Young Master Jin is coming out to walk the dogs!"

Yue Zhong followed the source of the sound, only to see a young man with fox fur and a wretched look holding a rope of sorts. At the end of the rope, there were 8 young beauties crawling on the ground, their eyes lacking the radiance of life, crawling around naked.

There were 10 men in black suits and sunglasses around the young man, acting like bodyguards. One of them was currently shouting at the homeless people on the streets.

"Beast." Yue Zhong saw the wretched young man 'walking' the young girls like dogs and his fury billowed. He clenched his fists tightly, his eyes flashing with an intensity.

After the apocalypse, the human race was deteriorating, and there were zombies and Mutant Beasts everywhere. Yet there were some people who gave in to their inner devils, and indulged in depravity, humiliating and killing their own people. They would



stepped on others to ensure their own enjoyment and pleasures. Yue Zhong hated these type of people to the core.

When Xue Ning and Liu Xiao Cha saw the scene, their eyes were filled with pain and hatred as well. They were after all women, and seeing how their fellow women were being treated by this Young Master Jin, they looked as though they were about to explode with their wrath.

The bodyguard who was shouting at the homeless on the streets saw Yue Zhong's group, and his expression turned ugly: "What the fuck are you guys staring at, aren't you shitheads supposed to get down and kneel, welcoming our Young Master Jin? His dogs are not meant to be looked upon by the likes of you shits!"

Regardless of period, and era, all rich playboys would have lapdogs by their sides. They were the fiercest bunch, as long as they encountered any other people whose status was lower, they would not hesitate to step up and lash out harshly to demonstrate their power.

"Eeee, Zhang Fang, stand down."

The Young Master Jin's attention was attracted, and his gaze landed on Xue Ning's purple hair, as well as her curvaceous body. His pupils shone with a lustful gleam, and he began to walk over.

He looked at them from head to toe, and again, a perverse expression flashed past his face as he waved his hands and ordered: "I've decided. The 2 of you will be my bitches. Come, men, kill the man."

In this Young Master Jin's eyes, a person's life was not even comparable to a dog. As long as he wished it, killing a few people would not be an issue.

The bodyguard immediately replied in a fawning manner: "Yes, Young Master Jin! Men, capture the 2 women, and kill the man!"

The remaining 9 bodyguards made their move towards Yue

Zhong's group simultaneously. They had unusual methods and movements, and from their body constitution, it was obvious that they were all Enhancers.

"Truly seeking death." Yue Zhong did not expect that just a single glance at this wretched playboy was enough to set off trouble. This Young Master Jin was even more tyrannical than Yue Zhong by goodness knows how many times.

"A bunch of trash. You should simply go and die!" Yue Zhong waved his hand, and his Crocodile Saw Tooth Blade appeared, and in an instant, he sent out over a dozen blade beams outwards, chopping up the bodyguards like meat. Blood, organs and body parts splattered all over the ground.

When the Young Master Jin saw his bunch of lackeys instantly mutilated, he fell down in shock and wet his pants out of fear. He began crying out: "Ah!! Help!! Help!!! You can't kill me, I'm Jin Sheng Cheng's son Jin Da Li! If you kill me, my father will not let you off!!"

Yue Zhong shot Jin Da Li an extremely cold look as he slashed down viciously: "Trash, you don't have to worry, I'll go find your dad and send him to meet you in Hell!"

At this time, an ordinary-looking bodyguard that had been standing quietly by Jin Da Li's side shot forwards explosively, his hands wielding a Dark Magic Blade as he parried Yue Zhong's slash.

At the same time, there was a huge force that travelled from the point of impact, causing Yue Zhong to take 2 steps back.

His pupils narrowed as he stared at the bodyguard, asking slowly: "You're a Strength and Agility dual-attribute Evolver?"

The bodyguard raised his blade to point at Yue Zhong, his gaze similarly filled with a seriousness and chill. It was his first time encountering such a fearsome opponent, that caused even a dual-

attribute Evolver like him to almost lose in the earlier clash. He was filled with shock towards Yue Zhong: "Please leave me some face. Let him go. Today's matters, I'll take as if nothing happened."

Jin Da Li was now hiding behind the bodyguard as he yelled at Yue Zhong with hatred: "Tian Hao, well done! Go kill him! After a few days, I'll gift these bitches to you. Kill him now! Kill him now!!"

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at Tian Hao and spoke slowly: "Is this piece of garbage worth your protection?"

Yue Zhong could feel that Tian Hao really didn't want himself as an enemy.

Tian Hao's eyes flashed with a hint of helplessness: "I need to ensure his safety."

Yue Zhong's gaze turned strict, as his eyes flashed with an icy resolution: "Then I guess I'll send you on your way as well. I'll definitely not leave that piece of shit alive."

Yue Zhong could guess that Tian Hao had his difficulties. However, there was a sea of people like that, and he couldn't allow his sentiments to get the better of him, as well as his path.

"Then, sorry." Tian Hao's eyes flashed with a strange light, and he activated his own Second Order Shadow Steps, and his speed increased explosively, exceeding even the speed of a Type 2 Lightning. In a blink, he crossed the 8m distance between him and Yue Zhong, as a flash of a dagger soared through the air, threatening to slice off Yue Zhong's left arm.

"Fast." Yue Zhong's eyes glinted, as he activated his Shadow Steps, and Gravity Manipulation. A huge force weighed down on Tian Hao's body, causing his movements to turn sluggish.

Right as he was impeded, Yue Zhong immediately sent a blade towards Tian Hao's own arm.

"Open!" Tian Hao bellowed in rage, his body muscles turning

taut, as a ferocious strength exploded out from him, bringing his blade up to parry Yue Zhong's attack. Once again, Yue Zhong was forced back.

Yue Zhong could easily take down a Level 30 Evolver that specialized in close combat within a few seconds. However, he was matched blow for blow by this Tian Hao, it could be seen that this guy was not simple.

At that moment, just as Tian Hao was about to charge towards Yue Zhong again, Xue Ning's voice came from behind, filled with thick killing intent: "Tian Hao, don't move, or I'll kill this garbage."

"No!" Tian Hao turned around, only to see Xue Ning with her dagger at Jin Da Li's chest, causing him to be alarmed.

"Hehe. Byebye!" Xue Ning turned around and flashed a provocative smile at Tian Hao, before thrusting the dagger deep into Jin Da Li's chest, and twisting it ruthlessly, then pulling it out. A huge spray of blood splattered upwards, and she lashed out violently, sending Jin Da Li's body towards Tian Hao.

Tian Hao's face drained of all its colour, as he rushed towards Jin Da Li's corpse, and reached his hand out. When he had just touched the body, Yue Zhong had already stepped forward and kicked at Tian Hao viciously as well. He was sent flying about 6 to 7 metres away, spitting a mouthful of blood, suffering greatly.

After Tian Hao was sent flying by a single kick, he immediately stepped out and reached to see if Jin Da Li was breathing. His face then turned ashen and he spat out a mouthful of blood: "Shit shit shit."

Yue Zhong observed Tian Hao who had seemed to lose all will to live and coldly barked: "What's the deal with him? Speak, I'll see if I can help."

# Chapter 510: Truth

---

Yue Zhong was a Level 66 expert, and his power was at a terrifying degree. If he really went all out, he could take down Tian Hao with 80% confidence. However, if he could get him to submit, then he would have gained a powerful subordinate.

Tian Hao replied with a downcast face: "My sister Tian Jing was captured by Jin Da Li. Only he knows where my sister is. I had to continue to work for him to ensure her safety. With his death, my sister is sure to die as well.

At this time, one of the woman who was sprawled on the ground naked, of about 31 or 32, had a strange glint in her eyes as she laughed coldly: "Tian Jing? Your sister Tian Jing has already died long ago."

"What?! No!! Impossible!! Impossible! She can't be dead!! You're lying!!" Tian Hao's face turned extremely savage, and charged at the beauty, as though he wanted to tear her apart.

Yue Zhong frowned and kicked out, causing Tian Hao to crash into the snow. If Tian Hao really lost his rationale, then he would have torn the beauty in two.

With his strength, Yue Zhong would have found it hard to bring him down without abilities. However, he was not thinking properly now, and had lost his combat edge. Even with a powerful constitution, such a person was basically vulnerable.

Yue Zhong waved his hands and threw some clothes to the 8 ladies, and commented: "Wear them! Come with me."

"Thank you!"

The 8 of them received the clothes, and their eyes immediately turned red. A few of them thanked him in low voices. Having been treated like this and having lost all sense of dignity at the hands of Jin Da Li, Yue Zhong's icy demeanor still provided them with a

little respect.

"Since you want to know about your sister, come with me." He eyed Tian Hao and spoke coldly.

After which, he directly went towards an alley.

Xue Ning, Liu Xiao Cha and the other 8 women followed closely behind.

Tian Hao's body shuddered, and he stood up to hurry after them.

Yue Zhong's killing of Jin Da Li was witnessed by many people on the streets. At this time, many of the survivors that had soulless eyes began to stir. Some pounced on the dead bodyguards, hoping to get some items, while some made their way towards the headquarters of the town to relay what was happening. Very soon, the corpses of those bodyguards were stripped clean and transported away, leaving nothing behind.

Xue Ning followed Yue Zhong closely and asked curiously: "Where are we heading to now?"

Jin Da Li had been killed, and the Greater China Alliance would definitely not let things rest. They would flip the entire town over just to find the culprit. Xue Ning wanted to know what Yue Zhong's next move was.

Yue Zhong glanced at the lady that had opened her mouth earlier to say that Tian Jing was already dead, and ordered: "Take me to Jin Da Li's living quarters."

This beauty was the most mature and charming of the lot, exuding an attractive aura from head to toe. She also exhibited a hint of intelligence, and was obviously a person of position in the past.

In truth, this woman was called Zhao Ling. She had been the head of a successful group, and her net worth was in the millions. She was intelligent, strong and independent.

After the apocalypse happened, she had landed in the hands of Jin Da Li, and her independent nature had infuriated Jin Da Li, that was why he treated her like a bitch. Before that, she was the subject of his adoration and love, and knew many of his secrets.

Zhao Ling looked at Yue Zhong with immense respect and replied: Yes!"

After being punished to live like a slave, Zhao Ling found that her independence and strength as a person of position in the past didn't count for nuts in the present world. Those who were not as capable or good looking as her would be treated nicely just because they obeyed Jin Da Li. Although she was beautiful and sexy, because she wasn't willing to submit, she had been banished to the lowest rungs of Jin Da Li's slaves. It caused her to suffer a huge blow, and her pride had been thoroughly destroyed.

She brought Yue Zhong and the rest to a villa, pointing to it and said: "This is the villa that Jin Da Li resided in. However, there are many experts in there. There's also some form of alarm installed. The moment it rings, the entire Yang County would know of any strange movements here.

He followed the direction which Zhao Ling pointed, noting that there the villa covered over a hundred acres. Surrounding the villa, there were ponds, lush green trees, swimming pools, there was a basketball court even. It was built quite beautifully. It was also likely that the cost of the place must have been a few million.

Around the villa, 10 bodyguards were patrolling, and within the villa, god knows how many other experts there were.

"You guys wait here." After that, Yue Zhong disappeared in a flash.

In just a breath's time, he suddenly appeared in front of the 10 bodyguards, and activated his [Art of Fear], causing a powerful Spirit Attack to envelop the minds of those around him. The 10 bodyguards were caught unprepared and were immediately

subjected to a terrifying hallucination, and fainted on the spot. With just a thought from Yue Zhong, it had broken their minds and caused them to be frightened to death.

After taking them down in a jiffy, Yue Zhong charged into the villa like a tornado with his speed that easily exceeded a Type 2 Lightning. As he ran, he continued to emit Spirit fluctuations through his [Art of Fear], causing anyone that came in contact to immediately convulse on the spot.

In 5 seconds, he had rushed all the way into the surveillance room, sending out a wave of Art of Fear. The 5 soldiers within the room instantly fainted and crumpled to the ground.

Yue Zhong stood for a moment in front of the monitors, taking in the images, and shot out of the room.

Boom!

Following a huge resounding boom, the doors in one of the halls were kicked down by Yue Zhong, and he discovered over 20 men currently entangled with some other women.

Of the 20 over men, some were on the floor, some were roaring with laughter, riding some of the women. Some were using whips and candles to torture the women as well. The women were all naked, drenched in sweat and all sorts of substances, lying down weakly. There was a strong sexual odor in the room.

Jin Da Li would usually gift his subordinates some of the women that he was bored with, and it wasn't just to win his subordinates over, it was also a form of entertainment.

"Who is it?!" Seeing the huge doors slammed open, a few of the men were jolted awake, and shouted out in shock. Some even wanted to prepare their equipments.

"The person who will rid the world of you bunch of trash!" A cold glint flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes, and he shot forwards like an arrow, while the Black Tooth Blade in his hands slashed out 20



times.

Yue Zhong's speed was terrifying. Even some Type 3 Beasts might not be able to match Yue Zhong. Each time he pushed himself, he would appear and disappear like a bolt of lightning. The 20-over men in the room that were engaged in their own romps were Enhancers of at least Level 20, but not a single one of them could defend against Yue Zhong's strike. Every single one of them were chopped in two, causing a large amount of blood to splatter, bathing the hall in a bright blood red.

"Ahhh!!!" When one of the beauties saw the man currently atop her sliced in two, and blood splattering all over her, she couldn't help herself and screamed out.

Yue Zhong eyed the women and barked out coldly: "Shut the hell up! Otherwise, you can die!"

As he stared at them, they felt an instinctive fear rising, and forced down their screams. This man was obviously a terrifying expert that had no qualms killing others, he would definitely not go easy on women either.

After taking care of all the experts in the hall, Yue Zhong walked towards a window and beckoned in.

Xue Ning and the rest entered the villa.

Soon, every other live personnel member was brought to the hall.

The men who were still alive were tied up and left one side, and on the other, 200 beauties of various looks, body proportions and age.

After Jin Da Li became the local tyrant, he liked to bully the men and lord over the women. Many of the women were captured into his harem, and any women he got sick of would be thrown aside or given to his subordinates.

Within the hall, Yue Zhong sat on a sofa, and Xue Ning and Liu

Xiao Cha sat at his sides. By now, Liu Xiao Cha had cleaned her face of her disguise, revealing her clean and pretty face. She had a look of veneration and awe as she looked at Yue Zhong.

Zhao Ling stood quietly by one side, glancing at Yue Zhong from time to time, her heart still in shock: "So powerful!! This guy could actually take down the entire villa without a sound or alerting anybody. Incredible!"

Yue Zhong sat at the sofa and eyed Zhao Ling, asking mildly: "So what's the deal with Tian Jing's death?"

Tian Hao had been standing one side silently like a soulless man twitched a little, as his eyes shone with a complicated gaze when he stared at Zhao Ling.

Zhao Ling replied with respect: "This lowly one replies! After Tian Jing had been captured by Jin Da Li, she was toyed with for a while before being thrown to the subordinates. One of the perverts under him had caused her to die in one of his games."

Tian Hao was pale white with shock as he hollered in disbelief: "You're lying!! I saw the video of her as well as her voice in his phone! You're lying, you're lying to me!!"

"All the sisters here knew about this. Liu Fang, Cheng Fei, Zhang Man, we all knew." Zhao Ling pointed to a few of the beauties in the room, before saying: "Those videos were pre-recorded. Tian Hao, have you even seen her in person?"

When Tian Hao heard this, his entire being was jolted, and it turned incredibly cold. He had never seen her once, and he knew in his heart, that what Zhao Ling said was true.

# Chapter 511: Thousand Hero Alliance! Snow Palace!

---

When Tian Hao heard the words, he became still, his entire spirit seemingly crushed. Ever since he became an Evolver, he had been constantly fighting outside, gaining levels, becoming stronger. It was all to protect his one and only family left in the world - his sister. However, in a moment of folly, he had caused his sister to end up in Jin Da Li's hands, which in turn left him no choice but to serve as Jin Da Li's lapdog. Hearing the news of his sister's passing, even his willpower to live suffered a huge blow.

Yue Zhong took one look at Tian Hao and knew that it was a huge blow to his mental state. It felt like he had aged at least 20 years all of a sudden. He frowned and barked: "Tian Hao! If you want to die, I won't stop you. But if you were to die like that, you would only cause the ones you love more pain, and your enemies, pleasure! Jin Da Li was your enemy, but your real enemy is Jin Guang Xuan! If it wasn't for his protection, would a trash like Jin Da Li have been able to lay his hands on your sister? If you just die like that without killing Jin Guang Xuan, your sister would definitely not rest in peace in the netherworld! I had thought that you were a man of fortitude, but I didn't imagine that you would prove me wrong!"

"Since you're a trash yourself, I should have killed you at the first moment we clashed, that way you could have been sent on your way to meet your sister, and save me the burden of having to watch you wallow in self-pity!"

When Tian hao heard those harsh words, his dull eyes regained some form of clarity, as they shone with a renewed hatred and vigor: "Yes! There's still Jin Guang Xuan. I can't die yet. I need to make sure to punish him, and kill the entire Jin family!!"

"Who are you?" He asked.

"Yue Zhong!" Yue Zhong replied.

Tian Hao was intelligent as well, and saw that Yue Zhong's bitter words were meant to get him back on his feet. He gritted his teeth and swore: "Good! Yue Zhong, I know you've spent all this effort to help me, in the hopes of getting my help. I promise you, as long as you help me with my vengeance, my life will be yours to command! I, Tian Hao, might not be a big character, but I've never reneged on any promises I've made! I swear upon my name, that as long as you, Yue Zhong, help me to kill the Jin family, I will serve Yue Zhong with all my heart and life. If I should go back on my word, I will suffer a terrible death, and be treated as a dog for the rest of my life, and never to reincarnate after I die!"

Yue Zhong eyed Tian Hao with a look of satisfaction: "Good! Tian Hao, you can be assured, I will definitely help you with the Jin family. I am the leader of Gui Ning City, where there are over 900,000 survivors. Jin Guang Xuan had been a sore thumb to me for quite some time, once I've returned to Gui Ning City, I can deploy my troops to annihilate them easily!"

Tian Hao was a man of integrity and valued relationships. He would do what he set his mind to do. With a character like Jin Da Li, if Yue Zhong was in Tian Hao's shoes, he would have long since killed Jin Da Li off, as well as his entire family. He wouldn't have allowed himself to be blackmailed. This was because he knew that with such a character, Jin Da Li would never let naive folks like Tian Hao or his sister to have a good ending. Furthermore, Tian Hao had gone against his conscience to serve Jin Da Li, such a person was extremely useful to Yue Zhong. Furthermore, he was a dual-attribute Evolver, and his potential for growth was naturally high.

When Tian Hao heard Yue Zhong's words, he nodded slowly and sunk in his thoughts.

Everyone's gazes also fell on Yue Zhong, their eyes filled with shock. In this world, an establishment of over a few ten thousand people was already considered a huge faction. Yue Zhong was

actually the leader of almost a million people, his strength was truly something else.

Yue Zhong was about to say something else, when a loud alarm resounded throughout Yang County.

Tian Hao's face fell as he immediately voiced out: "Not good! It means that there's an enemy launching an attack on Yang County!"

When Yue Zhong heard that, he launched into action, throwing his .05 guns to Xue Ning: "Ok! I'll go take a look. Tian Hao, follow me. Xue Ning, Liu Xiao Cha, Zhao Ling, I'll leave this place to you! Xue Ning will take the lead, don't let anything untowards happen here. If those fellows try anything funny, just execute them!"

Xue Ning was not only hot, but vicious in her methods. When Yue Zhong was engaged with Tian Hao in battle, she had taken the initiative to attack Jin Da Li to distract Tian Hao. Yue Zhong could be rest assured leaving things to her.

Xue Ning flashed an alluring smile at Yue Zhong, while saying confidently: "Got it! Boss! Make it quick, let's engage in some 6P tonight. I'm a virgin myself, and based on my judgement, there are a few beautiful ones here that are virgins as well!"

Xue Ning's brazen words caused Yue Zhong's figure to slightly tremble. He had never seen such an outspoken woman before. He had a number of women at his beck and call, but most of them were filled with respect and fear towards him. They all spoke extremely courteously. At most, they would tease him once in a while, but he had never seen someone who declared herself to be a virgin, and yet suggested a 6P in the same sentence before.

"Seems like it wasn't a bad decision to get her!" He swept an eye across her charming features and sexy figure, taking in that bright purple hair of hers that occurred due to evolving, and felt a tinge of excitement in his heart.

Yue Zhong only took a quick glance, and threw his thoughts to

the back of his mind, before charging out with Tian Hao.

Outside of Yang County, there were 2 clear separate troops, one was all male, and the other, a mix of men and women. Of those troops, the men numbered in the 6,000s, while the women counted above 10,000.

With such manpower in this day and age, they can only be powerful factions, and they were precisely the Snow Palace and the Thousand Hero Alliance.

The Thousand Hero Alliance had a battalion of soldiers currently marching on Yang County, with a large number of its soldiers firing wildly.

As for Yang County, the defence mechanisms were engaged, as the heavy machine guns on the city walls began spewing fire, suppressing the Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers. From time to time, there would be a Thousand Hero Alliance soldier that fell.

Behind those soldiers, there were 2 self-propelling rocket launchers firing projectiles towards the city wall as well.

Every projectile packed a powerful punch, as one round from the rocket launcher caused a huge hole in the city wall.

City walls were a form of defence that was used in ancient times, but had been relegated due to modern warfare. It was because the firepower from modern weapons were too powerful, and a city wall would not be able to withstand the blast impact from those weapons of destruction.

In between the 2 troops at the back, there was a joint forces command post, in charge of commanding the assault by the Thousand Hero Alliance and the Snow Palace.

A man stood in the command post, his height towering at 1.9m, his entire frame bulky and muscly. He had a full beard, his hair grizzly, his eyebrows thick. He wore a clean white shirt and black trousers, and while his attire didn't match his aura, it could not be

denied that he was imposing and powerful. He was looking at a stunningly beautiful woman beside him, whose hair was a silvery-white and her body curvaceous. She had an otherworldly aura, and incredible features, which shone with an intense coldness and aloof nature. The man's eyes were filled with an undisguised lust as he spoke: "Snow Palace Master! It's your turn to send your people!"

The middle-aged man was precisely the leader of the Thousand Hero Alliance, Zhu Xiong Ba! He had single-handedly brought up this faction of 50,000 people and had over 7,000 direct subordinates. As for the cold and proud beauty, she was naturally the Palace Master of the Snow Palace faction, Shangguan Bing Xue.

"Attack!" Shangguan Bing Xue did not return Zhu Xiong Ba's gaze, instead turning to a pretty, short-haired soldier decked in military uniform. This person was Yun Chu Chu.

Yun Chu Chu replied in a respectful manner and stepped out to relay the orders: "Yes, Palace Master!"

Being disregarded by Shangguan Bing Xue, Zhu Xiong Ba's heart was filled with fury, and he entertained an extremely vile thought: "Little bitch, why the fuck are you acting so cool for? Once we're done with the Greater China Alliance, I'll capture you, and fuck you over and over in front of your subordinates. Since you hate men so much, your father, I, will get over a thousand men to play with you, and break you down! I'll see if you can still pretend to be so proud!"

Even though he was thinking such nasty thoughts, his face wore an awkward smile as he looked towards the distance.

Under Shangguan Bing Xue's orders, 6,000 men in tattered clothes walked out from their original contingent, each of them looking bedraggled. They carried long pontoons on their backs as they were forced to charge onwards by the female warriors behind, making their way towards Yang County.

In Yang County, the machine guns continued to fire out at the incoming male survivors, felling them like sowing wheat.

In just one volley of fire, the male survivors lost their composure and tried to turn and escape. These male survivors were the slaves of Snow Palace, having been made to eat the worst, do the worst kind of labour, and they naturally had low morale.

When women became vicious, they were even more terrifying than men. The entire Snow Palace basically propagated the poor treatment of the males.

One of the female enforcers brandished her sword and hacked away at the men, shouting: "Get the fuck out there!! Bunch of useless trash!!"

Numerous men were being killed left, right, centre, and behind as gouts of fresh blood dyed the scene.

Amidst the carnage, one of the male survivors could not hold back anymore and threw himself on a female soldier, shouting: "Everybody! Let's kill these crazy women! Only then will we get a chance to survive!!"

6 or 7 men immediately jumped forwards and began to bite and scratch the woman to death.

The shout from the first man had ignited the desire to survive, and the men instantly went crazy and turned on the female soldiers, drowning them beneath their bodies.

Like this, the male slaves of the Snow Palace turned around to bite their masters.

Yun Chu Chu ran urgently in front of Shangguan Bing Xue and said: "Palace Master! The men have rebelled!"



# Chapter 512: Shangguan Bing Xue

---

Shangguan Bing Xue's face frosted over, as she spoke in an incredibly icy tone: "Get Ding Mei to go and kill them all!"

In Shangguan Bing Xue's eyes, those men were utter trash and scum, not even comparable to pigs or dogs. She did not view them as human beings at all.

Yun Chu Chu felt a chill as she replied: "Yes!"

Zhu Xiong Ba glanced at Shangguan Bing Xue, his eyes flashing with a strange glint: "This woman is truly a lunatic and a maniac!"

On the battlefield, 500 female warriors dressed in white were led by Ding Mei, as they brandished their Tang Replica Swords and charged at the men in revolt. They unleashed carnage as swords flashed everywhere.

Every single one of the women were Enhancers above Level 20, and Ding Mei was a Level 50 Evolver. As they massacred their way through the ordinary male survivors, it was like unleashing a tiger into a herd of sheep.

"Traitors will die!!" Ding Mei was like a demoness as she flashed about the crowd, her alluring body dancing in and out. With every slash she made, a male survivor would be sliced in two.

Ding Mei had been the Chief of the Scarlet Phoenix Triad back at Gui Ning City, and when she lashed out, she was truly ferocious and her attacks were vicious. Due to her obscene speed, there wasn't a single sniper that could lock on her position.

With that valiant but cruel valkyrie leading her troops, the group of male rebels instantly collapsed. Many of them wailed as they tried to run in all directions, but the female warriors chased them down, killing them.

"What a fool!" Yue Zhong was hidden in a corner of Yang County, observing the battlefield. When he saw the female warriors

slaughtering the male survivors, he could not help but frown and curse!

While Shangguan Bing Xue's extreme measures were enough to deter any men from harboring intentions towards the women of the Snow Palace, she had just wasted a viable resource by killing the men. They were genetically more capable of warring, and she had just decided to do away with them because of the rebellion. To Yue Zhong, she had made a really stupid call.

At the same time, Yue Zhong had seen through Shangguan Bing Xue's true might, and it was that her core strength was the group of Enhanced female warriors. Other than them, they didn't even have many firearms, it could be seen that her faction wasn't too much of a threat to him.

"Great! Great! Great! Truly as I expected! This Shangguan Bing Xue is just putting on a false front." Zhu Xiong Ba watched as the Snow Palace female warriors chased down the male survivors and pressed a button in his hands.

At that time, the soldiers from the Thousand Hero Alliance marching towards Yang County suddenly turned around and began firing at the female warriors of the Snow Palace.

Under that hail of bullets, many of the strong female warriors were shot down, and they laid in pools of their own blood.

At the same time, the rest of the soldiers from the Thousand Hero Alliance began firing their weapons at the Snow Palace soldiers out of the blue. As the attack came suddenly, over a hundred Snow Palace female warriors were shot dead.

"Those who are men, kill these stinking bitches!"

"Kill the stinking bitches!! Everybody, take action!!"

"Kill them sticking bitches!! Join our Thousand Hero Alliance and gain proper freedom. Grab your own fate, become true men, and heroes!"

As the Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers continued their assault, they hollered loudly.

The men who had been subjected to slavery and torment under the Snow Palace treatment instantly got fired up. They rose up in anger, and began their retaliation towards the female soldiers of the Snow Palace. They had been forced to do intense manual labour, and had been suppressing their hatred and fury. At this critical juncture, it all erupted, and became a huge roaring body of emotions.

"Zhu Xiong Ba! What's the meaning of this?!" When Shangguan Bing Xue saw her soldiers being attacked, her calm demeanor was replaced by an intense cold fury, as she glared at Zhu Xiong Ba with a frightening killing intent.

8 experts above Level 40 stepped up to stand beside Zhu Xiong Ba as they exchanged cold glares with Shangguan Bing Xue.

Zhu Xiong Ba stood behind them and roared with laughter: "Hahaha! I mean to eradicate both the Greater China Alliance as well as your Snow Palace today! Everyone will have to become a part of the Thousand Hero Alliance! Shangguan Bing Xue, if you know your position, kneel down immediately. Get your entire Snow Palace to submit, and you shall swear to become my woman. I will then dote on you. Otherwise, should you fall into my hands, I will treat you like the lowest of the low, and you will become a bitch, to be fucked by every single man that I give to!!"

By now, the Thousand Hero Alliance had gotten the upper hand in the betrayal, together with the uprising by the male survivors of the Snow Palace, the Snow Palace faction was being bombarded by attacks on all sides.

Many female warriors had just gotten into formation when they were blasted by fire. Although there were many experts in the Snow Palace, even if they activated their skills and took down a number of the Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers, they were quickly

disposed of as well.

Shangguan Bing Xue did not falter not display too much of a shock, instead, she assessed the situation coldly in her mind. She replied, without a hint of emotion in her cold exterior: "Without our Snow Palace, how would your Thousand Hero Alliance take down Yang County? Even if you defeat us, you will suffer casualties on your side, and you will fail in obtaining Yang County."

Zhu Xiong Ba stared at Shangguan Bing Xue with undisguised excitement, his mind full of thoughts of this absolute beauty grovelling and moaning beneath him. His entire body quivered with adrenaline and excitement: "Haha!! You're right! At first, it would have been extremely tough for my Thousand Hero Alliance to have to deal with both of you! However, we have received the aid of the Kingdom of God. They have provided sufficient firepower, as for your Snow Palace and the Greater China Alliance, both of you will be in my grasp today!"

At almost the same time as his speech, a loud whir of motors came roaring from a distance, as 10 Eurocopters burst into the scene, joining the battle.

The 10 Eurocopters began firing at the ground, and a number of Snow Palace warriors were instantly torn into shreds.

"Those are assault helicopters!"

"How did the Thousand Hero Alliance get those?!"

"Finished!! We're finished!!"

When they saw the 10 assault helicopters, almost everybody in Yang County and the Snow Palace had a huge change in expression, their morale dropping to the lowest.

There were no anti-air defences in Yang County, and the Snow Palace did not possess any either. Ordinary rifle bullets would not be able to pierce the hulls of these eurocopters and even high

calibre machine gun bullets would not do much to them.

Shangguan Bing Xue eyed those monsters in the sky, her face still unchanged, as she conjured a green book in her hands: "As long as I kill you, it'll all be over!"

Zhu Xiong Ba was also a warlord and experienced fighter, and when he saw the book in Shangguan Bing Xue's hands, his face fell suddenly and he retreated backwards hastily, shouting out: "Kill her! Kill her now!"

6 of the 8 experts by Zhu Xiong Ba's side immediately shot forwards.

Amongst those 6 experts, one was an Agility-based Evolver, and in just a second, he had crossed a distance of over 13m, appearing in front of Shangguan Bing Xue with a dagger in his hands, slashing towards her abdomen like a vicious snake.

The move of the Agility Evolver was quick and vicious, and even an Enhancer of Level 60 would have to take him seriously. At the very least, there would have been an injury.

"Freeze!" Shangguan Bing Xue's eyes flashed coldly as the Level 6 Treasure: Bronze book of Snow and Ice in her hands opened. A white beam of ice shot out and swept across the Agility-based Evolver, directly turning him into a block of ice, extinguishing his life.

Shangguan Bing Xue eyed Zhu Xiong Ba, and shot towards him with the speed 15 times that of a normal human, like a flying fairy.

"Go to hell, Bitch!" A 2m-tall burly man wielding a huge mace swung towards Shangguan Bing Xue. If a low level Type 2 Mutant Beast was struck by that blow, it would be flattened instantly.

The Book of Snow and Ice in Shangguan Bing Xue's hands lit up one more, and a beam of ice shot at the burly expert, also turning him into ice.

Another 2 experts charged forwards, one turning into a were-

leopard, the other into a werewolf, as they attacked her with a frightening strength and speed.

Shangguan Bing Xue quietly activated her book again, as 2 beams of ice hit the 2 experts squarely on the chest, turning them into ice sculptures as well.

Seeing how terrifying her strength was, turning everyone she willed into ice, the other 2 experts started to falter, and wanted to run, however, just as they turned, they were immediately encased in ice.

While Shangguan Bing Xue might not be a capable leader, the very fact that she was able to establish a faction that could house over 12,000 survivors, was testament to her personal power. Her Level 6 Book of Snow and Ice was incredibly terrifying. She was a Level 58 naturally awakened triple-attribute Evolver of Agility, Spirit and Stamina. At the same time, with her Second Order Ice Manipulation, as well as the control of the book, not many experts at her level were her match. As for lower-level Enhancers, they were simply unable to defend against her.

"Shit!! This woman is damn strong!" Zhu Xiong Ba felt a tremor in his heart because he knew she was powerful in the past, but didn't know it was to this extent. In a flash, 6 Level 40 experts had died at her hands.

# Chapter 513: Divine Envoy of Steel!

---

Zhu Xiong Ba shouted as he tried to run: "Fucking kill her!! Open fire!! Open fire!! Use the rockets!! Blast this bitch!!"

By now, he had no more thoughts of trying to capture Shangguan Bing Xue alive, he just wanted to kill her.

2 squads of soldiers suddenly appeared, as they began firing wildly at her. Another few soldiers wielded some rocket launchers, aiming at her before firing.

"Wall of Ice!" Shangguan Bing Xue looked at the incoming projectiles and bullets, and her cold expression shook slightly. With a thought of her mind, a terrifying frosty aura congealed into a huge wall in front of her.

When the rockets landed on the wall of ice, they blasted it apart, and even impacted Shangguan Bing Xue behind the wall.

"Is she dead?" Zhu Xiong Ba's subordinates looked towards the aftermath of the blast.

"Ice Bullets!" Following a high, cold voice, thousands of ice beads shot outwards in various directions.

These ice bullets were like rifle bullets, easily piercing the bodies of the Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers present, causing them to fall to the ground, dead.

Shangguan Bing Xue walked out from behind the debris and destruction, still holding on to her Book of Snow and Ice, looking like a fairy, as she swept her eyes around.

There was indeed a possibility of the rockets taking her life, however, they had to land on her face. She had employed a number of means to deal with those rockets, causing them to be ineffective at the end.

Shangguan Bing Xue looked around, noting the numerous

soldiers lying on the ground, but the leader Zhu Xiong Ba was nowhere to be seen.

"Shit!" Her icy expression finally broke to reveal an expression of fury. She waved her hands, and countless ice bullets congealed to finish off the soldiers. If it wasn't for their interruption, she could have killed that damned Zhu Xiong Ba already.

"They're fighting internally! Now's a good chance!" The various members of the Greater China Alliance within Yang County saw the crazy slaughter between the Snow Palace and Thousand Hero Alliance and became excited: "Attack! Attack! Now's our only chance!"

The city gates opened, and elite soldiers of the Greater China Alliance rushed out towards the Thousand Hero Alliance. If the Snow Palace was eradicated by the Thousand Hero Alliance, with the support of the Kingdom of God, the Thousand Hero Alliance was bound to swallow the other 2 factions.

No matter how strong Shangguan Bing Xue was, she was only one person. Killing many would require the expenditure of Stamina and Spirit. At the end, against the mighty firepower of the Thousand Hero Alliance, she would have to escape as well.

The moment the Greater China Alliance joined the fray, it became an all-out clash between the Thousand Hero Alliance and the other 2 factions.

However, the Eurocopters in the skies were truly terrifying, unleashing their rain of bullets like a cleaving blade that tore through the body of many soldiers. Numerous experts fell as a result.

Even when working together, the soldiers of the Greater China Alliance and the female warriors of the Snow Palace could not withstand the might of the Thousand Hero Alliance. Technology had the upper hand in large-scale battles. In front of those assault helicopters, it didn't matter if the soldiers were Level 30 or Level



40 Enhancers. As long as they were hit by the firepower, they would be torn to shreds or blasted to pieces.

The assault helicopters had cannons on them, and with each rocket fired, the blast would shake the ground. The projectiles would turn numerous experts into ashes and dust within a second.

The soldiers of the Greater China Alliance were trying to use their rifles to fire at the assault helicopters, and some of the experts with firearms proficiency-related skills managed to hit the assault helicopters, however, the bullets would just ricochet off the armor.

All of a sudden, with a bright flash, a bullet shot through the air, and punctured the armor of one assault helicopter, causing it to combust and explode.

Yue Zhong took a look at the fireball in the sky that was falling to the ground, and thought quietly: "Enhanced Bullets!! That was definitely an expert firing a powerful enhanced bullet."

With one assault helicopter down, the rest of the helicopters went crazy. They increased their firing output, and blasted towards the direction where the shot came from. The entire area was bombarded in seconds, and swallowed up by countless blast impacts.

The expert that had fired that enhanced bullet was blasted to smithereens, together with the entire area.

"Come with me! Let's go get rid of Jin Sheng Cheng now!" Yue Zhong ordered Tian Hao beside him.

Tian Hao's eyes flashed with a fiery gaze.

Yue Zhong disappeared from his position, making his way towards the command centre in Yang County.

The command centre at Yang County was within a villa. There were many Greater China Alliance soldiers stationed everywhere, numbering at least 200, every one of them possessing a firearm and

decent equipment. At the same time, the villa had quite a number of security cameras.

"What a thick defence!" Yue Zhong approached the villa and he frowned. The defences were tight, and the soldiers were numerous. With his might, other than charging in headlong, there were no better options.

Just as he was pondering, 12 technologically advanced-looking helicopters that were coated with a silvery lustre, and loaded with weapons thrice that of an Apache, as well as a body that was also more than three times the size of an Apache flew over.

Yue Zhong looked at those 12 armed helicopters that looked technologically advanced and his heart was filled with shock: "What are those? I've never seen them before!"

Yue Zhong had seen a number of designs for the various modern weapons before the apocalypse in school, but he had never seen anything like those in front of him now.

The 12 futuristic assault helicopters began to launch a volley of rapid fire, consisting of bullets and projectiles of different sizes and calibres. The hail of metal rained down on the entire villa and its region, blasting various parts and killing many of the soldiers.

In one of the helicopters, there was a blond man with blue eyes, wearing a suit. He had incredibly good looks, and was holding a wine glass in his hands. At his feet, there were 2 beautiful Chinese girls helping to massage his feet. He was staring out the window in boredom, and as he watched the carnage and devastation happening below, he sighed in wonder: "So beautiful! It truly is an experience, watching these wild monkeys being bombed to pieces. However, some of these Chinese women are not too bad, they can be our toys."

Another man who was dressed in a silver military uniform, raised his own glass of wine towards the handsome man and chuckled: "Esteemed Envoy, this time, having completed such a

task delegated by the Elders, you should definitely be promoted to an Apostle. At that time, please do look out for me."

The handsome young man was called Halumanda! He was the 13th seat of the 36 Divine Envoys of the Kingdom of God, known as the Divine Envoy of Steel. He was a dual-attribute Evolver of the Spirit and Agility attributes, and was also a Paladin, having grasped the skill Knight's Heart, possessing a terrifying combat ability.

There were 12 Apostles in the Kingdom of God, each of them were the closest to God in terms of power. Since they had monstrous power as well as absolute command of their soldiers, they were geniuses amongst geniuses and most of them were Heretical Christians

Under the 12 Apostles, were the 36 Divine Envoys. Each of these Divine Envoys were also genuses, while even the weakest was a dual-attribute Evolver, and the lowest level was at least 56.

Other than that, the Kingdom of God actually controlled a newbie village, allowing their experts to enter it to get job changes, becoming much stronger than normal Enhancers. Yue Zhong was stronger than most Enhancers was because he had went through a job change into his Dark Knight profession in one such village. At the same time, there were various other wondrous items in the village, when Yue Zhong had entered at that time, due to his lack of level, he couldn't fully appreciate what was possible.\*

Halumanda chuckled lightly: "It doesn't work like that! The 12 Apostles are all powerful entities, and are far beyond my capabilities. However, after completing this task, I should be able to increase in my ranking amongst the Divine Envoys list. At that time, I will definitely put in a good word for you, Dus."

Dus became excited when he heard that. As long as Halumanda helped to say some complimentary words, he would likely be transferred back to the European quarters. He loathed being here

in the Asia-Pacific region, where there were countless zombies and Mutant Beasts. "Many thanks, Esteemed Envoy!"

Halumanda then replied indifferently: "Alright! Take action!"

Dus' face turned serious as he ordered: "Yes! All stations standby, Operation Silver Fox activated."

With Dus' order, a number of soldiers dressed in black military uniforms and armed to the teeth leapt from the assault helicopters, employing their parachutes as they landed.

Every single one of these soldiers were quick and agile in their actions, and they were experienced. They were special forces that had went through body enhancements, and the moment they landed, they went into formation. They began taking down any soldiers that were still alive.

The assault helicopters that hovered in the air also began to descent, as a number of soldiers in silver military uniforms and cold looks came out to set up a perimeter, while Halumanda strode out like a lord.

The soldiers in the black military uniform swiftly took down all the remaining Greater China Alliance soldiers and came to a pile of rubble.

2 soldiers in the silver military uniform walked towards the rubble and waved their hands, causing the debris to fly away, revealing a tunnel that went deep underground.

# Chapter 514: Seize The Opportunity

---

"What is that place?" When Yue Zhong saw the tunnel, he was shocked. He had never expected for a tunnel to appear here. Such a secretive measure was beyond what he had experienced in his everyday ordinary life before the apocalypse.

The soldiers in black went down the tunnel orderly and swiftly, and soon the sounds of gunfire and explosions traveled from the tunnel.

"Seems like the Greater China Alliance is not simple." Yue Zhong looked at the tunnel and thought to himself.

He had originally assumed that the Greater China Alliance was an ordinary faction in the apocalypse, but it seemed that they were hiding some secrets.

After all the soldiers in black went down the tunnel, the soldiers in silver followed suit, covering the imposing Halumanda, as they charged in.

In front of the 12 silver futuristic assault helicopters, there were only 24 soldiers in silver standing guard.

"Chance!" Yue Zhong looked at the 12 silver futuristic helicopters and made his way carefully there.

The assault helicopters had a terrifying impact on the battlefield, each and everyone like a tank in mid air. With the support of these, the Thousand Hero Alliance could easily crush the people from the Snow Palace or Greater China Alliance. It was testament to their might.

If he could obtain these 12 futuristic assault helicopters that were three times larger than even the Apaches, Yue Zhong would have obtained a powerful addition to his arsenal, and it would be almost effortless to suppress any smaller factions.

He sneaked carefully, before suddenly pouncing towards one of

the soldiers in silver.

With his maximum speed that could exceed even a Type 2 Lightning, he took barely a second to cross the distance of over 15m. He appeared behind the soldier and slashed down, decapitating him.

On the other side, Tian Hao had also followed closely behind and charged out at another soldier, slaughtering him.

"Ambush!! Ambush!!" After Yue Zhong had killed the 4th soldier in silver, one of their comrades finally managed to react and shout out.

The remaining soldiers immediately got into formation, each of them with a speed that exceeded normal humans. In almost an instant, they were ready to respond to the situation.

"Strong! They're definitely Enhancers above Level 30!" Yue Zhong eyed the quick response of the remaining soldiers, who were already pointing their weapons at him, and felt a chill in his heart.

Yue Zhong could easily deploy a troop of his own consisting of 20 Level 30 experts, but he had no confidence they would be able to deal with any situation anywhere else outside. At the very least, they could not be compared to the troops in front of Yue Zhong now.

The moment they got into their combat formation, they began using their weapons and grenades, launching a fierce assault on Yue Zhong and Tian Hao.

After killing 3 men, Tian Hao was totally suppressed by the fierce gunfire, and he could not risk sticking his neck out. If it were a one-on-one, with his dual-attributes and high level, it was enough to casually deal with any of these soldiers.

However, when up against an entire troop making use of modern weaponry, he was suppressed. If he wasn't careful, he could be

killed. While it was true that Evolvers had body constitutions far surpassing any ordinary people, they weren't invincible.

At the same time, the rotors of the 12 assault helicopters began to whirl, as the helicopters rose into the skies. The moment they were in the skies, they could exhibit their maximum power, and become an impregnable fortress.

"I can't let them get in the air!" Yue Zhong eyed those assault helicopters and his eyes flashed with a chilly light. He activated his [Art of Fear], sending an immense Spirit wave outwards in all directions.

He darted about near the assault helicopters, and the intense Spirit fluctuations he was emitting out penetrated the hulls of the helicopters and overloaded the pilots, causing them to faint.

With the decommissioning of the pilots, the assault helicopters struggled a little more, before ultimately stopping their ascent.

Every elite soldier of this silver uniform unit was specialized, and had focused on strengthening their soldier skill sets. Their gun control were all raised to a Level 3 standard, and anything within a close distance would be an accurate hit. Even for Yue Zhong, who was insanely strong, he was hit by 2 bullets squarely while attacking the pilots of the assault helicopters.

After the dust settled, a white shield appeared in front of Yue Zhong, and he charged out from the dust, waving the 2m-long Black Tooth Blade in his hands about. With the flash of his blade, a number of the soldiers in silver were directly slashed in 2.

When Yue Zhong went all out, his attacks were truly ferocious and decisive. Within 7 seconds, the remaining elite soldiers were all taken care of, and their corpses littered the ground.

"So strong! Is this his true strength? He's truly too terrifying." Tian Hao watched in shock as Yue Zhong flashed about the battlefield like a death god. He himself was held in check by just 5

of those elite soldiers, if he had to face those 24 soldiers by himself, he could only rely on assassinating 2 from behind before falling back. Otherwise, he would definitely be surrounded and killed.

"These elite soldiers from the Kingdom of God are truly powerful!" After killing them, Yue Zhong looked at the corpses, frowning. They had proved to be more than just a nuisance.

With Yue Zhong's current strength, taking down a squad of elite soldiers wouldn't be an issue for him. He wouldn't even be hit once. However, against this particular troop, he realised that he had suffered a few blows from them, and it could be seen how terrifying their strength was.

These elite soldiers had gone through specialization training, their equipment decent and well-rounded, and they were even trained rigorously in the military. They were definitely many times stronger than the special forces of the past. It wasn't that their qualifications were better than those, it was purely due to their enhanced bodies, surpassing those normal soldiers of old.

Yue Zhong came to one of the corpses, and retrieved the .03 rifle from his corpse, before firing a shot at the body.

When the bullet round landed on the uniform, there was only a white scar, and the bullet was unable to penetrate the uniform. It was obvious that the material was extremely resilient.

Looking at the result of his test, Yue Zhong's expression changed in shock: "What a powerful defensive suit!"

Yue Zhong had something similar, but he required the hide of those Type 2 Mutant Beasts, and it was hard to manufacture. Only the elites of his elites could wear them.

These silver uniforms of the Kingdom of God was obviously a result of technology, and the technology behind it was extremely refined and mature, being able to repel bullets, yet remain light at the same time.



From these battle uniforms, the disparity between Yue Zhong's faction and the Kingdom of God in terms of technology and research could be seen.

"Come with me!" Yue Zhong shot a look at Tian Hao before dragging out all the pilots.

Tian Hao was of only one mind to kill Jin Sheng Cheng, Yue Zhong had no way of forcing him to remain here, hence he decided for them to enter the tunnel together.

Hearing his words, Tian Hao's eyes flashed, and he followed closely behind.

Such tunnels were most likely built as a means to hide from any bombs during warfare. Every part of the country would have some sort of bunkers and tunnels like these, and the locations would usually be secretive, not known to many.

Even if a nuclear bomb were to go off on Yang County, it could desecrate everything above ground, but the underground would be safe from the impact.

The moment they entered the tunnel, they saw many bodies along the way, and the corpses belonged to the soldiers of the Greater China Alliance. Every one of those soldiers wore ordinary military uniform, and had been taken out by single shots. Many of the automatic defensive systems were disengaged or destroyed.

Although it was underground, their surroundings were well lit by lamps hanging on either side of the walls. It caused the entire tunnel to be bright. The expenditure just to maintain the lights must be costly.

The tunnels were numerous, like some ant hive. It could easily accommodate at least a few hundred thousands of people. If there was no guide, one would definitely get lost within the huge area.

Yue Zhong followed the trail of corpses and blood, close on the heels of the bloody footprints of the Kingdom of God.

The Kingdom of God would definitely not engage in something useless, hence they must have had a clear goal, and would not stop until they achieve what they entered the tunnels to do.

# Chapter 515: Underground City!

---

Yue Zhong proceeded extremely carefully for a long distance, before reaching the experts of the Kingdom of God.

In one tunnel, of the 120 soldiers that had charged forth, they had only lost 5. Other than that, over 200 Chinese had defected over to the Kingdom of God's side. A huge, tall man who was good-looking, and had a dignified aura stood beside Halumanda as he laughed coldly at the scene in front of him.

Jin Sheng Cheng's enraged voice sounded from a loudhailer: "Hu Han, you actually conspired with the foreigners to backstab our Greater China Alliance! You're a traitor that deserves death! Dog!! I was really blind, to have spared you then!!"

The underground city was huge and had plenty of tunnels as well as countless traps. If it wasn't for the guidance of someone on the inside, they wouldn't have been defeated so easily by the Kingdom of God.

The handsome middle-aged man had a slightly flushed face as he barked back: "Jin Sheng Cheng, you dare? You damn pig-head, trash, beast! You sent me out on a mission and fucked my wife, and even got others to humiliate her as well?! You think I didn't know? Every single one of you in the upper echelons of the Greater China Alliance are bastards!! How I wish to devour you and dig out your hearts! Even if I collude with the foreigners today, what can you do? As long as I can kill your entire family, even if your father, I, have to sell my soul to the devil, I'd be willing!!"

As the saying goes, with corrupt leaders, you'll find corrupt subordinates. Jin Sheng Cheng wasn't any decent man, and he loved to screw around with his subordinates' wives, daughters and any other females in their lives. He basically didn't bother too much about the quality of lives of the survivors.

Jin Sheng Cheng had been a high-ranking official before the

apocalypse, and after gaining the underground city, he was cautious at first. However, after a few months of unsuccessful attempts to contact the central government, he began to play around with the women in his city, and act upon his desires.

As he got even more audacious, he felt that normal women weren't worth the thrill anymore, and turned his attention to the women of his subordinates. In truth, not to mention the apocalypse, even before the apocalypse, there were countless officials who would fool around with the women of their subordinates, some even going as far as to keep a journal of them. After the apocalypse, these inhumane bastards got even more perverse.

When Hu Han's wife was toyed around with, he had been suppressing his rage, until the Kingdom of God came knocking on his door. He then quietly became their spy. This was why the underground city was breached so easily. The fastest way to bring down a fortress was from within.

On the other side, Jin Sheng Cheng assumed his habitual pose of using reason and rationale: "Hu Han, whatever happened, you shouldn't have joined forces with them! If you continue like this, you're a sinner that turned his back on his people and country! You will be shamed in history, and be cursed by our fellow Chinese! Turn back now while it's still not too late. Kill those foreigners beside you, and you're still a hero to us Chinese."

Hu Han immediately spat, his face savage and furious: "Pei!! Jin Sheng Cheng! I swear to fucking kill your family today!!!"

Jin Sheng Cheng replied with a cold laugh: "Stubborn till death! You'll be smeared forever in history!!"

An automatic machine gun suddenly appeared in the dark tunnel and started firing wildly at the advancing troops of the Kingdom of God.

Under that dense barrage, a number of the Kingdom of God

soldiers, as well as some of the Chinese that betrayed the Greater China Alliance were punched full of holes.

The majority of the soldiers from the Kingdom of God wore strong protective vests. Even when fired at, they managed to make it behind cover. However, the Chinese traitors weren't so lucky, and many of them were killed.

Many similar automatic machine guns appeared in various other tunnels, their total number at least in the hundreds. As they covered all aspects, even a mosquito would find it hard to fly safely through.

Even a battalion of elites would only die if they chose to charge down these tunnels.

Hu Han came in front of Halumanda and spoke respectfully: "Divine Envoy, this is one of the strongest and final defenses of the underground city. If we can break past these, we would be able to reach the places where those beasts are hiding. The machine guns are being controlled by their side, and I have no means of turning them off."

"Hmph! Do they want to rely on just this to block me? Break them for me!" Halumanda laughed coldly as he stepped forwards, looking like an emperor as he stepped through the tunnel. He activated his Second Order Metal Manipulation.

Kacha! Kacha! Kacha!

Within the tunnel, many of the automatic machine guns were forcibly twisted and the bullets jammed before they exploded into fragments. All it took was for Halumanda to stroll casually and twist any of the guns that he came across. It showed his incredible strength.

"Too frightening!! Why is he so terrifying? What the hell is he??" Jin Sheng Cheng and the rest who were hiding deep within the underground city stared at the screen and could not help but feel

fear. They had seen countless Enhancers, and Evolver, but never such a person who could forcibly destroy so many machine guns so easily.

As the hundreds of automatic machine guns were destroyed one by one, Jin Sheng Cheng's image appeared on one of the displays within the tunnels. His attitude was extremely subservient, as he used fluent English to try and negotiate: "Esteemed Envoy from the Kingdom of God!! We're willing to surrender! Please ensure our personal property and the safety of our men. If you can do so, we will immediately deactivate all defenses, and grant you control of the place. With our help, you can easily manage this area consisting of over 90,000 survivors and other resources."

With the destruction of the machine guns, the safety of Jin Sheng Cheng and the rest could not be guaranteed and they immediately abandoned their loath and hate for the foreigners, choosing instead to surrender.

Many times, history had shown that while a rare few would continue their resistance until the end in times of trouble, a vast majority were death-fearing cowards. When the Manchus invaded, many Qing officials gave up. When Japan invaded China, countless officials turned sides. Even Wang Jing Wei, a Chinese politician during that time, chose to be a lapdog for the Japanese.

As for his command of English, Jin Sheng Cheng had plans before to move to America to become a citizen, and hence, his English was decent.

Halumanda smiled proudly as he replied: "I'm the Divine Envoy Halumanda from the Kingdom of God. As long as you guys help us to control this underground city, you'll be part of us, and all your personal belongings and people will be protected by our Kingdom of God."

While Halumanda was strong and was a white supremacist, he wasn't a fool. Although their troops were truly powerful, and had

plenty of equipment, defeating the Greater China Alliance would not be difficult, but controlling the underground city without their assistance would definitely not be easy.

Jin Sheng Cheng was already the leader of this place, and if they worked together, the Kingdom of God could expedite the process of control over this underground city.

Jin Sheng Cheng immediately exclaimed in joy: "Many thanks, Divine Envoy! Thank you!!"

Hu Han's expression immediately turned ugly as he spoke up: "Divine Envoy! This wasn't what we agreed on! Didn't we agree for me to help you control the city if you help me destroy those bastards?!"

Hu Han was extremely clear, if Jin Sheng Cheng and the rest retained control, the whole bunch of traitors would be put to death.

Halumanda turned to shoot a cold glare at Hu Han: "Shut up! What qualifications do you have to question my decision? You want to challenge my position?"

Hu Han gulped and immediately lowered his head, his eyes flashing with a venomous look: "Your subordinate dare not!"

Although Hu Han had over 200 Chinese soldiers with him, compared to the elite of the Kingdom of God, it was truly too vast a difference. Be it equipment, experience or even body constitution. If the Kingdom of God really wanted to deal with them, it wouldn't take more than half an hour.

The moment Jin Sheng Cheng and Halumanda came to an agreement, a golden door was slowly opened.

"It's time!" Yue Zhong eyed the party entering the door from afar, and leaped out, firing a rocket towards Halumanda and his men.

"Ambush!!" Halumanda wasn't one of the 36 Divine Envoys for nothing, the moment Yue Zhong had laid aim on him, he had

already sensed the danger and bellowed in rage.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed as he pulled the trigger.

With a flash of fire, a rocket exploded in the area.

Yue Zhong threw the rocket launcher aside, and his eyes flashed with a strange glint as he swapped out 2 .05 machine guns, and he began firing. Under that sudden burst of fire, 5 Kingdom of God soldiers had their heads exploded.

Tian Hao who was beside Yue Zhong also displayed his terrifying combat ability, as he wielded the 12.7mm heavy machine gun that Yue Zhong passed him, and fired wildly.

The heavy caliber bullets instantly pummeled the bodies of the ordinary soldiers, tearing them into pieces.

"You're all seeking death!" At this moment, Halumanda's enraged voice roared throughout the tunnel, and his body was instantly encased in metal. He became some sort of a 3m-tall iron-clad man. The bullets that rained on him ricocheted off, leaving only white marks.

Halumanda made use of his Second Order Metal Manipulation to cover his whole body, becoming an iron-clad soldier impervious to all guns and weapons. He then raised his right hand, firing numerous steel balls at Yue Zhong and Tian Hao like some machine gun.



# Chapter 516: Laser Gun Designs

---

Yue Zhong dodged to the side.

Tian Hao's speed wasn't slow but he was still struck by a few rounds, causing bloody holes in his body. He didn't possess any Type 2 Mutant Beast hide or similar defenses, hence his defenses were low. He could not defend against that strike.

As an Agility and Strength-type dual attribute Evolver, he was efficient in his assassinations. However, he was countered by Spirit-type experts with defenses.

Yue Zhong used a mirror to catch a glimpse of Halumanda, before a grenade appeared in his hands and he flung it over.

Halumanda's eyes flashed with a chilly light, as he fired more metal beads with his metal arm. The grenade instantly detonated in mid-air, and the ball bearings shot out in all directions, yet not injuring Halumanda in the slightest.

Yue Zhong swapped out a rocket, and leaped out, firing a single round at Halumanda.

"Fool! Rockets are ineffective against me!" Halumanda waved his hands as he grinned savagely, and countless metal ball bearings were fired at Yue Zhong again.

The rocket immediately exploded upon impact, once again not doing any damage to Halumanda.

"Strong!" Yue Zhong's heart turned cold and knew that he had come across a tough opponent.

The iron-clad Halumanda seemingly invulnerable, and the impact from any heavy caliber bullets only served to blast the armor, leaving behind only faint marks.

While the rockets could possibly deal damage, how would Halumanda allow them to reach him? Amongst all his enemies,

Halumanda was truly the strongest enemy that Yue Zhong had come across.

Yue Zhong's pupils narrowed and he sent out a blast of [Art of Fear].

"Spirit attacks? It's useless too! I'm also a Spirit-based Evolver, and such an attack is useless against me." When Halumanda received the attack, he shook it off and laughed coldly. He then charged towards Yue Zhong threateningly, intending to pummel him.

"Is that so? It's too bad my ability is the perfect counter to you! You can burn for me!" Yue Zhong looked Halumanda nearing him like a huge metal statue. His eyes flashed with a cold gloating look, and he waved his hands to activate his Devil Flame. An intense fiery tornado blew towards the iron-clad Halumanda.

If Halumanda came into direct contact with that fearsome Devil Flame, even if it could not melt his metal armor, it would cook him alive.

While the Devil Flame was not comparable to many other defensive skills, its destruction ability was truly terrifying.

"Flame Manipulation! Door of Steel!" When Halumanda saw the fiery tornado, his face turned pale and he quickly activated his Second Order Steel Manipulation skill again, grabbing in thin air, as a number of steel beams, iron sand, iron bars and doors flew from the tunnel, forming a huge door in front of him.

The flaming tornado was blocked by the Door of Steel, but due to the intense heat, the door began to melt, turning into a puddle of metal liquid.

Just as the door had finished melting, a new door appeared in its place to defend against that tornado of fire.

After the flaming tornado managed to melt through 4 such doors under Yue Zhong's control, it finally lost its steam.

"Fuck! I can't continue like this, otherwise, I'll suffer even if I defeated that bastard." Yue Zhong came to a judgment.

Halumanda was truly a terrifying opponent, as the Divine Envoy of Steel, with his steel defense, it was tough to deal with him.

Yue Zhong flipped his hand, and another rocket launcher appeared, as he fired a rocket at the door.

With a blast, the door of steel was instantly destroyed.

"What do we do? Divine Envoy?" One of the experts of the Kingdom of God immediately asked Halumanda. He could see that Yue Zhong was not weaker than their Divine Envoy, and was currently anxious.

Halumanda eyed Hu Han and ordered: "Hu Han! Bring your men and defend this location. If you're successful, when I gain control of the city, I will recommend for you to be the leader of this location. I'll hand Jin Sheng Cheng and the rest to you then."

Hu Han immediately looked at Halumanda with an expression of respect: "Yes! Divine Envoy, I'll definitely make sure no enemies of the Kingdom of God will pass through!"

Halumanda then turned around as he brought his men further into the underground city: "Very good. Let's go. We can talk more once I've gained control of the city."

When Halumanda and the rest left, Hu Han looked at their backs and spat on the ground, his eyes flashing with a ferocious glint: "Pei! You want to treat us like cannon fodder. You think we're fools? These damn foreigners, not a single one of them is worth shit."

Hong!!

Following the loud sound of an explosion, the last door was blasted apart, and Yue Zhong appeared like a specter.

When Hu Han saw Yue Zhong, he immediately knelt on the floor,

declaring loudly: "Sir! I'm Hu Han! I was one of the people in charge of the defenses of this underground city. I'm extremely familiar with the place. I'm willing to submit, let me be your subordinate."

Hu Han was willing to even sell himself out to the foreigners for the sake of revenge. He had long since abandoned all thoughts of pride, backbone, and shame. He just lived for revenge. He was also intelligent and knew he was definitely not Yue Zhong's match. Hence, he made the decision to bring his 200 men to submit.

Yue Zhong eyed him and ordered: "Fine! I'm Yue Zhong. From now on you're my subordinate, I appoint you to be the commanding officer of your troops, for now, take your men, and follow me in!"

Even Tian Hao would have no difficulty wiping out Hu Han and his motley crew, hence Yue Zhong wasn't afraid of any backstabbing. With someone like Hu Han who knew the way, he would be able to navigate the place easily.

"Yes, Boss Yue." Hu Han glanced at his men and roared: "Brothers, follow me!"

Yue Zhong did not stop as he continued to charge forth. However, in just a few steps, the once-open huge door was now closed, barring his way.

A screen suddenly lit up, with Jin Sheng Cheng on the screen admonishing Yue Zhong with a cold look: "Who are you? This is a secretive national base! It's not for someone like you. Get out! Otherwise, you'll be termed as a traitor to the government and the people!"

Yue Zhong eyed the screen frostily: "Open the door immediately. Otherwise, I'll raze your whole family to the ground when I break in!"

"You dare! You fucking traitor, you've let down the government,

you've let down the people...."

"You really bullshit a lot!" He pulled out his gun and blasted the screen to pieces.

"Hack the door down!" Yue Zhong handed his Black Tooth Blade to Tian Hao.

Tian Hao received the sword and with a loud roar of rage, he exerted his Strength that was 14 times that of a normal person and immediately sliced the door open.

Yue Zhong then charged through the door.

Just as he made it past the door into yet another tunnel, 5 Kingdom of God soldiers suddenly darted out.

They were about to make their move, when the Stinger in Yue Zhong's hand already fired 5 times in rapid succession, immediately blasting the heads of the soldiers apart.

Yue Zhong reached the end of the tunnel in one breath, and he was about to continue forward when his face fell, and he retreated backward hastily.

Hong! Hong!

The entire area had been rigged with 10 remote-controlled bombs, and the resulting explosion enveloped Yue Zhong. The soldiers of the Kingdom of God were truly elites and professionals, after all, possessing experience dealing with other experts. Such an explosion could easily dismember an Agility and Strength-type Evolver. Only those with decent protection or special defensive skills would be able to survive.

"Fuck! We're finished! Should we run?" Hu Han saw Yue Zhong being enveloped by the explosion, and he gulped, his expression ugly and his heart filled with regret and fear.

"Is he dead?" A few elite soldiers from the Kingdom of God looked at the direction of the explosion and wondered.

As the dust settled, Yue Zhong's white shield shone as he leaped out, charging towards the soldiers of the Kingdom of God with lightning-speed. As he slashed out with his blade, those soldiers were immediately sliced apart. They never stood a chance.

"He didn't die!"

"Be on guard!"

"Ah!"

Yue Zhong was truly unstoppable as he darted about, killing the soldiers from the Kingdom of God. No one could stop him, and everywhere he went, carnage ensued.

Any soldier at a distance could still try to fire their weapons to suppress him, but the moment he got close, no one was his match.

"Strong!! He's too scary!!" Hu Han saw Yue Zhong slaughtering the soldiers of the Kingdom of God like a tiger amongst lambs, and his heart was filled with excitement and a desire to do battle. He had some hope for his revenge.

Within a brightly lit room, Halumanda and 12 soldiers in silver eyed a middle-aged man who was extremely fat and had fat for brains.

"Laser gun designs! Hand them to me!" Halumanda looked at the pale white fat man and ordered.

This middle-aged man was precisely the leader of the underground city, Jin Sheng Cheng.

"Yes. These are the designs!" Jin Sheng Cheng handed the designs over with a toady look.

# Chapter 517: Burning Halumanda!

---

Halumanda held up the laser guns design and his eyes lit up in excitement, laughing wildly: "Good!! With this treasure, I'll definitely be able to raise my position amongst the Divine Envoys! Haha!"

Over at Europe, the laser gun had already been realized in their research labs, but due to various reasons, they had not been able to manufacture them. However, due to them already collected various materials, the moment they got their hands on the design, they would definitely be able to produce such a futuristic and technologically advanced weapon.

When the laser guns enter mass-scale production, the combat prowess of the Kingdom of God would increase by more than three times. This was the might of science and research. Not even the [Raven] combat uniform or any defenses from Type 2 Mutant Beasts would be able to defend against a strike from the laser guns.

Although Jin Sheng Cheng and his men had somehow managed to obtain the designs very early on, they didn't have the means to manufacture them. Even Yue Zhong would not have the means to do so.

Since the Kingdom of God possessed such a vast amount of resources, if Halumanda's position could rise, then his resources would naturally increase as well.

Just as Halumanda was laughing, a huge gold door was blasted open, as Yue Zhong strode in, and he saw the blueprints immediately.

"Those advanced designs must not land in those people from the Kingdom of God!" Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed. Such a technologically advanced design was scrap paper in the hands of ordinary people, but if the Kingdom of God obtained it, they would quickly become a terrifying force with no equal.

Yue Zhong sent a fistful of Devil Flame shooting over with a thought of his mind, intending to incinerate Halumanda.

"Kill him!" Halumanda's face fell and retreated backward. He quickly activated his Second Order Steel Manipulation again, and the surrounding walls, computers and all sorts of items crumpled unto themselves, becoming a wall of steel in front of him.

At the same time, some of the metal congealed into ball bearings and shot at Yue Zhong. It was as though there was a Gatling cannon firing at Yue Zhong, with countless bullets threatening to take his life.

Such a strike from Halumanda was extremely tyrannical, and not many Evolvers were able to deal with it. Since the attacks came from all sides, even Tian Hao who was Strength and Agility-based would be turned into a sieve if he were caught in it.

A strange white glow enveloped Halumanda, causing all his 6 attributes to receive a raise, and this was the skill as a paladin that he had obtained after reaching Level 30. It was known as Holy Light Protection. Since his 6 attributes received a raise, his combat strength increased by twice.

This was the strength of the Divine Envoys, every single one of them possessed the capability to destroy an elite troop. Because of this, the Kingdom of God had only sent only 100 special forces soldiers as well as Halumanda to take over a whole city of over 90,000 survivors.

The Devil Flame Yue Zhong sent out caused the doors of steel to melt one by one. Any ball bearing shot at him were blocked by the white light shield surrounding him. The noises of the metal bearings ricocheting off resounded constantly.

Yue Zhong eyed the puddle of metal and frowned: "This bastard is really tough! What a pity, my Devil Flame is not yet at Second Order, otherwise, it would be so much easier to melt the wall of steel."



Yue Zhong only had one Second Order skill: Summon Dark Skull. White Bones had an astonishing combat strength, but it was because Yue Zhong himself possessed such an incredible Second Order skill. While his Devil Flame had been enhanced to +4, compared to a Second Order skill, it was still weaker.

"I need to kill them all!" Yue Zhong's killing intent billowed out, and a nether hole appeared out of mid air, as White Bones stepped out and immediately, it slashed out at the wall of steel.

Following the sharp grating sound of metal striking metal, the huge wall was cleaved in two.

After splitting one steel wall, it was like an indomitable devil that continued to slash out, splitting the rest of the walls.

"Strong! Who is this guy, he can actually destroy my walls?!" Halumanda saw how easily White Bones was splitting apart the various steel walls, and his face fell. He then formed a suit of steel again, before charging at White Bones, intending to take it out first.

Each time Halumanda cast the suit of steel or the wall of steel, it would take a huge toll on his Stamina and Spirit. If it wasn't for the Holy Light Protection that raised his attributes, he would have no way of holding out for so long.

The stronger the skill, the greater the expenditure of Stamina and Spirit. Second Order skills were terrifying, but their consumption was likewise straining on the body. If he didn't take out Yue Zhong or White Bones fast enough, Halumanda's Stamina and Spirit would be depleted soon.

With the suit of steel around him, he weighed a total of 2 tons. With such a weight, even an expert with over 10 times the Endurance would not be able to withstand the weight. However, since the suit was formed from his usage of the skill, the weight was negligible on himself.

He continued moving forwards, charging like the wind towards White Bones, launching a fist with the force of Mt. Tai behind it.

Such a forceful punch carried over 2 tons behind it, even an elephant would be pummeled to death. The world's boxing champion would also explode from such a force.

White Bones raised its huge ax, blocking in front of it. At the same time, it shot out countless bone spikes from its body towards Halumanda.

Following some intense noises, the sharp bone spikes actually pierced through the suit of armor, but they were ultimately unable to penetrate all the way through.

Halumanda's punch caused White Bones' ax to immediately disintegrate, as White Bones itself was also sent flying into a wall. Many of its bones were broken and deformed. This fist from Halumanda was even more ferocious than most Strength-type, its might overbearing and without equal.

On the other side, Yue Zhong carried his Stinger, and fired 6 shots at an instant, as 6 of the soldiers from the Kingdom of God were killed, their heads exploding like watermelons.

Yue Zhong shot forward like an arrow, appearing in the midst of the remaining soldiers. His pupils narrowed as he activated his [Art of Fear], and a strong Spirit blast shot outwards, enveloping those soldiers. When assaulted by that intense Art of Fear, they either fainted directly or their bodies crumpled to the floor as they twitched.

The Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade in Yue Zhong's hands flashed, and he sliced the defenseless soldiers into multiple pieces.

Every single one of those elite soldiers was above Level 40 and had similar combat strength to Yue Zhong. However, because they were just ordinary Enhancers who were either Strength-based or Agility-based, and were more susceptible to Spirit-type attacks,

they had no means of defending against Yue Zhong's move.

"Fucking monkey! I want to turn you into minced meat!" Halumanda saw all the soldiers that had followed him being killed, and roared out in rage, sending a powerful fist viciously towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps, and he dodged towards the side in a flash, evading that strike that was sure to kill. At the same time, he congealed a Devil Flame Spear in his right hand, and he tossed it towards Halumanda's head.

"Door of Steel!" Halumanda immediately cast the skill with a thought, and a huge door of steel appeared in front of him, at the same time, the multiple steel lumps from behind him was absorbed into the suit around him, replenishing the consumption required of the door.

The Devil Flame Spear struck the door and instantly burnt a hole through as it continued to shoot towards Halumanda.

Halumanda cast the door of steel ability, again and again, forcefully blocking the Devil Flame Spear after it penetrated 7 of the doors.

"Go to hell!" Right as Halumanda thought that he had blocked the Devil Flame Spear, Yue Zhong appeared behind Halumanda like a ghost, waving his hand as he instantly cast a huge fiery tornado to envelop Halumanda in his suit of steel.

"Ah!!! Ah!!!!" Halumanda was trapped within the suit of armor and as he was being burnt, he began to scream out like a pig that was being slaughtered. The suit was able to withstand all sorts of strikes, but the fire was basically cooking him.

After screaming out, Halumanda was burnt black, and the suit that weighed over 2 tons crashed to the floor.

Yue Zhong sliced the suit open with his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade, retrieving the equipment as well as the laser gun design.

Jin Sheng Cheng and the rest of the leaders exchanged looks, as they sent two men to make a grab for the equipment dropped by the other Kingdom of God soldiers.

Only to see the flash of a blade, and the 2 of them had their arms cut.

"Ah!! It hurts!! It hurts!!" The 2 of them watched their dismembered hands and screamed out in horror.

At this time, Tian Hao walked in, his expression icy.

Jin Sheng Cheng saw Tian Hao and he revealed an expression of joy, speaking loudly: "It's you!! Tian Hao!! Good timing!! Catch this man, as long as you capture him, I'll tell you where your sister is!!"

## Chapter 518: Ruined!

---

Tian Hao's face flashed with a savage look, as he immediately slashed out, slicing Jin Sheng Cheng in two: "Jin Sheng Cheng! You beast, your whole family are beasts!! You toyed my sister to death, and still lied to me! Go to hell, scum!"

The 2 halves of Jin Sheng Cheng's face revealed a look of shock and fear, as blood sprayed out from his body, while his organs came spilling out. This leader who had control over the underground city, and had oppressed countless men and women, was killed just like that by Tian Hao.

"Don't kill us!! It was all done by Jin Sheng Cheng! It has nothing to do with us!"

"Tian Hao, you dared to kill him, are you crazy?"

Seeing Jin Sheng Cheng split in two, the faces of those leaders immediately turned ashen and began to either curse out at Tian Hao or plead for mercy.

Hu Han walked in, eyeing those leaders and laughed out coldly, "Tian Hao, these bunch of bastards are no good. Other than Zhang Cheng and Ma Xiao, the rest are all a bunch of garbage. Scums! Every one of them got together to toy with a single woman, torturing them to death."

As the saying went, whatever the person at the top indulged in, his subordinates would be more indulgent in them. The King of Chu had loved slim waists, thus many women in the palace actually starved to death. Whatever the leader was like, the subordinates would be much worse. Jin Sheng Cheng was a pervert that loved to play and torture women, and thus, his subordinates were mostly like that as well. The tradition of the Chinese was always to serve the leader, and to be responsible for many things that he did. Other than the 2 singled out by Hu Han, the rest were always in on the activities that Jin Sheng Cheng

engaged in.

"I'll kill the whole lot of you assholes!" The moment he thought how his sister had been humiliated and raped by these bunch of fogeys, his eyes flashed with a savage glint, and he unleashed a few wild slashes onto the men.

The various leaders of the underground city were killed by Tian Hao, as blood and corpses littered the entire place.

The remaining Zhang Cheng and Ma Xiao retreated to a corner, and they trembled as they watched the enraged Tian Hao going on a rampage.

Yue Zhong eyed Tian Hao, whose eyes had gone bloodshot from his murderous rampage, and he barked coldly, "Enough! Stop! You've had your revenge, from now on, your life is mine!"

"Yes!" The moment he was barked at, Tian Hao regained his rationale and stood quietly behind Yue Zhong. His eyes regained a sort of dead look. He had not much to look forward to anymore. There was nothing left worth living for, and he was now fulfilling his promise.

"Go get the security feed up for me!" Yue Zhong eyed Hu Han and ordered.

"Yes! Boss Yue!" Hu Han replied respectfully, and turned to give an order to his men, "Go get the feed for Boss Yue."

A few men immediately brought in the security monitors.

Only to see that outside of Yang County, the Thousand Hero Alliance had already vanquished the forces of the Snow Palace, and the Greater China Alliance. The female warriors of the Snow Palace, as well as the soldiers from the Greater China Alliance, were all running, and the death toll was still climbing.

In the skies, 7 of the 12 Eurocopters had been destroyed, leaving 5. Those 5 Eurocopters had terrifying might, but some of the higher level Enhancers had means to destroy them.

Yue Zhong could also transform his Devil Flame into a Devil Flame Spear to immediately destroy such a helicopter. Of course, it would require Stamina and Spirit. Without appropriate weapons, it was tough to deal with such airborne advanced weaponry.

Yue Zhong immediately ordered, "Get me means to contact Gui Ning City."

There were various radio communications within this underground city.

"Yes!" Hu Han immediately set off to relay the order.

The communication channel was quickly established, and Yue Zhong immediately gave an order, "This is Yue Zhong! My current position is in Yang County. My commands are to deploy the 1st Armored Battalion, the 2nd Battalion, and the 3rd Battalion to move out now! Provide assistance over at Yang County. Hu Yi is to take command of the operation!"

"Yes! Leader!" From the other side, Wei Ning Guo's voice sounded.

Wei Ning Guo was extremely loyal to Yue Zhong, and while his strength was average, he had the experience and was loyal. Hence when Yue Zhong left, he had placed Wei Ning Guo in charge.

Yue Zhong then turned to Tian Hao and Hu Han, ordering, "Tian Hao! Work together with Hu Han to control this underground city. Hu Han, go transport the 12 helicopters outside back in. Capture the pilots as well."

Hu Han had just defected to him, and Yue Zhong couldn't afford to place his trust in him yet. He needed to assign Wei Ning Guo beside this Hu Han before he could rest his mind.

"Yes!" Hu Han and Tian Hao replied with respect.

Hu Han saw how easily Yue Zhong had ordered the deployment of a huge army, and the little strange hopes he had were dashed. He dared not entertain any nonsensical thoughts.

Yue Zhong was terrifyingly strong, and once his army was here, if Hu Han dared to mobilize his troops to rebel, they would only face death. From the various scenes that he witnessed today, he knew Yue Zhong was not some merciful leader. If he really dared to rebel, he would suffer terribly.

"Tian Hao, go send someone to get Xue Ning and the rest, and bring them over here."

Since the Thousand Hero Alliance had done in the Greater China Alliance and the Snow Palace, they would definitely storm through Yang County, and it meant that the buildings at the surface weren't safe anymore.

Tian Hao, "Yes!"

After making his preparations, Yue Zhong retrieved his Swift Shadow Bike, before he hopped on it and charged out. Since the situation was grim, he wanted to quickly take care of the Eurocopters in the sky.

The Eurocopters possessed a terrifying presence on the battlefield, exceeding even those experts above Level 60.

Yue Zhong had to destroy them, otherwise, his elite troops would suffer a huge loss.

Yue Zhong charged out the long tunnels of the underground city, only to discover that the whole Yang County was in chaos. A large number of rioters were engaging in arson, killing and raping. It was like a scene straight out of hell.

Regardless of the place or time, as long as there was unrest, there would be such happenings. It was because of this that governments before the apocalypse would emphasize on stability and security.

Yue Zhong had seen such chaos each time an establishment was facing a critical situation. At this time, Yue Zhong didn't have his troops and it was hard to deal with such a situation on his own.

"Get to the underground city beneath the Green Garden!! Rioters



will be put to death!!" Yue Zhong readied his .05 machine guns and killed some of the outlaws as he ran about shouting.

Hearing his voice, the survivors who were running around cluelessly began to make their way towards the Green Garden, forming a steady stream of humans.

There were 20,000 survivors in Yang County and 90,000 survivors in the underground city. In truth, as the underground city was vast, it could accommodate at least 200,000 people. However, in order to ensure the resources and living conditions, and with the requirement of Yang County still running to provide the support for the underground city, not every survivor had the qualifications to live in the underground city.

Yue Zhong had just reached the entrance of Yang County when he saw countless soldiers running towards him, their guns long abandoned.

Over a thousand scattered soldiers squeezed through the entrance, trampling over one another. In order to have a shot at survival, many even chose to open fire on their own comrades.

"Fuck off! Fuck off!! Don't block your father's way, otherwise, I'll execute you!" A commander was leading 20 other soldiers to run towards Yue Zhong, and he bellowed loudly, raising his gun at the same time.

Yue Zhong immediately shot forward, slapping his gun away, and using his own Stinger to point at the commander's head. He spoke coldly, "I'm Yue Zhong, you are my captive now, report your name, soldier. Otherwise, I'll execute you directly."

The commander broke out in cold sweat and replied, "I'm called Ou Chang Jiang, the captain of the 3rd Battalion, 2nd Company of the Greater China Alliance forces. I'm willing to surrender!!"

Ou Chang Jing wasn't some stubborn mule and chose to surrender to preserve his life. He was a man who had experienced

much, and he could tell Yue Zhong's strength wasn't something that he could handle.

Yue Zhong ordered solemnly, "Take your men and go collect all the scattered troops! Execute those who resist!"

"Yes!!" Under Yue Zhong's orders, Ou Chang Jiang decided to toughen his skin and headed off in the directions of the soldiers.

At this moment, the soldiers were like a bunch of dragons without a leader. The moment Ou Chang Jiang came over to command them, they began to settle down.

"The helicopters are here!!" A sudden shout of fear resounded, and the people gathered at the entrance were plunged into chaos. For the sake of survival, many of the soldiers began to use all sorts of means to attack their former comrades.

"Go to hell you monkeys!!" An assault helicopter piloted by a Kingdom of God soldier eyed the soldiers at the entrance of the city, and a savage glint flashed in his eyes as he began to pull the trigger.

A line of fire sprayed out from the machine guns by the sides of the Eurocopter, killing many of the soldiers gathered at the entrance. They fell like dumplings into the moat.

"Hahahaha!!" The pilot watched the scattered soldiers being killed and laughed sadistically.

War could turn a person like that.

At this time, Yue Zhong leaped up the wall and formed a Devil Flame Spear before throwing with all his strength. It turned into a flash of light and pierced through the Eurocopter before exploding. The Eurocopter combusted in a ball of flames, killing the 2 pilots within.

The Eurocopter started to descend in a ball of flame, before crashing explosively on the ground.

# Chapter 519: Chaotic Battle!

---

"Strong!!" Seeing how easily Yue Zhong had destroyed the assault helicopter in the air, every single soldier from the Greater China Alliance on the site had this thought on their mind. Many of the scattered soldiers began to swarm towards his location. After all, during times of uncertainty, only by gathering around someone strong, would they have a sense of security.

All of a sudden, a huge ice pick shot from some location below, piercing another helicopter. The extreme freezing temperature caused the pilots to be frozen rock solid.

Without anyone to control, the helicopter began to descend and crash into the ground, turning into scrap metal.

A sniper bullet packed with the Enhanced Bullet skill suddenly pierced the hull of one more helicopter, and the resulting explosion immediately consumed the pilots, as the flaming ball also plunged quickly towards the ground.

In a matter of minutes, 3 helicopters were struck down. It was unclear as to the orders that the remaining helicopters received, but they quickly turned and fled the battlefield.

These 12 Eurocopters had devastated the Snow Palace and the Greater China Alliance, at the same time, they killed many Enhancers and experts. However, their own expenditure was high. The moment they received the orders to withdraw, the remaining 2 Eurocopters turned and left without delay.

Yue Zhong eyed the leaving helicopters and heaved a sigh of relief. He had expended a huge amount of Stamina and Spirit in the underground city, if he were to continue using his skills without restraint, he would likely fall on the battlefield.

Suddenly, a deadly sense of crisis welled up in his mind. He activated his Shadow Steps and leaped a huge distance away.

Hong! Hong!

Following 2 earthshaking sounds of explosions caused by rockets, the area Yue Zhong was in was blasted, dust covering the area.

"No!! Would he fall just like that?!"

"He can't just die like that right?"

Ou Chang Jiang and the rest of the soldiers that had submitted to Yue Zhong looked towards the direction in nervousness, their gazes filled with despair and complicated looks. No one would be able to survive such a blast, even for high-level experts.

As the dust cleared, there was a dim white light that was slightly visible. Yue Zhong retracted it and jumped out from the blast zone.

"Leader is invincible!!"

"Long live Boss Yue!!"

Seeing him jump out from the debris unharmed, all the soldiers roared out in triumph. To them, someone who could escape unscathed from such an explosion was basically invincible. Such a person was their leader, and it boosted their morale a lot.

"That was close!! If I didn't have the White Light Shield, I would have been heavily injured!" He leaped out and felt a sense of terror at the close shave he had. Without the protection, he would definitely not have escaped unscathed. Even though he had leaped to the side when he first felt the danger, the area of impact had been huge. Even he had been unable to get out of the impact zone in time with his speed.

With his single strike that destroyed the fearsome assault helicopter, as well as having escaped from the terrifying blast, Yue Zhong became like an invincible existence in the hearts of the soldiers. Many were attracted and moved by his charisma, and he began to collect the scattered soldiers easily.

However, the scattered soldiers were after all beaten before. Of

the 300 soldiers, they had about a 100 rifles and 2,000 rounds of ammunition. At the same time, their morale was low.

"Ou Chang Jiang. Take your men and continue to gather the soldiers! I'll go destroy the Thousand Hero Alliance's artillery." Yue Zhong barked out an order.

The heavy artillery of the Thousand Hero Alliance was too much of a threat to Yang County. With the bombardment, it would be like shattering the earth, and everything in the area of impact would be destroyed.

The soldiers of the Greater China Alliance were not elite soldiers comparable to those soldiers of the past during the founding eras. They were just a bunch of people that had guns. If he allowed the Thousand Hero Alliance to continue their onslaught, the low morale of the soldiers would most likely collapse.

Ou Chang Jiang looked at Yue Zhong and answered with a hot-blooded shout: "Yes Sir! Leader! I swear to defend this place, and I promise you as long as I'm alive, the city will stand!"

Ou Chang Jiang's desire to become strong was reignited when he saw Yue Zhong's performance. He used to be ambitious and had been an officer before the apocalypse. However, his superior had been frightened off by the Eurocopters and fled. He could only bring his men and brothers to escape as well. Following Yue Zhong, he seemed to have regained his courage and hot-bloodedness.

China had never lacked strong-willed and ambitious soldiers, but what was lacking was the presence of a strong and capable leader. At the start of each era or dynasty, when the leaders were not greedy, nor did they fear death, the soldiers were the toughest and elite of their generation. Even during times of war where they were lacking in weapons or advanced equipment, the soldiers of China relied on their willpower and spirit to overcome all sorts of obstacles, carving a position for themselves.

Ou Chang Jiang proceeded to gather the soldiers, directing them to various strategic locations, reclaiming their defenses and transport channels.

Yue Zhong leaped off the city wall, charging towards the artillery of the Thousand Hero Alliance with White Bones.

By now, most of the Greater China Alliance troops were scattered, and a battalion of the Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers were charging at them, capturing them or executing them.

"Ah! There're still people like that!" What Yue Zhong was looking at was a company of soldiers fighting it out with the Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers, impeding their advance.

The company was down to half their original numbers, but they were extremely valiant, not fearing death. Even the Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers seemed to be suffering more than them.

It was precisely because of this group of elites, that the soldiers of the Greater China Alliance dared go out to fight. However, most of the remaining soldiers were too weak, and the assault helicopters had been too fearsome, causing their collapse.

"This is an elite squad! They could be compared to those under me as well. If I can convince them, I would gain a powerful team." Yue Zhong eyed them with interest and decided to make his way over.

Although this company had been battered, their backbones and willpower were still strong, as long as new recruits were injected into their team, and after some time of training, coupled with a few more battles, Yue Zhong would then obtain another elite company of soldiers, or maybe even an entire battalion.

One of the burly soldiers who had one of his ears blown off saw Yue Zhong and hollered in alarm: "Fuck! Another one! Brothers, time to kill those bastards that collude with the foreigners!!"

A dense barrage of bullets rained towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong evaded the bullets and called out: "Stop shooting! I'm your ally, Yue Zhong. I'm on my way to destroy the artillery of the Thousand Hero Alliance. You guys can go and confirm with Ou Chang Jiang. I hope that we can continue to fight side by side after today."

After that, Yue Zhong turned towards the direction of the Thousand Hero Alliance and charged over. The elite troops were too wary, and he had no way of convincing them in a short time. He would rather deal with the Thousand Hero Alliance first before continuing their discussion.

One of the commanders looked at Yue Zhong's back and frowned, an uneasy feeling in his heart: "Yue Zhong? The leader of Gui Ning City, Yue Zhong? What is he doing here?"

When Yue Zhong was on his way, a number of Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers made their way to attack him.

Shooting forwards like an arrow, Yue Zhong suddenly appeared among the soldiers and slashed out coolly with his sword, and the soldiers were all dismembered.

Yue Zhong and White Bones charged into the territory of the Thousand Hero Alliance, slaughtering like death gods. Everywhere they went, there would be blood and carnage, and no one could withstand an attack from them.

Within 10 minutes, over a 100 Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers had died at their hands, and the remaining soldiers decided to run for their lives.

When the other soldiers saw them from afar, their hearts were filled with dread and didn't dare launch an assault for fear of Yue Zhong retaliating and killing them.

Yue Zhong and White Bones quickly slaughtered their way through the forces of the Thousand Hero Alliance and made their way to the artillery.

When Yue Zhong came to the grounds, he noticed that the entire area was deathly quiet, and the temperature had plunged. He noticed an incredibly beautiful and attractive woman with a sexy figure standing by herself. This was, of course, Shangguan Bing Xue.

"Who's that? What a beautiful woman!" When Yue Zhong saw her, his eyes lit up. Just based on her demeanor and figure, she was definitely the most beautiful woman he had come across.

Chen Yao, Ji Qing Wu, Guo Yu, Zhuo Ya Tong, Xin Jia Rou, Ning Yu Xin and the rest had their own charms and exquisite looks that could topple countries, but even then, they could not be compared with this icy beauty in front of him. Of course, it was just a slight disparity in comparison, they were still beautiful. However, this lady in front of him was truly exceptional.

Amidst the area, all the artillery soldiers had been frozen rock solid, and the 2 self-propelled rocket launchers had become 2 huge ice lumps. Only Shangguan Bing Xue stood by herself among the icy area and ice sculptures like a fairy.

She had also seen Yue Zhong and White Bones coming over, and her eyes flashed with an icy killing intent, as her gaze landed on Yue Zhong.



# Chapter 520: The Situation Is Reversed!

---

Both parties exchanged glances before Shangguan Bing Xue turned to leave for the distance. Her condition wasn't good, having been through an intense bout of battles, and she had no confidence in dealing with Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong saw that Shangguan Bing Xue was retreating, and he did not chase after her, instead, turning to face the incoming troop of soldiers from the Thousand Hero Alliance.

"Kill him!!" One captain saw Yue Zhong and shouted loudly.

Countless bullets flew towards Yue Zhong and White Bones.

Yue Zhong exploded out with all his speed, turning into a flash. Ordinary people could not catch up with his movements. On the other side, White Bones was almost impervious to all sorts of attacks from the guns and bullets. Both of them charged into the midst of the elites of the Thousand Hero Alliance, and their blades flashed, as well as bone spikes piercing, causing large amount of blood to be splattered everywhere. Most of the soldiers were taken down almost instantly.

"Monster!! Monster!! Don't kill me! I don't want to die!!"

"Don't kill me! Don't kill me!"

Within 10 minutes, the half of the squad of elites were already killed, causing the rest to break down, and they tried to run with their lives.

Facing Yue Zhong and White Bones who were seemingly unkillable existences, even elite soldiers would crumble.

By this time, the bulk of the forces of the Thousand Hero Alliance were trying to chase down the Greater China Alliance and Snow Palace soldiers, hence, they could only afford to send one company after another towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had embarked on a killing spree and his eyes were red, giving him a look of a bloodthirsty devil. Each time he swung his blade, a number of soldiers would fall. The carnage unleashed by him and White Bones was devastating. As each company came up only to be sent to heaven, the entire battlefield was soon littered with the corpses of the soldiers of the Thousand Hero Alliance.

"Strong!! How come there's such a crazy person?" One of the elite captains of the Greater China Alliance, the one with only one ear left, Yun Zi Ge, looked at the scene and exclaimed in shock.

Yun Zi Ge saw how easily Yue Zhong was destroying the forces of the Thousand Hero Alliances and he hollered: "Charge!! Charge!! Follow me and charge!!"

The elite squad from the Greater China Alliance led by Yun Zi Ge immediately launched into an assault towards the Thousand Hero Alliance, causing some of the troops to immediately throw down their weapons and run.

The Thousand Hero Alliance was after all a small time force, and were just made up of civilians previously. There were indeed soldiers who could fight among the troops, but most of them were made up of an inexperienced bunch.

By now, the Thousand Hero Alliance found its external forces being exterminated one after the other, and those who could run had run off. Their morale was reaching an all-time low, and many of the backup troops were being slaughtered by Yue Zhong and White Bones, causing the outlook to be bleak.

Yun Zi Ge took the opportunity to begin battering on the soldiers.

As for the female warriors of the Snow Palace, there were only a few hundred left that had gathered together after a large number of their comrades had been killed and captured. They saw the chance as well and begin to unleash their retaliation fiercely.

There was also a mysterious sniper that was picking off the experts of the Thousand Hero Alliance from somewhere without stopping, blasting their heads.

With the counter-attack on so many fronts, the Thousand Hero Alliance was truly beginning to suffer, and most of the soldiers either ran or surrendered. Some chose to fight to the death, but couldn't do much before they died. The huge faction was beginning to crumble.

"How did it become like this? How?!" Within a command center, Zhu Xiong Ba watched his troops collapsing, and his face turned pale, as he gritted his teeth and bellowed in anger.

He roared out: "Shit! Where's the reinforcement from the Kingdom of God? Where are the troops they promised?! Why aren't they here?! A bunch of bastards that can't be trusted!!"

Zhu Xiong Ba did not know that the troops he was awaiting had already been destroyed by Yue Zhong, and the underground city had long since fallen into Yue Zhong's hands.

"Boss! What do we do now?" One of his trusted aides came over to ask Zhu Xiong Ba carefully.

Zhu Xiong Ba looked at his crumbling troops and he knew that the situation had already spiraled out of control. He made his decision: "Retreat!! Now that it's unfavorable, we have to retreat now!! Convey my orders. Everyone is to retreat!!"

Soon, Zhu Xiong Ba led 200 experts as they left the place, making their way towards their old location. As long as his core troops and experts were with him, he could establish another faction again.

It was incredibly tough to obtain an entire regiment of 10,000 experts. However, it was relatively easy to pull together a 10,000-strong force. It was a common tactic used by many to expand their might, however, such a method would usually result in a motley crew, and they could at most be used to intimidate The moment

they lost, they would collapse.

After Zhu Xiong Ba gave the order, most of the soldiers of the Thousand Hero Alliance began to throw down their weapons and surrendered. A large number were unwilling to surrender to the Snow Palace, as no men wanted to become slaves to the Snow Palace. This was the disadvantage of having a widely-known discriminatory policy.

Ou Chang Jiang brought his men to assist Yue Zhong in capturing the surrendering troops, and pretty soon, there were 3 large factions outside of Yang County.

Yun Zi Ge and his forces managed to gather over 300 soldiers, and capturing 1,000 soldiers of the Thousand Hero Alliance. Yue Zhong gathered 700-over men, while his captives numbered the highest at 5,000-plus. Amongst his captives, there were Thousand Hero Alliance soldiers as well as Snow Palace male survivors. Some were even the female warriors of the Snow Palace. Shangguan Bing Xue had rescued over 500 female Snow Palace soldiers, and captured 200 male survivors.

Yue Zhong looked over at Yun Zi Ge and beckoned over: "Yun Zi Ge, become my subordinate, and work for me!"

Yun Zi Ge was a hardy general that could fight, and he had a troop of elites under him. If they were absorbed into Yue Zhong's forces, Yue Zhong could gain another capable general.

Yun Zi Ge hesitated before asking: "Yue Zhong! If I follow you, what will become of my brothers?"

Yue Zhong chuckled and promised: "As long as you choose to follow me, your brothers are still considered your troops. You can immediately be drafted as a battalion of your own, and you'll be the commander."

Yun Zi Ge's eyes flashed with a look of joy and he saluted: "Many thanks, Leader! I'm willing to serve!"

Gui Ning City's Tyrant Yue Zhong, this name was widely known amongst the people of the Greater China Alliance. Some spoke well of him, others viewed him negatively, but almost everyone could agree that Yue Zhong was truly extremely capable and a charismatic leader.

Gui Ning City had already established some form of order, and the people within had resumed their lives similar to prior to the apocalypse. Compared to before the apocalypse, their quality of life might not be as good, but compared to Yang County, life in Gui Ning City was almost heaven.

Over at Yang County, the survivors were like dogs, and the ones on top lived at the expense of the ones below. For just one bread, women were willing to sell their bodies. For the sake of a packet of noodles, even friends could attack one another.

In the underground city, there were over a few ten thousands of tonnes of food, however, Jin Sheng Cheng and the rest hoarded them like they were their own possessions, and were not willing to share them with the other survivors. That was why there was a famine.

In this apocalypse, other than facing zombies, Mutant Beasts and the harsh weather conditions, a terrifying enemy was the shortage of food. As no food could be grown in the current conditions, it resulted in an anxiety in almost all the leaders of their own factions.

Yue Zhong could relax only because he obtained the treasure of the grain tree. If he didn't have it, he would also be constantly worried about the food problem.

Shangguan Bing Xue looked at Yue Zhong and spoke coldly: "Hand over my Snow Palace people, I'll leave immediately."

Yue Zhong replied directly: "Not an issue, but I want all the men from your Snow Palace."

There was no use for the female soldiers because they wouldn't serve him wholeheartedly.

"Fine!" Shangguan Bing Xue replied coldly, in her eyes, a single woman was more important than 10 men.

"Release them!"

After they exchanged their captives, under the command of Shangguan Bing Xue, the Snow Palace forces quickly left. They had no more left in them to continue the assault on Yang County, and there would only be deaths if they insisted on continuing.

Yue Zhong quickly returned to Yang County to establish some form of order.

With the gathered troops, Yue Zhong managed to bring the chaos and confusion under control, at the same time, under his orders, Yang County regained its stability. This was his first step and assuming control over this place with 110,000 survivors.

"Leader! The 1st Armored Battalion reports!" 2 hours later, Hu Yi came up, his fierce aura mixed with some military bearing radiated out as he stepped forward to salute Yue Zhong.

After 2 months of tough training, this brother of Yue Zhong, Hu Yi, had finally undergone some change, the hoodlum in him being washed away. He was now an incredibly valiant and capable commander.

A number of tanks, IFVs and self-propelling rocket launchers, cannons and trucks rolled into Yang County. The fleet of advanced weaponry caused the survivors to stare in shock, their mouths agape.

When Ou Chang Jiang saw the fleet rolling into Yang County, his expression was one of shock: "What strength!! Such advanced equipment. Just this one battalion is enough to wipe out the Greater China Alliance! Fortunately, I submitted early!"

Hu Yi's armored battalion had truly transformed. Counting just

the tanks, there were 24 of them. Such an armored battalion was truly terrifying, almost invincible. If the forces of the Greater China Alliance were to clash with Yue Zhong, just this armored battalion alone was enough to cause them to crumble almost instantly.

# Chapter 521: Fleeing From Might!

---

Yun Zi Ge looked at the armored battalion and their equipment, his eyes filled with envy and passion: "Their equipment is really top-notch! If only my troops have the same equipment!"

Decent equipment could alleviate the strength of an entire troop. It was just like how a group of soldiers wielding knives and bats would never be able to best a troop with planes and cannons.

Xue Ning looked at the valiant armored battalion and could not help but sigh with praise: "So powerful! Is this your army? Boss Yue, you truly are awesome!"

The 1st Battalion of soldiers were Yue Zhong's blade and trump card, many of them being Enhancers above Level 20. Any one such warrior could easily become the trump card of a small time faction in any of the surrounding areas, and any one of them could easily raze a faction to the ground.

Yue Zhong chuckled and eyed Hu Yi with a look of satisfaction: "Does your 1st Battalion have the energy to fight?"

Hu Yi immediately replied loudly: "Yes! The 1st Battalion will definitely carry out Leader's orders, to wipe out the enemy!"

"Good!" Yue Zhong revealed a slight smile, before calling for Liu Xiao Cha and asked: "What's the weather like for today and tomorrow?"

The weather was a critical factor in any operations now, if there was an unexpected snowstorm, the entire troop could be eradicated. Yue Zhong had just suffered one such blow recently, and since he had the means of predicting the weather, he wanted to be sure.

Liu Xiao Cha squinted her eyes towards the skies and activated her skill, before replying swiftly: "The skies will be clear for the next 24 hours."



Yue Zhong then turned to Hu Yi and ordered: "Good! Convey my orders! The 1st Battalion is to launch an assault on the base of the Thousand Hero Alliance at Lao Chao Ji County!"

By now, the Thousand Hero Alliance had just been defeated and were at their weakest. Hu Yi's armored battalion had also made its appearance and was absolutely capable of taking them down.

"Yes! We will fulfill your commands!" Hu Yi saluted Yue Zhong before turning around and heading off with excitement and burning emotions. He wanted to establish the might of the armored forces, and to show that he was not just Yue Zhong's close brother, but was also a capable leader and commander! Only by earning enough merit, then people will stop talking behind his back.

Furthermore, it was the crumbling of the previous society norms and laws, and where new factions were coming to power. If he continued to amass military credit, Hu Yi would be able to help bring Yue Zhong's faction up another notch.

Zhu Xiong Ba led his men all the way back to Lao Chao Ji County, before they heaved a sigh of relief.

When they returned to the county, Zhu Xiong Ba immediately returned to his villa, and grabbed a woman, as he began to pound her violently, venting his frustrations and dissatisfaction from his failure.

"Boss!! Not good!! Yue Zhong had sent his troops over!!" Just as Zhu Xiong Ba was in the middle of violating the woman, one of his trusted aides rushed into his house and shouted out in dismay.

Zhu Xiong Ba threw the woman one side, and he stood up, his face in disbelief: "What? Yue Zhong is on his way here? How is this possible? Even he would have to take a few days to gather his forces. How is he so fast?"

The face of the trusted aide was extremely pale, as he stammered:

"It's true!! Many tanks!! So many cannons!!"

"Useless trash!!" Zhu Xiong Ba roared out angrily and donned on some clothes before he charged out.

Zhu Xiong Ba quickly came to a high ground, where the various officials were gathered. Many of them were currently gazing out into the distance, their faces pale white with fright.

"Give it to me!" Zhu Xiong Ba felt a bad feeling and grabbed the binoculars from his subordinate, raising it to look at the distance.

He discovered many tanks rolling towards their location in a formation, and this armored division was something the Thousand Hero Alliance would not be able to fight even at its best conditions, not to mention when they had just suffered a terrible loss earlier. Their morale was low, and they even lost many soldiers.

Zhu Xiong Ba eyed the fleet of metal beats and gritted his teeth, spitting out with an ashen expression: "Fucking bastard! It's Yue Zhong! It's that tyrant!!"

Within this region, it was only possible for Yue Zhong to possess such might. Only he could deploy such an arsenal at short notice.

The rest of the smaller factions around would count themselves lucky if they even had an IFV. Even if they had tanks, many of them lacked the manpower to operate them.

One of the officials asked with a terrified expression: "What do we do, Boss?"

Zhu Xiong Ba's expression was unsightly: "What else can we do? Hurry and escape! Bring the men and leave immediately! We have to forgo this place!! Let's go get another location."

Abandoning this location which he painstakingly built up himself, was a huge blow to Zhu Xiong Ba. However, he had no choice. His men were not a match for Hu Yi's elite armored battalion, and the difference in strength between both sides was as clear as heaven and earth.

One of the higher officials hesitated before suggesting: "Boss! Why don't we surrender to Yue Zhong? Based on our strength, he would definitely not mistreat us!"

Many of them were stirred when they heard that If they had to leave Old Chao Ji County, they would have to lead uncertain lives again. Every day would be a struggle to search for food, and they would also have to face zombies and Mutant Beasts as well. They wanted secure and comfortable lives.

"You want to betray me? You can go to hell!!" Zhu Xiong Ba's eyes flashed with a vicious light and he slashed out with his blade, chopping the miserable official in two. Fresh blood splattered everywhere, including on Zhu Xiong Ba, giving him a devil-like appearance.

Zhu Xiong Ba stared coldly at the rest of his subordinates: "Yue Zhong is not Buddha. He's well known to be a tyrant. For the sake of controlling this county, he would definitely wipe you guys out. Furthermore, none of you are innocent! All of you have the blood of countless lives on your hands. Even if you submit to him, he will banish you guys to the Scum Battalion! Come with me!! Leave this place, and we have the chance to start over somewhere else! In the future, we'll fight back and reclaim what belongs to us!"

"Yes! Boss! We'll come with you!"

"I'll come with you!"

Under Zhu Xiong Ba's threats, the rest of the officials cried out, although somewhat unwillingly.

"Let's go!" Zhu Xiong Ba did not waste his breath and immediately brought his men out of the county.

"What? Zhu Xiong Ba fled? Damn bastard, what a coward!" Hu Yi wanted to engage in a hearty battle, and when he received this news, he felt a little depressed and disappointed.

One of the intelligence officers asked: "Commander, do we chase

after them?"

Hu Yi shook his head: "No! A dog will jump over a wall when cornered. Their strength is not considered weak. They have a few high-level Evolvers, if we sent too little troops, they might retaliate. If we send more, they can't chase up as well. Our current mission is to secure and control Ji County."

Hu Yi wanted very much to chase after the remnants of Zhu Xiong Ba's forces, but he knew clearly how hard it was to deal with high-level Evolvers. In comparison, Yue Zhong's orders of controlling the town were more important.

Once they lost this Ji County, Zhu Xiong Ba and the rest would find it hard to rise again.

When Hu Yi's armored battalion entered Ji County, they immediately suppressed the outlaws who had made use of the opportunity to engage in troublemaking. They also brought the situation under control.

They were followed by the 2nd and 3rd Battalion that were dispatched from Yang County as well, and like this, Yang County, and Ji County both came under Yue Zhong's control.

After gaining these two counties, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief and came to a jail cell.

"Leader!" One of the interrogators called Li Cong immediately saluted when he saw Yue Zhong.

"Have they said anything?" Yue Zhong asked Li Cong.

Li Cong handed a document to Yue Zhong: "They've revealed plenty! These are the details they've spat out."

Yue Zhong opened the document and took a careful look.

The elite troops of the Kingdom of God were split into many layers. The soldiers in black uniforms were the lowest ranks. As for the ones in silver, they were called Adjudicators, every one of them

was Enhancers of at least Level 20 and above. The next ranking was a force of Judges, and these were Enhancers of Level 30 and above. Beyond that, they had the Envoys-in-waiting. These Envoys-in-waiting, or Secondary Envoys, must be Evolvers. At the same time, they had to be at least Level 40. If either of these 2 conditions was not met, then there was no way to rise to that rank. Above the Secondary Envoys were the Divine Envoys. And the highest ranks were the 12 Apostles secondary only to God.

The 12 futuristics helicopters were called Thunder Fighters and were the latest helicopters manufactured by the Kingdom of God. They used technology only available after the onset of the apocalypse. Their endurance, combat strength, weight, and defenses were all three times that of a Eurocopter. After initial tests, they found out that even 14.5mm bullets could not penetrate the hull of these helicopters, and only 20mm cannons could possibly cause a dent in the armor. There was no way they could explode, though.

With these Thunder Fighters as their edge, they were swiftly replacing their Eurocopters. However, the current mode of transport and aerial combat was still the Eurocopter. This was because they were available from even before the apocalypse. As for the new Thunder Fighters, there was a huge requirement of manpower and resources.

The Thunder Fighters were only used by those Divine Envoys or Apostles. They were specialized for all sorts of combat, and could easily annihilate a small faction just to obtain their technology or blueprints.

When Yue Zhong read up to here, his heart became heavy. The apocalypse had only begun for a year, yet the Kingdom of God had already reached the point of developing their own advanced technology, causing a huge gap between others and themselves. If they continued to develop like this, their technologies would far surpass any other powers, and they could easily dominate the

entire globe.

TN:

Kingdom of God forces

Level 20 - Adjudicators

Level 30 - Judges

Level 40 & Evolvers - Secondary Envoys

Level ??? - Divine Envoys (36 of them, now 35 cause too bad Yue Zhong killed one)

Level ??? - Apostles (12 of them)

# Chapter 522: Opportunity!

---

"The capitals!! If only I can get them under my control." Yue Zhong sighed in his heart with some bitterness.

There were 2 blueprints in Yue Zhong's hands, one was the Nucleus Energy Converter Diagram, the other the Laser Gun Design. If he could start manufacturing the items from these 2 blueprints, the might of his factions would grow by leaps and bounds.

However, the technology over at Guang Xi region was seriously lacking. It could not match with the capitals, and even if he wanted to get started on the manufacturing of the items, he could not.

Based on the current rate of advance of technology, it would take at least another 15 years for there to be the slightest hope of developing the laser guns.

However, after destroying the Greater China Alliance and Thousand Hero Alliance, Yue Zhong had gained some decent rewards. Outside of the 170,000 survivors, he had gained a powerful underground city with its own defense systems both under and above ground.

The underground city was spacious, with various tunnels, and it could easily accommodate 300,000 survivors. There were even small factories inside and given enough manpower and materials, they could produce 80,000 rounds of ammunition each month. Inside these factories, there was 8 months' worth of materials. That was to say that they could produce about 800,000 rounds of ammunition.\*

"Leader! There are signs of strange movements from the zombie hordes over at Bin Qi City and Yan Zhou region. The majority had been blown and scattered by the snowstorm. Please relay your instructions on our next move." Right as Yue Zhong was preparing to consolidate and reallocate the forces of the Greater China

Alliance and Thousand Hero Alliance, Wei Ning Guo suddenly came up to Yue Zhong and reported excitedly.

"What! Bring me the pictures." Yue Zhong's eyes brightened up.

"Yes!"

Soon a number of pictures were transmitted over at the underground city. The photographs showed Bin Qi City And Yan Zhou, both that were crowded with zombies previously, were now largely free by more than half.

When Yue Zhong took over Gui Ning City, he had a few unmanned drones that could be used, and they were precisely sent to investigate the situations over at Bin Qi City and Yan Zhou City.

Yue Zhong swiftly passed his next order: "Good! Good!! Relay my next orders! Deploy Lang Son City 2nd and 3rd Battalion. Gui Ning City's 6th, 7th, 8th, 9th, 10th, 11th and the Scum Battalion to gather at Yang County."

Initially, the number of zombies over at the 2 cities had numbered over 5 million, and a horde of this size deterred Yue Zhong from making a frontal assault, as it would spell casualties of unknown proportions.

However, the sudden snowstorm that blew over had caused a large number of them to be scattered, and this was a huge opportunity for Yue Zhong. He could easily take control of 2 cities at one go.

If it hadn't been for that snowstorm, then Yue Zhong would have to take slow and painstaking steps to nibble at the hordes.

"Yes!" Wei Ning Guo replied excitedly.

Under Yue Zhong's orders, his troops began to move, in the direction of Yang County.

Countless firearms, ammunitions, rations were all being transported towards Yang County. Other than the large trucks,



there were survivors also pushing their handmade carts, helping to transport rations and uniforms as well as other equipment and logistics.

Among Yue Zhong's establishments, he had plenty of vehicles, but fuel was too precious. In comparison, manpower was cheaper and much more abundant. Hence, the support and logistics divisions were made up of survivors.

If he had the resources, Yue Zhong would make use of vehicles and trucks to transport them over. However, it was a matter of being prudent now.

This upcoming battle was vital to the future of the entire Guang Xi region. If Yue Zhong could not take down Yan Zhou City, then the lack of ammunition would spell the demise of Gui Ning City should there be a large scale horde attack. The moment Gui Ning City falls, it would be incredibly difficult for Yue Zhong to take on the Kingdom of God. Therefore, this was a battle he could not afford to lose.

When the 6th Battalion of Gui Ning City arrived, Yue Zhong handed the defenses to them, while he brought the 2nd and 3rd Battalion, as well as the 1st Battalion of Yang County that he had just reorganized 2 days prior towards the direction of Ji County.

He had to make use of this window when the numbers of zombies were still manageable at Bin Qi City and Yan Zhou City to quickly control them. The zombies might be blown away, but not necessarily dead. As long as they were still 'alive', they could gather again.

The moment he gained control over these 2 cities, his strength would not only go through an earth-shattering change, but his factions would also increase in might. After today, with enough resources, he would be able to churn out ammunition as well, and it would be one less problem on his mind.

Furthermore, once he gained the factories in Yan Zhou City, his

establishments would truly be considered to have some decent military support. The small factories in the Yang County's underground city or Lang Son City could not compare with the large scale industries over at Yan Zhou City. With a decent military power enterprise, he could produce better weapons. Otherwise, the designs he had were just scrap paper.

Yue Zhong quickly brought his troops and made for Bin Qi City like a sharp sword, with Hu Yi leading the 1st Armored Battalion.

When they arrived there, the 1st 500,000 zombies they saw were mostly made up of L1s, S1s, L2s and S2s. These evolved zombies made their way towards the armored battalion.

The majority of those zombies blown away were mostly the low-level ordinary zombies, and some other evolved ones, however, the bulk that remained were the evolved types.

"Fire the cannons!! Fire the cannons!" Facing the 500,000-strong horde, Hu Yi called out his commands in excitement.

A number of the tanks unleashed their powerful projectiles, blasting patches of evolved zombies into pieces.

As for the machine gun-mounted vehicles surrounding the tanks, they began firing rapidly as well.

A terrifying hail of bullet covered a large number of zombies, causing them to fall on the ground.

Yue Zhong personally led the soldiers of the 2nd Battalion to guard the armored battalion. The command of the operation had been handed to Zhang Xue Wang, Zheng Ming He and other intelligence officers.

Zhang Xue Wang had been trained in the military before the apocalypse, and being by Du Ming Shan's side they had gone through a few large-scale battles as well. He had a better understanding of commanding troops than compared to Yue Zhong, who was half-baked and not as experienced.

When Yue Zhong was at Gui Ning City, he didn't abuse his authority to bully the weak or to indulge in vices. Instead, he had wholeheartedly sought to reclaim the stability and peace before the apocalypse. At the same time, he focused on expanding his power, conquering Nan Ning, and this caused Zhang Xue Wang to have a stronger sense of trust and respect for this young leader.

In the command post, many of the intelligence officers and subordinates were handpicked trusted aides of Yue Zhong, and Zhang Xue Wang and his men would not have an opportunity to backstab Yue Zhong anyway.

Yue Zhong stood on the battlefield, wielding his Black Tooth Blade, and chopped up the fallen evolved zombies.

Beside Yue Zhong, there were Ning Yu Xin, Xin Jia Rou, Mu Xiang Ling, Xue Ning, Nangong Bing Yun, all dressed in military uniforms. They were similarly launching attacks on the zombies. In order to evolve, they had to kill more zombies. These women were not willing to stay at home and become vases, leading comfortable lives. They hoped to better themselves.

In this apocalypse, to live better, one had to be strong or to rely on the strong. Although Ning Yu Xin and the few ladies had decided to rely on Yue Zhong, they wanted to gain strength and control their own destiny as well. Otherwise, if Yue Zhong were to die, their future would be bleak.

A large number of the evolved zombies were eliminated by the armored battalion, when all of a sudden, the horde parted, and 80 Devourers of different levels pounced out, making their way towards the tanks, machine gun-mounted vehicles, and IFVs.

On top of that, there were 400 L3s and S3s shooting forward towards the 2nd Battalion led by Yue Zhong.

"Not good!" Yue Zhong eyed those galloping L3s, S3s and Devourers, and his face fell. These were the elites of the evolved zombies, and a single L3 could destroy an elite force of soldiers

without any heavy weapons. Machine guns were useless against them, and such horrifying existences could definitely decimate the 2nd Battalion of elites.

"Kill them all! Lightning, White Bones!" Yue Zhong pointed towards the horde of L3s and S3s and roared out his order.

With that, Lightning turned into a flash of light and charged towards the L3. With its extreme speed, it could break the sound barrier, and as it charged through the battlefield, numerous L3s would be decapitated, their headless corpses slumping to the ground.

White Bones charged amongst the S3s, and as they tried to pounce on it to bite it, it released its bone blades from various parts of its body and spun viciously, slashing many of them into pieces.

"Tian Hao! Protect the ladies!" Yue Zhong left an order, and he charged towards the Devourers.

Tian Hao, being a Strength and Agility-type Dual-attribute Evolver, stepped out silently to protect Ning Yu Xin and the rest. He was a strong expert, and after Yue Zhong had given him a set of equipment as well as a Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, his combat prowess rose by 3 times. As long as he was not surrounded by any high-level zombies, he was definitely capable of protecting the women.

Facing the Devourers, the armored battalions unleashed all their projectiles, including the IFVs, which turned their firing targets towards the Devourers.

Many of them were instantly torn apart by the various firepower. However, due to their insane speed, many of them managed to leap onto the IFVs, and they tore apart the hulls, spitting out a poisonous fog that turned the soldiers within into zombies in a manner of seconds.

=====

TN:

Seriously, I have no idea how 80,000 a month could translate to 800,000 with 8 months. But ah well, stick to the author's point!

## Chapter 523: L4! Promotion to Level 70!

---

One of the IFVs was destroyed just like that at the hands of the Devourer. When Yue Zhong saw that, he was furious and immediately leapt into the air, channeling his Devil Flame. A huge ball of fire blasted towards the head of the Devourer, causing it to explode.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 67, you've gained 2 attribute points to be allocated."

Yue Zhong had disposed of 20 Devourers in a short span of time, and absorbed a large amount of experience, thus, stepping into Level 67.

The elites of the 2nd Battalion were also launching their skills towards the Devourers. Large ice picks, sharp wind blades, terrifying fireballs, and piercing air bubbles, there were even enhanced bullets that were all launched at the Devourers. Many of the Devourers were blasted into pieces or incinerated.

Under the combined efforts of the experts in the 2nd Battalion, those Devourers were annihilated quickly. Many of the experts also gained levels because of their slaughter of the Devourers.

Some of the brave soldiers managed to slaughter the other evolved zombies, causing large numbers of skill books and amounts of Survivor Coins to drop out.

With the armored battalion acting as a temporary base, Yue Zhong's 2nd Battalion continued to advance in a frenzy. They crushed any evolved zombies that they came across, slicing the horde in two.

At this time, the 3rd Battalion, together with Yun Zi Ge's command of Yang County's 1st Battalion came engaging the other zombies in a violent clash.

Under that continuous onslaught, large numbers of the evolved

zombies were slowly being worn down by Yue Zhong's troops.

The intense battle carried on throughout the night. Yue Zhong finally eradicated all of the 50,000 evolved zombies with his 4 battalions, before directly setting up camp outside Bin Qi City.

"Today's battle, we've destroyed 50,000 zombies. We lost a total of 117 soldiers. The expenditure of ammo...." Within the temporary camp, Xin Jia Rou was reporting the details of the day's battle to Yue Zhong.

"Tough!! A horde with a commander is truly hard to deal with!" Yue Zhong frowned when he heard Xin Jia Rou's report. He had only managed to kill 50,000 zombies after an intense day's of battle. His side had suffered losses as well. It was hard to deal with the loss of 117 elite soldiers.

In the past, Yue Zhong could easily destroy a few dozen thousands of zombies, it was because they were ordinary zombies. Furthermore, they were usually squeezed together, making it easy for their heavy artillery to hit. That was how they achieved efficient results. As for the evolved zombies, while the heavy artillery was still useful, it was not as effective.

The more the numbers of the enemy, the stronger the effect of the heavy artillery. With lesser enemies, then the area of effect of the heavy cannons would be less effective.

Yue Zhong silently came to a decision: "This will not do! I need to deal with the Z-Type in Bin Qi City. Otherwise, even if we conquer it successfully, we will lack the strength to proceed to Yan Zhou City."

The 50,000 zombies today had been sent out as an advance party by the Z-Type within Bin Qi City. Inside the city, there were sure to be many more evolved zombies protecting the Z-Type.

Yue Zhong had the confidence to conquer the city when the rest of the troops arrived. However, that would take up too much time,

and the casualty rate might rise as well.

After making the decision, Yue Zhong made some preparations and left towards Bin Qi City by himself.

Yue Zhong had many experts under his command, that was true. However, to scout Bin Qi City, he felt that he was the best choice. If there was a need, he could activate his Bone Encompassing Armor, and make use of the bone spikes to dodge the zombie horde. If he brought men, he would be worried about their safety. Furthermore, his current objective was to assassinate the Z-Type in Bin Qi City, not engage in an all-out clash with the horde.

Yue Zhong blended into the night, and his passive ability Night Enhancement was engaged. It allowed him to move like a fish in water in the darkness. He activated his Bone Encompassing Armor and rushed out towards Bin Qi City.

Within Bin Qi City, there were huge, deserted areas. Many abandoned vehicles laid strewn out. There was no sign of life, nor any signs of zombies.

"Are all the zombies already gathered?" Yue Zhong entered Bin Qi City and surveyed his surrounding. He shot out a piece of bone spike, propelling him up on top of a roof.

Yue Zhong's hands shot out bone spikes that supported him as he scaled the sides of the tall buildings, searching for signs of the zombie horde.

After searching for a long time, he finally discovered a huge sea of zombies gathered at the center of Bin Qi City.

"They're there!" Yue Zhong stood atop a building and looked down at the vast sea of zombies, and determined the location of the Z-Type.

The Z-Types were like the top echelons of human hierarchy, they were fearful of death. They would stay within the protection of their strongest subordinates.



Yue Zhong laid on top of the skyscraper and kept his gaze fixed on the centre. When he concentrated, his eyes became powerful enough to absorb all the information even from a distance. The image of the city centre became like a feed to him as it entered his eyes, and he scanned all the information for the targets he required.

While the Night Enhancement ability did not do much to help Yue Zhong in his constitution, it gifted him with strange skills in the dark of the night. One of them was to enhance his vision in the night to an overpower level.

"Level 70 Type IV Strength - Evolved Infected L4. It possesses immense strength and powerful defenses. It has the ability to infect, affecting any lifeforms."

"Level 65 Type IV Agility - Evolved Infected S4. A monster with terrifying speed. It has the ability to infect, affecting any lifeforms."

Yue Zhong saw the 2 species of Type 4 zombies. The L4-type was huge, towering at 4m, looking like a building. Its entire body was covered with a layer of black scales, and it had huge blocks for hands. The S4 was a green freak, that had huge powerful thighs, and sharp claws. It was about 1.5m or 1.6m tall.

The 2 types of zombies surrounded a huge supermarket, and there were about 10 of the L4s, but almost 200 of the smaller S4s.

Other than those L4s and S4s, the large supermarket contained over 20 Level 70 Devourers. 200 L3s and 500 other S3s filled the place as well.

Such an evolved troop of zombies were all surrounding the supermarket, protecting the center. The defenses were extremely tight, and no one would be able to just charge in like this.

Yue Zhong observed the surroundings and discovered nothing that he could use. He sank into deep thought for a moment, before

using both his hands to aim at the entrance of the supermarket and activated his Devil Flame.

In an instant, 2 balls of blazing flames shot towards the ground like wrath from heavens and enveloped the L4s, S4s, and Devourers.

Yue Zhong's Devil Flame was the bane of the zombies after all, and while the exterior of the L3s and L4s could withstand the heat, their brains would definitely be turned to mush.

Hence, when the 2 balls of flames landed on the horde, it instantly caused chaos among the evolved zombies.

The L3s and L4s began to charge outwards, while many S4s and S3s were turned into ash by the Devil Flame.

Right at this time, a shrill and sharp howl sounded from the large supermarket. Countless zombies began to charge towards the location, intending to answer to the calls of help. However, many of the L3s, L4s, S3s and S4s were still burning from the Devil Flame, and were stuck together. Nothing could move.

The zombies were in a state of confusion and fear, and many swarmed to jump into the burning flames, intending to use their corpses to vanquish the flames.

Yue Zhong continued to release 2 huge tornadoes of flames downwards, while the evolved zombies continued to rush into the flames, sending themselves into oblivion.

The strong L3s, L4s, S3s and S4s were all squeezed tightly by the rest of the horde, unable to move. They could only struggle helplessly as the Devil Flames consumed them. At the same time, under the shrill call of help from the Z-Type in the supermarket, the terrifying Devourers also leapt into the burning flames, meeting their end.

Numerous highly evolved zombies were turned into ash just like that, and huge amounts of experience orbs rushed into Yue Zhong,

causing him to charge through levels.

Ordinarily, Yue Zhong would find it extremely tough to deal with either an L4 or S4. However, because they were squeezed and had no way of escaping, they could only stay there helplessly as they burnt.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 68, you've gained 2 attribute points to be allocated."

"Congratulations on achieving Level 69, you've gained 2 attribute points to be allocated."

"Congratulations on achieving Level 70, you've gained 1 attribute point to be allocated, as well as an additional active skill."

Under those conditions where the evolved zombies rushed to their own deaths, Yue Zhong actually gained 3 levels in one shot, breaking the Level 70 limit.

He immediately allocated 6 points into Agility, and kept the additional skill point. He wanted to collect them, in order to evolve the Devil Flame into its Second Order stage.

The zombies were still continuing to charge into Yue Zhong's fiery pit of death. Yue Zhong's pupils constricted as he sent 2 more hurricanes of flames towards the supermarket.

Immediately, a shrill scream sounded out from the supermarket, as it began to combust and burn.

Yue Zhong slapped his hands together, and the 2 raging tornadoes of fire enveloped the entire 3-storey building, causing the whole supermarket to burn.

With a crash, the windows of the 2nd-storey broke, and an L4 charged out from the shattered glass.

A number of L4s and S4s, as well as Level 70 Devourers, leapt out from the supermarket, their total numbers reaching 200. There were even 30-over heads of the tank-like L4s.

"Powerful! Fortunately, I didn't go in." Yue Zhong eyed those 200 Type-4 Evolved zombies and celebrated in his heart.

TN:

I'm at a loss for words. The plot armor is strong in this chapter.

# Chapter 524: Promotion! Second Order Devil Flame!

---

If Yue Zhong had encountered 200 Type 4 zombies or even those Level 70 Devourers, he did not have the confidence to deal with them.

Yue Zhong saw the Type 4 evolved zombies and Devourers jump out from the supermarket and waved his hands. A huge Devil Flame tornado blasted towards the 2nd level of the supermarket. He had to force the Z-Type out.

Under the pressure of Yue Zhong's blazing tornadoes, the entire 2nd level was covered in flames, creating a burning hell.

"It didn't appear! The Z-Type should be within those zombies that jumped out just now." With a thought, his eyes swept over the fleeing group of Type 4 zombies. He concentrated his Spirit, and his pupils constricted, and the entire scene was taken in.

Those 200 zombies that had escaped from the supermarket were now gathered in a tight bunch, making their escape in a hurry.

A sudden shrill scream sounded from the group of 200 Type 4 zombies, and the surrounding horde immediately made way, creating a path for the group to run.

Yue Zhong waved his hands as he watched the escaping zombies, and his Swift Shadow Bike appeared beside him. He quickly adjusted the cannons on the bike and fired rapidly at the zombies.

All of a sudden, thousands of projectiles bombarded the horde of zombies.

Under the assault of the cannons, holes were blasted in the bodies of the S4s, and even some Devourers were injured as well. However, the rounds only bounced off the scaly defenses and exploded without hurting the zombies, not even shaking them in the slightest.

"These zombies are truly fearsome!" Yue Zhong sucked in a breath of cold air as he watched the bullets having no effect on the tank-like L4s.

The L4's armor could not even be pierced by the bullets from a gattling cannon. The only weapons available to men that could possibly threaten it were heavy rockets, tanks, and missiles. Even the IFVs would be useless against them, only serving to be hammered.

The bullets seemed to have frightened the Z-Type and it suddenly screamed. Under that rallying call, a few hundred Type 3 zombies charged over and surrounded it.

"Got it!" Within that darkness, Yue Zhong's eyes were unparalleled. He instantly located the source of the scream, with many of the zombies around shuddering at the time of the scream. Only 1 L4 was special, not moving even after that rallying cry.

After locking on to his target, Yue Zhong fired out a bone spike, supporting him towards the direction of the Z-Type. At the same time, he waved his hands and a fearsome fiery tornado was sent in the direction of the Z-Type.

As though it had sensed the danger, the Z-Type immediately screeched out. A number of S3s and S4s leaped up to take the blow. They were burnt black as a result.

A number of the L4s and S4s were also assembled around the Z-Type, acting as some form of meat shield. The terrifying Devil Flame tornado burnt for a while, incinerating the brains of the Type 4 zombies.

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps atop the building and his speed exceeded a Type 2 Lightning. It was almost 22-times that of an ordinary person. In just 10 mere seconds, he had managed to catch up to the group of zombies. He jumped down from the building, aiming at the opposite roof. He shot out some silk from the Spider Silk Ring, and he swung towards the zombies like

Spiderman.

There were 2 S4s remaining and they jumped high into the air. Their obscene leg muscles enabled them to reach a height of 15m, and they slashed out viciously at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong immediately responded by firing 2 bone spikes with just a thought, slicing the 2 S4s in two, their blood spraying everywhere.

After Yue Zhong took down the 2 S4s, he waved his hand to send out another Devil Flame Tornado towards the L4s that surrounded the Z-Type.

Urged by fear, the Z-Type hiding in the body of the L4 continued to screech out sharply, as a powerful Spirit attack was launched towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's Spirit and Endurance had reached a powerful degree. He only frowned a little when the attack landed on him.

At the next moment, the fiery Devil Flame tornado enveloped the entire body of the L4, cooking it.

The L4's body could even block cannons, so the Level 4 Devil Flame had no way of breaking down the body. Just as the Devil Flame was burning, a hole appeared in the body of the L4. The Z2 hiding within immediately jumped out in a bid to escape.

"Go to hell!" Yue Zhong immediately waved his hand to envelop the Z2 with his Devil Flame when he saw it jumped out.

The Z2 screamed out and was incinerated within seconds.

The moment the Z2 died, the entire horde began breaking apart. The remaining zombies started to escape in various directions.

As for the Type 3 and Type 4 evolved zombies, they began to pounce towards Yue Zhong. The scent of fresh meat and blood was the strongest attraction to them.

The spider silk in Yue Zhong's hand allowed him to be pulled

back up the roof, and escape from the clutches of the zombies. He had cast the Devil Flame many times in succession and the toll on his Spirit and Stamina was huge. It was not that he could not continue fighting against the zombies, but it was too dangerous. If he was not careful, he might be swallowed by the zombies.

Yue Zhong then made his way towards the supermarket entrance, where the flames were starting to die out. All around the entrance, there was ash and a few L4 corpses.

The Devil Flame had easily consumed the zombies other than the L4s. Since the L4 had incredibly tough defenses, it would take more time with the burning to turn the L4 into ash.

Yue Zhong made use of the spider silk to swing himself towards the entrance of the supermarket, where he picked up over 20 skill books, 10 green Treasure Boxes, 25 white Treasure Boxes, and 2,000 Survivor Coins. After keeping the loot, he disappeared into the night.

When he went back to the camp, he started to go through the loot thoroughly.

"Alright! I made a killing this time." As he counted, his eyes were filled with joy.

In taking the risk to kill the Z-Type, his spoils were truly abundant. He had gotten a total of 25 skill books, of which, there were 8 Level 2 skills, 13 Level 3 skills, and 4 Level 4 skills.

Among the Level 3 skill books, there were the Werewolf Transformation, Were-Leopard Transformation, Werecat Transformation, Forest Ranger Transformation, Flame Storm, Ice Spear, Summon Grizzly Bear, Gravity Manipulation, Steel Body, Clone Technique, Stealth, Bide, Element Shield.

Of the Level 4 skill books, there were the Second Order Stamina Solidification, Second Order Devil Flame, Second Order High-Speed Movement, Second Order Steel Body.



"Level 3 Skill Book. Ice Spear. Congeals a powerful spear of ice to attack enemies. Consumes 30 Spirit. Non-specialized users can only use the skill once per day."

"Level 3 Skill Book. Summon Grizzly Bear. Summons a powerful grizzly bear to attack enemies. Consumes 20 Spirit."

"Level 3 Skill Book, Steel Body. Passive skill. Upon learning it, user's body will become stronger and tougher. Requires Endurance to be at least 120 to learn."

"Level 3 Skill Book, Clone Technique. Consumes 40 Spirit to produce a clone. The user can see what clone sees, at the same time, the clone has 10% of the attributes of the original. The clone is not able to utilize skills."

"Level 3 Skill Book, Bide. Expends 30 Stamina, to attack out with 3 times the penetrative power."

"Level 3 Skill Book, Element Shield. Consumes 30 Spirit to produce an elemental magic shield to protect the user. It can defend against all elemental attacks."

"Level 4 Skill Book: Second Order Stamina Solidification. Upon learning, Stamina increased by 55 points permanently. Requires the skill Stamina Solidification of Level 3 and above. Expends 2 skill points."

"Level 4 Skill Book: Second Order High-Speed Movement. Active Skill. Increases Agility by 80 points when active. Duration of 5 minutes. Requires the skill High-Speed Movement of Level 3 and above. Expends 2 skill points."

"Level 4 Skill Book: Second Order Steel Body. Allows the user to have a body as tough as metal. Requires the skill Steel Body of Level 3 and above. Expends 2 skill points."

Yue Zhong held the skill books in his hands and pondered for a while, before deciding to learn the Steel Body and Clone Technique. 2 bright lights flashed, and 2 additional bronze runes of

information appeared in his mind.

After learning the Steel Body skill, Yue Zhong's body coupled with his 181 points of Endurance became incredibly tough. He was now impervious to even heavy caliber bullets. He had become even more powerful.

Of course, even if the heavy caliber bullets could not penetrate his body, the recoil and impact were not negligible. It would still be able to cause some degree of harm.

Of the 10 Green Treasure Boxes, 6 had ordinary Level 3 Treasures, while the remaining 4 produced Level 4 Treasures. One of them was the Falcon Sniper.

"Level 4 Treasure: Black Wind Hook. Extremely sharp hook."

"Level 4 Treasure: Black Steel Mace! A huge mace weighing over a ton. There's no defense it cannot break, and no item it cannot smash."

"Level 4 Treasure: Gauntlet of Strength. Upon equipping, +15 Strength."

Yue Zhong equipped the Gauntlet of Strength and his Strength raised by 5 (exchanging with the Glove of Strength). His Strength now reached 100 points and was just perfectly at 10 times a normal person's Strength.

The night passed peacefully, as the zombies hid within the city after losing their Z-Type commander. None dared come out to attack Yue Zhong.

Early the next morning, Hu Yi led the armored battalion to launch an assault on Bin Qi City.

Inside Bin Qi City, there were numerous zombies, but they lacked all form of order. Instead, they had become easy fodder, taken out by the armored battalion and the experts under Yue Zhong.

At the same time, the reinforcements arrived quickly, charging

into the fray. The pressure mounted against the zombies in Bin Qi City, as the elite troops and army of Yue Zhong, continued to slaughter their way within.

With the constant reinforcements, the entire cleanup took about a week. Only then, Bin Qi City became free of zombies.

"Congratulations, you have conquered Bin Qi City and obtained the title 'Bin Qi City Conqueror'! This title grants you 2 points increase in all attributes. The title can't be earned again! Effects of titles can be stacked!"

"You have brought troops and conquered Bin Qi City, gaining 3 levels, and obtaining 6 attribute points to be allocated."

"You have brought troops and conquered Bin Qi City, earning 10,000 Survivor Coins!"

"You have brought troops and conquered Bin Qi City, earning a Level 4 Defence Vest!"

"You have brought troops and conquered Bin Qi City, earning 1 additional skill point!"

When Yue Zhong's forces cleared Bin Qi City of the zombies, a number of notifications rang out in his mind.

"Great! Evolve Second Order Devil Flame!" The moment Yue Zhong heard the notifications, he exclaimed out in surprise and chose to evolve his Devil Flame.

The Skill Book Second Order Devil Flame in his hands disappeared into his mind. At the same time, 2 skill points were deducted and transformed into light, merging with the skill book. The merged light flashed and turned green, inscribing more characters on the bronze rune of the Devil Flame.

The moment the mysterious characters were finished inscribing, another notification resounded in Yue Zhong's mind: "Congratulations, your Devil Flame has evolved to its Second Order stage!"

# Chapter 525: Pointing towards Yan Zhou!

---

When Yue Zhong's Devil Flame skill had evolved, he casually conjured out a Devil Flame ball with a thought. The Second Order Devil Flame was more than twice as strong as the Devil Flame at its Level 4 stage, when comparing the similar Spirit expenditure.

Back at Gui Ning City, the city was back to its usual hustle and bustle, and not a single idle person could be seen. Machines were constantly chugging, and countless factory workers were hard at work manufacturing clothes, weapons, canned meat, packing rations and other supplies.

The entire city's survivors had been activated, fulfilling their individual roles as gears of a larger machine in preparation for war.

In the midst of their busy actions, there was a slight anxiety among the survivors. Many of them knew of Yue Zhong's operation of deploying his huge army to battle the zombies. This was a vital fight that would determine the future of Gui Ning City.

If he won, Yue Zhong's might would increase exponentially. However, if he lost, he would suffer terribly, and all sorts of characters would leap out to take a bite.

Yue Zhong had a huge amount of prestige in Gui Ning City, but likewise, there were enemies in the shadows. There were even certain people within his army hoping for his failure.

Inside a small room, 5 men were gathered secretly in a discussion.

One middle-aged man spoke: "Bin Qi City has over 2 million zombies, while Yan Zhou City has over 3 million. Adding them together, there's at least 6 million zombies. That guy only has a 10,000-strong army, how can he win?"

A young Evolver laughed coldly: "Hmph! Yue Zhong sure is a

retard, he thought that just because his troops repelled the previous zombie horde attack, they're suddenly invincible. He's too full of himself. He was just lucky the previous time. This time, his luck sure is to run out."

Another burly and tanned man chuckled as well: "Precisely! Once he loses, we can act. By that time, the entire Gui Ning City! As well as the Guang Xi region will be ours!"

At various corners of Gui Ning City, small gatherings like this were ongoing, discussing the possibility of usurping Yue Zhong.

At this time, Gui Ning City was under the strict rule of Yue Zhong and his subordinates, all these little factions had no way of stepping out to show themselves. However, should Yue Zhong fall, they would seize the chance.

One soldier rode a bike all the way into Gui Ning City, and brought explosive news: "Leader Yue Zhong had conquered Bin Qi City with the troops! The entire Bin Qi City is under our control now!"

"Long live Yue Zhong!!"

"Awesome!! We gained another city!!"

This exciting news caused the entire Gui Ning City to be in an uproar, as numerous survivors roared with delight.

Conquering a city meant that all the resources in the city prior to the apocalypse would land in Yue Zhong's faction. These survivors would definitely stand to benefit, and their future would seem even brighter.

Furthermore, the fact that Yue Zhong had the strength to conquer a major city meant that it would not be impossible to conquer a 2nd or 3rd one. This caused even more reverence, hope and trust in Yue Zhong from the survivors of Gui Ning City.

"Shit, he actually conquered Bin Qi City!"

"That's a place with 2 million fucking zombies! How the heck did he accomplish it so easily? Is he still human?!"

Upon hearing the news of Yue Zhong conquering Bin Qi City, those small groups with motives began to feel despair. They did not know that most of the zombies in Bin Qi City had been blown away by the snowstorm. When they heard that Yue Zhong conquered the city, their hearts were filled with helplessness and despair.

If Yue Zhong were to continue his victorious streak like that, his rule would just become even more concrete. No one would be able to shake him from his position. Those smaller factions hidden amongst the ordinary survivors would never get the chance to display their might.

With the passage of time, a number of troops were mobilized and sent to Bin Qi City. There was currently an elite regiment of over 10,000 elites within Bin Qi City now.

This elite regiment was not made of some riff-raff. Every single one of them had been through countless battles. They have killed their share of human enemies, as well as zombies, and have shed their blood.

This elite troop was used to control Guang Xi as well as Vietnam, and they could handle a 100,000-strong zombie horde as well.

Inside a meeting hall, many commanders and captains were gathered. Yue Zhong sat at the helm and was overseeing the meeting.

Yue Zhong glanced at Hu Yi and asked: "This time, I've gathered everyone, as I want to prepare to set off for Yan Zhou City. Hu Yi, is the Gui Ning 1st Battalion still in its prime condition?"

Hu Yi's 1st Battalion was the mechanized infantry battalion as well as the vanguard strike force in Yue Zhong's troops. They had helped to storm Ji County, and Bin Qi City, and their experience

and gains were not small. Likewise, they had expended quite a bit of energy. Human soldiers were not zombies, and could get tired or exhausted. They would not be able to fight forever unlike the zombies.

Hu Yi answered with a voice of confidence: "Yes!! Our 1st Battalion is willing to be the vanguard in assaulting Yan Zhou City!"

After the constant battles, the combat strength of Hu Yi's 1st Battalion had truly grown. At the same time, they had increased their forces to accommodate over a thousand soldiers. This was the basis for Hu Yi's confidence.

Chai Zi Cang spoke up as well: "The 1st Battalion had just taken down Bin Qi City, they should rest for a moment. Leader, the Gui Ning 5th Battalion is willing to be the vanguard and take down Yan Zhou for you!"

Chen Sheng Gang also spoke up enthusiastically: "Leader! Our 8th Battalion had not done anything yet, our bones are about to rot! Let us be the vanguard and obtain Yan Zhou for you!"

"Leader!! Our 9th Battalion will take down Yan Zhou!!"

One by one, the commanders began to seek for Yue Zhong's deployment of their forces.

Yue Zhong's establishments focused on military merits. Only through merits would one stand a chance to rise in rank, and obtain more forces and resources. Many of the commanders knew that Hu Yi had been the main strike force in the operation to take down Bin Qi City, and would expand further after the battle for Yan Zhou. This time, it was unknown how many more commanders there would be, and who would even rise to become a regiment commander.

Hence, many of them wanted better prospects for themselves and their subordinates.

"This army is truly valiant!" Inside the meeting room, Cheng Sheng Yong looked at the forces and thought to himself in envy.

In this apocalypse, many of the large factions would have their smaller cliques within. Some of them would work together sometimes, others would try to stay back during operations to protect their strength, in case they lost them. When Yue Zhong was in Vietnam, the Chinese Association was like this. Even when Chen Sheng Yong was at the helm of his power, he had people who would give excuses not to take part in the operations in lieu of the big picture. They had instead chosen to preserve their strength. That led to their own downfall.

Yue Zhong eyed all his commanders with appreciation and hollered a command: "Good! For this battle, the 1st Battalion, 4th Battalion, 8th Battalion and 9th Battalion would form a joint strike force. The 5th Battalion would move to defend Qishan District, the 11th Battalion to defend Zhushan District, Lang Son 3rd Battalion to defend Heshan District, and the rest is to assemble as reinforcements. Await further orders!"

Yue Zhong then glanced around and spoke seriously: "This battle, we can only win, there can be no failure!"

"Yes!" Everyone responded in a resounding voice.

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's order, the troops began to prepare, as they set off for their individual objectives.

Yue Zhong then went to the command center and asked one of the officers: "What is the situation over there now?"

The officer immediately brought up a display for Yue Zhong: "Leader! There are countless droves of zombies moving towards Yan Zhou! Please take a look!"

Yue Zhong looked at the screen and frowned.

On the screen, many waves of zombies were currently making their way towards the direction of Yan Zhou. These were those



zombies that had been in Bin Qi City and Yan Zhou, but were blown away by the snowstorm.

The smaller droves numbered a few dozen thousands, while the larger hordes numbered in the hundred thousands. The moment these zombies gathered at Yan Zhou, then there would be a total of over 3 million zombies. It would then become a city that was almost impregnable.

Yue Zhong only had a force of 10,000. His ammunition was lacking. Using frontal assault against 3 million zombies would be a fool's dream.

It was precisely because of this, that Yue Zhong had no choice but to deploy his forces to take down Yan Zhou. They had to eliminate the zombies within Yan Zhou first. However, the expedition on Bin Qi City had taken over 9 days. As for Yan Zhou, the gathered zombies were already numbering in the 400,000s. Everyday, the numbers were increasing in the dozens and hundreds of thousands.

The officer pointed to the screen and explained: "Based on the current situation, these 3 main hordes of zombies would enter Yan Zhou in another 3 days. The moment they enter, the total number of zombies in Yan Zhou would cross a million."

Yue Zhong looked at the screen and thought to himself: "We need to take down Yan Zhou in the next 3 days. At the very least, I need to force the death of the Z-Type there."

He handed the command of the place over before stepping out. All of a sudden, he felt a sudden strange feeling in his mind, and he lifted his head. He discovered a huge Type 2 Green Eagle flying in the distance, and there was a huge transport aircraft and an assault helicopter beside it.

"Greenie!" Yue Zhong saw the Type 2 Green Eagle and his eyes lit with joy before he ordered loudly: "Do not fire!!"

Under his command, no anti-air defenses were activated, and the huge bird, as well as the 2 aircraft, landed.

The moment Greenie landed, it began to snuggle against Yue Zhong with its head affectionately.

"Good! Good! This is for you!" Yue Zhong exclaimed with joy and handed a whole bunch of Type 2 nuclei and Type 3 nuclei to Greenie.

# Chapter 526: Attacking Yan Zhou!

---

When Greenie saw those nuclei, it also immediately swallowed them in joy.

It gobbled up the 20-over Type 2 Nuclei and 3 Type 3 Nuclei before its body shuddered. It then laid on the ground and fell asleep, undergoing evolution.

When most Mutant Beasts go through evolution, they would do so in their own nests or amongst their own kind to be protected. Greenie had been tamed by Yue Zhong and had always stayed beside him to evolve. It trusted Yue Zhong very much.

At the same time, 2 beautiful women walked out from the aircraft carrier. They were Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao. Other than them, there were 20 soldiers that followed behind, each of them carrying a huge bloody aura.

Yue Zhong saw Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao and his eyes lit up in joy: "Qing Wu, Yao Yao. You guys are here too!"

Ji Qing Wu glanced at Yue Zhong and asked: "Lu Wen and Ya Tong are asking, when are you going back?"

Although her tone was mild, Yue Zhong could detect the slightest dissatisfaction. It was obvious that even Ji Qing Wu was begrudging him for staying so long at Guang Xi.

Currently, Yue Zhong had 3 huge territories, Guang Xi, Vietnam and Long Hai. Of them, Guang Xi had the most number of survivors and had the highest potential to expand and develop. Yue Zhong had been staying over here for so long, the people in Long Hai City were getting restless. After all, Yue Zhong had established his place at Long Hai first. If Yue Zhong stayed at Guang Xi for too long, then there was a potential for Guang Xi to become the major base for Yue Zhong's government.

Yue Zhong chuckled: "Yan Zhou! After we conquer Yan Zhou, I'll

go back."

Yan Zhou was of the utmost priority to Yue Zhong now. The moment he conquered it, his establishments would get a constant supply of arms and ammunition. At the same time, with Yan Zhou, he would finally have a proper military base.

Ji Qing Wu grunted mildly in reply, before pointing towards the 20 soldiers and introduced them: "These 20 are the elites of the Special Forces. Every single one of them is above Level 50 and they're here to do your bidding."

"Great!" Yue Zhong eyed them and exclaimed his appreciation.

Enhancers that could reach Level 50 and above were truly the elite amongst elites. They must have killed countless zombies and Mutant Beasts. Each of them could easily kill 200 or 300 zombies. The stronger ones could even take on a thousand on their own with no problems. Such a force was truly equivalent to an infantry battalion.

Ji Qing Wu asked: "I read the report on the way here! There's a huge horde moving towards Yan Zhou, and the numbers seem to exceed a million. What are your plans?"

Yue Zhong replied seriously: "Deploy every force we have to launch a full assault on Yan Zhou! We must conquer it before the zombie horde gathers fully. We'll have to eliminate the Z-Type in there."

"Do you have the confidence?" She challenged.

Yue Zhong chuckled assuredly: "I have 70% confidence that we can take it down."

This time, Yue Zhong had brought out all his trump cards. There were 40 tanks, the self-propelling rocket launchers, 155mm cannons, Red Arrows, IFVs and all sorts of modern weaponry. Each of them had ammunition that stacked like mountains. He had also deployed his force of over 10,000 elite soldiers. These soldiers

could definitely hold their own against the ordinary zombies. Although there were over tens of thousands of evolved zombies within Yan Zhou, Yue Zhong wasn't worried.

Hu Yi led the 1st Armored Battalion, the 4th Battalion, 8th Battalion and 9th Battalion into the entrance of Yan Zhou. 200,000 evolved zombies immediately charged towards them like huge waves on the sea.

Yue Zhong's troops had already done their preparations and dug up numerous trenches. They had also constructed some simple traps and obstructions, including steel beams, wire meshes, and even road cones.

The sea of zombies had just rushed out and was instantly met with an intense volley of fire. Rocket rounds and heavy artillery bombarded the zombies, obliterating huge numbers of them at one go.

The entire battlefield shook consistently, as though it was struck by an earthquake. The intense firing did not cease. Under that volley of bullets and heavy rounds, many zombies were blasted to pieces.

An L3 was invulnerable to guns and bullets. Even heavy machine guns would not be able to take it down easily. If such a terrifying zombie was given enough space to wreck havoc, it could easily take down an entire squad of soldiers. Yet, such existences found it hard to hold up against that endless rain of heavy artillery, many bombed to bits and pieces.

Within the horde, a 4m-tall L4 was charging towards the soldiers like a tank. A round from the self-propelled rocket launchers exploded on the body of the L4. As the blast roared out, the huge L4 was immediately blasted apart, its head rolling to one side. It was taken out.

The might of the modern weaponry were truly effective against the zombies that were packed tightly together, and countless

zombies were incinerated as the firing went on.

"What a pity! If only I had enough cannons and ammunition. The zombies would be nothing." Yue Zhong stood at the front lines and watched the countless evolved zombies being turned to dust, and shook his head.

If only they had an unlimited ammunition supply, they could just support a modern army to eradicate even millions and tens of millions of zombies.

After the heavy artillery bombarded the entire area once and blanketed the entire area, the huge sea of zombie was almost reduced to nothing.

By the time it ended, there were only about 60,000 evolved zombies left on the battlefield. A total of 140,000 zombies had been wiped out in the volley of fire.

Among the 60,000 zombies, there were still about 4 L4s and 50 L3s. These L4 zombies were huge and garnered the attention of everyone present due to their freakish size.

The remaining 60,000 continued their charge towards the humans. There were no Z-Types among them, and even if they were eradicated, they would still not feel despair or fear. This was the terrifying point of zombies.

The faster S-Types managed to reach the humans first. In their charge, they would be entangled in the countless wire meshes and fell to the ground, before they were grounded to paste by the zombies behind them. After the various ground traps had served their purpose in stopping many S-Types, the L3s easily tore through them, pulling them up from the ground.

At various areas around the battlefield, the steel wires, bars and traps would hamper the S-Types. The moment they were caught in the traps, they would be fired upon by the human soldiers.

However, the situation did not last long, as with the charge of the

L3s, which pulled with their might, all the traps were either ripped from the ground or torn apart. The evolved zombies then continued to charge towards the humans.

Another round of heavy artillery blasted towards the L3 and L4s. Other than those rounds, all other ammunition was basically ineffective.

Countless bullets and heavy machine gun fire would just ricochet off the bodies of the L3s and L4s, not hurting them in the slightest. Even the impact from the 12.7mm bullets from could not shake the L3s at all. As for the L4s, they basically did not feel anything from such rounds.

"Powerful!" Yue Zhong looked at those L3s and L4s and thought to himself.

The L3s and L4s demonstrated their usefulness that outstripped the S4s on the battlefield. They were like indestructible tanks and could tear apart anything that blocked their way. Especially the L4s, which could flip tanks easily.

"Come with me!" Ji Qing Wu watched the L3s and L4s and immediately charged towards them like a gust of wind.

Yao Yao and the 20 Enhancers over Level 50 immediately followed behind, their strike as sharp as a sword.

"Tell the 1st Battalion 2nd Company to stop." Yue Zhong saw Ji Qing Wu and the rest charging and immediately gave the order to an officer beside him.

After that, his own figure flashed towards their direction. Against the terrifying L4s, Yue Zhong was still concerned about the safety of Ji Qing Wu and the rest.

With the tremendous strength of the L4s, if even a fist were to land on Yue Zhong, he would be heavily injured. As for others whose Endurance was not high, even an Evolver would die the moment a fist from the L4 landed.

However, Ji Qing Wu's performance led Yue Zhong's expression to brighten. Her body flashed about gracefully, as she leaped into the midst of the zombie horde like a fairy, a green coloured divine sword in her hand streaking with a long blade light. Countless shadows were emitted from her blade as she danced apart and each time the blade shadows touched the L3s, their heads would be sliced off, with blood spraying everywhere.

She continued to weave in and out of the zombie horde, and many L3 heads flew. She quickly arrived in front of an L4 and dodged the incoming blow with ease. Her feet lit up with some faint green light, and she leaped all the way to the head of the L4 before she slashed down viciously, and the blade actually penetrated the skull of the L4.

"Strong!" Yue Zhong saw how Ji Qing Wu actually slaughtered an L4 with a single move, and could not help but praise in his heart.

Ji Qing Wu's abilities were obviously close-combat focused, but the fact that they could complement her swordplay and movement, that was truly terrifying. As long as she got close, Yue Zhong knew that no one under his command was a match for her.

On the other side, Yao Yao's body transformed into a streak of light that surpassed the speed of Lightning when it was Type 2, charging straight through the zombies. She somehow appeared on top of an L4 as well, and her hand carried a black shadow about 1 meter long that pierced the L4's head.



## Chapter 527: Unstoppable!

---

The black light spun furiously, all the way till it penetrated the skull of the L4, and proceeded to grind the contents to mash.

After killing that L4, Yao Yao's face was slightly pale. She grabbed the treasure that dropped from her kill, before disappearing from the midst of zombies.

On the other side, after Ji Qing Wu had disposed of the L4, she also retreated quickly. The 2 of them had used their strong skills to instantly take out 2 L4s, and the consumption of Stamina and Spirit was naturally high.

As they were retreating, huge blades of wind and blazing spears of flame bombarded the zombies. They were also supported by enhanced bullets and manipulated vines, clearing the way for Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao through the crowd of L3s.

It was obvious that the teamwork of this elite team was extremely coordinated and flawless. They were formed with Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao as the core fighting members, and the rest as support.

As the experts were helping Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao to retreat, Yue Zhong waved his hand. A Devil Flame Spear of blazing temperatures surpassing its previous form was sent towards the head of one L4 in a flash of light.

With a loud explosion, the Devil Flame Spear combusted, incinerating the head of the L4 instantly, leaving a headless corpse.

The huge bulky zombie slumped to the ground.

"Strong!!" The elite soldiers saw Yue Zhong taking the L4 like nothing and their hearts ran cold. Not one of them had the ability to do what Yue Zhong did.

After destroying the L4 in one second, Yue Zhong waved his hand, and a number of Devil Flame balls conjured out of thin air,

exploding on the heads of the L3s.

The sounds of explosions rang out constantly, and the remaining L3s were all taken out easily by Yue Zhong. After his Devil Flame evolved, it had become even more terrifying. Killing the L3s no longer needed the Devil Flame Spear, any one fireball would do the job.

When the L4s and L3s were all taken care of by Yue Zhong, the remaining zombies were impeded by the various traps, and could not display their might. Yue Zhong's forces just continued unleashing heavy fire, slaughtering as many as they could.

Yue Zhong had brought all the ammunition and weapons he amassed to this battle at Yan Zhou, hence his troops did not spare any expense and just fired at will.

Even if the evolved zombies were at least 10 times stronger than the ordinary zombies, or even a 100 times, under that fearsome fire by Yue Zhong's troops, they were blasted to bits.

Soon after, the Tian Xin County's 1st Battalion, Long Teng County's 1st Battalion were brought into the fray.

The intense battle went on for an entire day, and Yue Zhong's army expended a huge amount of their ammunition before finally eliminating all 60,000 evolved zombies.

After eradicating the zombies, Yue Zhong's forces continued into Yan Zhou.

"Congratulations, you have conquered Yan Zhou and obtained the title 'Yan Zhou Conqueror'! This title grants you 2 points increase in all attributes. The title can't be earned again! Effects of titles can be stacked!"

"You have brought troops and conquered Yan Zhou, gaining 3 levels, and obtaining 6 attribute points to be allocated."

"You have brought troops and conquered Yan Zhou, earning 10,000 Survivor Coins!"

"You have brought troops and conquered Yan Zhou, earning a Level 4 Defence Vest!"

"You have brought troops and conquered Yan Zhou, earning 1 additional skill point!"

The moment Yue Zhong set foot in Yan Zhou, a flurry of notifications rang out in his mind.

When Yue Zhong heard it, he was alarmed: "Shit! Did the Z-type in Yan Zhou escape?"

One officer came up to him and quickly reported: "Leader!! The Z-type in Yan Zhou had escaped! They're currently fleeing towards the direction of Heshan District."

The unmanned tactical drones had been monitoring the movements of the zombies and discovered about 100,000 evolved zombies escaping.

Yue Zhong's face fell and quickly ordered out ruthlessly: "Shit! We cannot let them converge with the horde at that side, otherwise the consequences will be dire! Relay my order, get Cheng Sheng Yong to hold out. They had better protect Heshan, if the 2 hordes join forces, I'll see that his head rolls!"

There was a total of 400,000 zombies moving towards Heshan District, and the moment the Z-type was allowed to gather those ordinary zombies, it would pose a huge threat to Yan Zhou.

In Heshan, when Cheng Sheng Yong received the order from Yue Zhong, he laughed bitterly and grumbled: "We have only 2,000 men here, how can we withstand 100,000 evolved zombies?"

One sentry officer stepped up to suggest: "Captain! Why don't we take our men and escape! We'll die if we stay here, I suspect that Yue Zhong is purposely sending us to our deaths, and to whittle our Vietnamese strength down."

Chen Sheng Yong chuckled bitterly and replied slowly: "Escape? Where can we escape to? The moment we run, our comrades will

be slaughtered by him anyway. Our families would become slaves. Furthermore, we're not at all familiar with this Guang Xi region. Our language is a barrier as well. The moment we lose the resources from Yue Zhong, we won't even last more than a month."

Cheng Sheng Yong's eyes shone with a strange light as he spoke each line deliberately: "Now, we can only follow his orders. We have to stay here and protect this place. Even if we all die, Yue Zhong will not let our efforts go to vain, and he would protect our families and comrades. Therefore, this battle, we HAVE to guard here. Not because of Yue Zhong, but because of the future of our fellow countrymen."

Chen Sheng Yong had plenty of bad habits of his own, and wasn't some perfect human being. However, he valued his fellow comrades very much, and when he had submitted to Yue Zhong, it was partly to protect his own life, as well as the possibility of survival for his Vietnamese comrades.

If Yue Zhong was merciless, then not a single Vietnamese would live to see another day. Especially those in Hanoi. Chen Sheng Yong had joined Yue Zhong's forces to be the voice for them should the need arises.

Chen Sheng Yong sighed and said: "Go get started on the fortifications! This time, our survival will depend heavily on our preparations!"

Hearing those words, the intelligence officer sunk in deep thought, before saluting Cheng Sheng Yong, his own eyes flashing with resolution and acceptance. He then stepped out.

Under Chen Sheng Yong's orders, the Lang Son 3rd Battalion began their works on the main road towards Heshan.

With the ample resources that were deployed, all sorts of wire meshes, steel beams, barricades, etc were set up by the soldiers. While they were simple, they proved to be very effective against

the zombies.

If there were no L3s or L4s that were basically like tanks to clear the road, the obstructions and traps were enough to impede many of the zombies.

Just as the forces of Chen Sheng Yong had finished the fortifications, a group of over 4,000 S-Types consisting of S2s, S3s and S4s appeared on the horizon. These speedy zombies were sent as a vanguard by the Z-Type, also to scout.

With the passage of time, the intelligence of the Z-Types were growing. Initially, they would just command huge group of zombies to charge recklessly. However, they had already begun to grasp tactics and strategy, even knowing to retreat when things turned bad.

Chen Sheng Yong saw the S-types approaching and begun to holler to raise the morale of his troops: "They're here!! Brothers!! Fire at will!! We must block them from crossing here! We cannot even allow one to pass us! Once we win this, everyone can raise ranks and get some wives!!"

With his words, the morale of the soldiers was bolstered.

Soon the group of S-Types reached the areas of fortifications and were met with huge obstructions. The obstacles and traps showed their effectiveness.

Usually, the S4's speed could exceed a Type 2 Lightning. In an ordinary battle, an S4 could easily wipe out a company of soldiers. However, in a charge, with a dozen S4s acting as the vanguard, the moment they slammed into the multiple fortifications, their legs were either sliced off, or they would fall on the ground. Even if they weren't finished off, they would lose their speed.

The S-Types would be impeded by the various traps as they charged over, some falling, some falling into the pits with steel beams. Many were either killed or heavily injured.

A number of the S-Types were smarter as they tried to jump over the obstacles, but they were stopped by the steel wires.

Chen Sheng Yong got his troops to begin firing at the S-Types, turning many of them into sieves.

Amidst the dense gunfire, a huge number of the S-Types were directly annihilated. Just the traps took out over a thousand of the dumb S-Types.

Chen Sheng Yong surveyed the field, noting the 4,000 evolved zombies that they had killed, and couldn't help but feel a sense of pride: "Not bad! We managed to survive the 1st wave."

4,000 evolved zombies and 4,000 ordinary zombies were very different scenarios. A single S2 was more than 10 times deadlier than an ordinary zombie. Killing 4,000 of these evolved types was much more difficult than taking down 4,000 ordinary zombies.

"Not good!" Chen Sheng Yong's face suddenly turned pale.

Everyone looked up, only to see the terrifying figures of the L4 towering in the distance, running over.

The L4s possess a speed that was 4 times that of an ordinary person, but because their bodies were so much more bulkier, each step was easily 3 times that of a person. If the L4s were to charge with full speed, they could easily exceed a person by 12 times. This was a terrifying speed. It was equivalent to having 10 tanks charging over.

Chen Sheng Yong immediately screamed: "Fire the cannons!! Fire!! Blast those fuckers with all we've got!!"

The Lang Son 3rd Battalion immediately began firing like crazy, as their heavy artillery was focused on that 10 L4s. They only had about 40 cannons, and all of them, couple with their IFVs, were focusing their fire on the 10 L4s.

# Chapter 528: Pursuit!

---

Under that dense barrage of heavy artillery, the 10 L4s were hit by rounds constantly. Any point of impact would result in a gaping hole, but they were insufficient to blast the L4s into pieces. As for the resulting shrapnel or shockwave, they could not affect them at all.

The IFV was firing the 25mm gatling gun, but all the bullets did was to leaving white marks on the terrifying defense of the L4s, not penetrating their bodies at all.

The 10 L4s and 100 L3s charged through the volley of fire and only 30-plus L3s were blasted to pieces. The rest continued on their charge towards Chen Sheng Yong.

Especially the L4s, a few had numerous wounds from the various heavy fire, yet they were charging like it was nothing. With each kick of their feet, the steel wires and meshes would be dragged up. They then used their hands to tear holes in the steel fences. With each blow of their fists, the huge road barriers would be destroyed into dust. Every single fortification was obliterated in their path.

"Rockets!! Fire the anti-tank rockets at them!!" Chen Sheng Yong shouted loudly. Facing this freaks that seem invulnerable to so many things, the only measure left to them were the anti-tanks rockets.

Originally, the Lang Son 3rd Battalion was not a stable force, and would not have been given any cannons. However, Yue Zhong had taken into consideration the importance of the mission at hand and had decided to arrange for them to possess 40 anti-tank cannons.

With Chen Sheng Yong's orders, the soldiers in charge of the anti-tank rockets began to deploy towards the frontlines, aiming at the L4s and firing.

A number of the rockets exploded at a few of the L4s, causing them to be blasted, as dust and debris were scattered everywhere.

As the dust settled, a number of the L4s appeared, with various huge holes in their bodies, but only 3 had their heads blown off.

The remaining 7 L4s immediately charged through the troops and unleashed carnage.

One L4 came in front of a soldier and slapped out with its hand. It was like slapping a fly, as the human soldier was flattened to a paste. It then grabbed another soldier, before throwing him into its mouth. It then chomped down and caused blood to flow out its jaws, looking extremely terrifying.

The speed of the 7 L4s was extremely fast, and the normal soldiers had no means of escaping their clutches. They could only be swatted like ants or grabbed and eaten.

Seeing the L4s which were demon-like existences, a chill came over the hearts of the soldiers. These freaks were indestructible and had monstrous strength. Nothing in their arsenal could kill them. How could they fight such monsters?

At almost an instant, their morale dipped, almost collapsing.

"Beasts! Fucking beasts!!" Chen Sheng Yong looked at those L4s and his eyes turned red, showing a hint of despair. If it were just 1 L4, he could activate the Enhancers and Evolvers of the Lang Son 3rd Battalion to join forces against it. However, since there were 7, he was at a loss.

"If only we were the main force!!" Chen Sheng Yong looked across the battlefield and watched helplessly as the L4s ravaged their way throughout the battlefield.

Yue Zhong had biases towards and against his various troops. As his most trusted force, he would naturally not be stingy with the resources. Just Hu Yi and his 1st Armored Battalion had 40 tanks and 110 IFVs. They had over 100 artillery of various kinds. The 1st



Armored Battalion was almost certainly going to expand and become Yue Zhong's strongest regiment.

As for the unreliable forces of the Lang Son 3rd Battalion, they were only given ordinary rifles and had limited ammunition. In times where no battles were imminent, their troops only had refilled bullets. Only in times of war like the current situation would they be given proper ammunition and other logistics. As for heavy artillery, they truly had only a sparse number. If they had enough heavy artillery fire, they would be able to take on the L4s.

With the L4s leading the charge of the zombies, the soldiers at the frontlines were thoroughly crushed. The soldiers were retreating frantically. The rest of the troops were also feeling nervous and fearful.

"We're finished! We're finished!" Chen Sheng Yong looked at his broken troops and thought silently to himself in despair.

The fearsome L4s had torn the defenses of the Lang Son 3rd Battalion apart like it was nothing. The rest of the zombies were following behind. The moment they breached the base, the troops would have no means to resist at all. Without any fortifications or defenses, a single S2 or L2 could dispatch 10 ordinary soldiers with ease.

Right as Chen Sheng Yong felt that there was no more hope, an assault helicopter appeared in the distance, roaring over. A Devil Flame Spear shot down like judgment from heaven, piercing the head of one L4, combusting immediately, turning the L4 into a headless corpse.

The headless corpse of the L4 fell back slowly like a toppled giant.

Yue Zhong eyed the rest of the tank-like L4s and immediately conjured a few Devil Flame Spears in succession, throwing them quickly. The Devil Flame Spears shot towards the L4s, combusting upon impact.

"That's Yue Zhong?!" Chen Sheng Yong eyed the assault helicopter and his heart was filled with shock. Having crossed arms with the L4s, he knew of their terrifying nature. Seeing how easy it had been for Yue Zhong to take them down, the shock and respect for Yue Zhong increased another notch.

"Yes!!!"

"Fuck yea!!"

When they saw Yue Zhong take down the 7 L4s, all the soldiers immediately roared out in joy. The invincible demon-like existences had met their ends at Yue Zhong's hands, and their morale instantly shot up.

Cheng Sheng Yong immediately gave an order the moment the L4s were taken down: "Relay my orders, 9th Company to launch counter-attack!"

The 9th Company consisted of the Vietnamese experts under Chen Sheng Yong and had been his trump card. Now that Yue Zhong had personally entered the fray, he had to risk his all as well.

Under Chen Sheng Yong's orders, a Vietnamese Evolver roared out in battlelust, leading his team of over 50 Enhancers towards the evolved zombies. Their aim was to clean up those terrifying L2s and L3s, not allowing them to wreck any more havoc to the fortifications.

Having expended a total of 140 Spirit and 50 Stamina to kill those L4s, Yue Zhong had truly exceeded himself as compared to when he killed the Z2 on Bin Qi City. The effect was less as well, since he burned the L4s to death back then, whereas he had opted to decimate the L4s in one shot. The level of difficulty between both was truly incomparable.

However, in doing so, it had propelled his undefeatable image in the hearts of the Lang Son 3rd Battalion, as well raised their

morale again. The soldiers were once again filled with fighting spirit and would not break down.

"Where the hell is the Z-type?" Yue Zhong surveyed the scene from the skies, trying to locate the Z-type.

If it managed to escape, and gather the huge horde from a distance, it would become a nightmare for Yue Zhong. Although this battle was a victory for Yue Zhong, his forces had expended plenty of ammunition. In the short term, it would be hard for him to contend against another major horde.

After observing the scene below for a while, he quickly found 5 L4s and a 100 L3s huddled together. Especially in the midst of such a horde, the bulky L4s that were the size of houses were extremely obvious.

"Attack that side!!" When Yue Zhong discovered that group, he immediately ordered the pilot.

The assault helicopter immediately fired numerous rockets towards the 5 L4s. At the same time, the heavy machine began firing wildly towards the group of zombies.

Hong! Hong!

Wherever the rockets blasted on the L4s, they would result in huge bloody wounds. However, even with that bombardment, only 1 L4 had suffered a headshot. The rest were injured, but not dead.

However, the attack served to frighten the Z-type, as the remaining L4s immediately separated and ran in 4 different directions.

Yue Zhong saw this and his eyes flashing with a strong killing intent: "Splitting up! This Z-type has already evolved to such a level of intelligence? I cannot let it escape! We must kill it!!"

There were over 40 million zombies in Guang Xi. Even with Yue Zhong and Du Shan Xiong's past efforts, the total number of zombies killed were about 3 million. If such an intelligent Z-type

were to escape, it would become a disaster for humanity.

Yue Zhong unleashed a piercing howl towards the skies and Type 3 Lightning appeared in the distance. It brought 300 of its little kin, engaging the evolved zombies. To those Mutant Beasts, evolved zombies were a special treat. Although they couldn't compare with gobbling nuclei, swallowing evolved zombies would allow them to evolve as well.

Yue Zhong eyed the horde below and waved his hands. 2 huge flaming tornadoes appeared and shot towards 2 of the L4s. The moment they landed, the 2 L4s evaded to one side, knocking into the other zombies before they escaped towards the distance.

"That's not it!" Yue Zhong waved his hands again, sending another 2 flaming tornadoes towards the remaining 2 L4s.

One of them immediately tried to run, while the other continued in its path, but several S-Types leaped up to take the blow. All of them were instantly incinerated.

# Chapter 529: Gaining Yan Zhou!

---

"It's that one!!" Yue Zhong's eyes brightened when he saw countless zombies jumping to block all of the attacks with their bodies. He ordered: "Fly there!"

Following his order, the assault helicopter flew towards the L4.

At this time, all of a sudden, a thousand L2s lifted up H1s.

"Pull up! Pull up!" A chill came over Yue Zhong's heart and he roared. The pilot also frantically pulled the controls, taking the assault helicopter higher.

The next moment, a thousand fireballs came soaring through the air, many of which hit empty air. However, 1 managed to blast the tail of the helicopter, causing a huge hole. The entire helicopter began to plunge.

The assault helicopter was lacking in defense when compared to the main forces of the Eurocopters. If it were one of them, it wouldn't have been damaged so badly by the H1's shot. Of course, if it had been the advanced Thunder Fighter, there wouldn't have been so much of a sweat.

Yue Zhong activated his Bone Encompassing Armor and grabbed the pilot, before leaping out of the helicopter.

The assault helicopter plunged towards the ground, exploding into a huge fireball.

While in mid-air, Yue Zhong activated his Gravity Manipulation, decreasing his weight by half. At the same time, he sent out a sharp bone spike towards the earth.

With a thought, he shot out more spikes one after another, moving towards the fleeing L4. The horde was now densely packed. If Yue Zhong landed in their midst, even he would find it hard to extract himself out of that situation.

Yue Zhong's speed was extremely quick, even as the zombies tried to grab his spikes, they barely managed to scrape them. In a few breaths, he had managed to chase up to a distance of 50m away from the L4.

A bright flash of fire appeared in Yue Zhong's right hand, as a Devil Flame Spear formed. He flung it out with force, and the Devil Flame Spear turned into a flash of light as it shot towards the head of the L4, exploding upon impact.

The headless corpse of the L4 crashed towards the ground. Its chest suddenly tore open, and the Z2 hidden within swiftly leaped out.

The moment the Z2 got out from the L4's body, an S4 pounced over and hugged the Z2 before making a mad dash for the distance.

The S4's speed was even faster than Type 2 Lightning, reaching almost 30 times the speed of a normal person. It was lightning-quick and had almost no equal.

"Seems like I can't capture it alive!" Yue Zhong aimed for the head of the Z2 and frowned. He originally wanted to capture it and try to gather the remaining zombies in hopes to eliminate them once and for all.

Yue Zhong waved his hand and a terrifying flaming tornado zipped towards the Z2, incinerating all the zombies in the way.

In front of the Second Order Devil Flame, a huge number of zombies were instantly scorched to a crisp. The Z2 screamed out once, before it was also consumed by the Devil Flame, leaving nothing but ashes behind.

With the death of the Z2, the groups of the zombies began to break apart, dispersing and scattering. The evolved zombies suddenly lacked directions. Some remained still, while the others quickly charged towards the Lang Son 3rd Battalion. The zombies were thrown into a state of chaos.

The 400,000 zombies that had been slowly gathering towards the direction of Heshan also began to disperse in various directions.

From what seemed to be a hopeless situation that turned into a favorable one, the Lang Son 3rd Battalion soldiers had managed to stop the assault of the evolved zombies. They began to launch their counter attacks.

Without a leader to direct them, the tens of thousands of evolved zombies mostly stayed where they were, staring blankly at space. There were some who were trampled by their escaping companions.

When Yue Zhong saw this, he heaved a sigh of relief. He supported the pilot of the helicopter as they slowly landed within the camp of the Lang Son 3rd Battalion.

The pilot looked at Yue Zhong with gratitude and said: "Many thanks to Leader for saving my life! I, Wang He, will never forget this!"

Yue Zhong patted his shoulder and chuckled: "Continue to work hard! Go and rest for now!"

Every single pilot was a valuable asset to Yue Zhong. They were even more precious than gold. There were only 12 of such pilots within his troops.

Compared to normal people, people like Wang He are easier to be trained to operate the Thunder Fighters. The moment Yue Zhong gained those Thunder Fighters, he would possess yet another powerful trump card.

Wang He nodded silently and swore to do his utmost for Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong then went to the front lines. Observing the hordes of zombies being torn and ripped apart by his side's weapons and soldiers, he knew that the outcome had been decided.

However, Yue Zhong was very clear that after the 2 battles at Bin

Qi City and Yan Zhou, his troops had been pushed to their limits. They could not continue to fight horde after horde. The first reason was because of their exhaustion, and the other was because these 2 battles had consumed 60% of his ammunition. Without ammunition, it would be impossible for his troops to contend against a horde of a million zombies. Even if they won, it would be at a terrible cost.

The intense battle continued until the 2nd day.

By then, Hu Yi had led the 1st, 4th and 7th Battalions to provide reinforcements. The battle lasted for an entire week before they finally eradicated the remaining tens of thousands of zombies.

They didn't use their heavy artillery, and in order to prevent as many casualties as possible and allow more troops to be enhanced, the flow of the battle progressed slowly.

However, since they made use of those tens of thousands of zombies, many of the soldiers had become Enhancers, and they gained decent levels as well. The majority of them reached level 10 or higher. After all, the zombies that had remained behind were at the very least evolved zombies of Level 10 and above.

After both Bin Qi City and Yan Zhou fell into Yue Zhong's hands, the entire Gui Ning City went into an uproar, as celebrations broke out everywhere. The respect and veneration towards Yue Zhong reached an all-time high.

Yue Zhong began moving batches of survivors over to Bin Qi City and Yan Zhou. In Yan Zhou alone, Yue Zhong had arranged for over 300,000 survivors to settle in. All the slaves and people from the Scum Battalion were deployed at Yan Zhou as well. Many of the survivors were put to work the moment they settled in.

At the same time, with Liu Xiao Cha as a weather forecast, Yue Zhong arranged for various Enhancer teams to begin sweeping the regions around Yan Zhou, Bin Qi City and Gui Ning City for resources and to clear out the remaining zombies.



On top of all that, Yue Zhong went to reorganize his troops again.

The 1st to 8th Battalion in Gui Ning City formed Guang Xi's 1st Regiment, and its Regiment Commander was Hu Yi. The 9th to the 16th Battalion, of which some were new ones that were recently established, became Guang Xi's 2nd Regiment with Wei Ning Guo as its Regiment Commander. Other than the 1st and 2nd Regiment, the Lang Son 3rd Battalion that had accumulated great merit in the operation this time were reformed into the Lang Son 3rd Brigade, with a whole group of Chinese soldiers mixed in.

After reorganizing, the troops began their training again. At the same time, companies would be sent out in waves and shifts on top of their training to battle zombies. This was to raise their combat strength.

As for the government, Yue Zhong didn't forget it as well. He had only been an ordinary university student prior to the apocalypse and did not have any ideas with regards to governance. He chose the previous mayor of Gui Ning City, Shen Ying to handle the government.

Many factions that overthrew the ruling powers would usually retain a few of the original members, one of the reasons was that these factions usually had no capable governing officers. Yue Zhong was the same, however, since he had faced such a situation in Long Hai City before, it was not a huge problem.

Since he had observed for a long while, Yue Zhong discovered that Shen Ying was actually a capable officer. He was usually low-key and strict on his kids. He also had experience in governing. Due to this, Yue Zhong reinstated him as the mayor and the main head of the cabinet, while getting Chen Yao to learn beside him.

At the end of the day, Yue Zhong had many experts that could fight and kill, but he really lacked talents in governance and leadership. Although Chen Yao was a woman, she was equally capable in both brains and brawn and was extremely outstanding.

Plus, she had her fair share of leadership in Vietnam and was of the few people that Yue Zhong trusted.

Under his rule, regardless of gender, as long as the person was capable, he would not hesitate to utilize them.

Under his rule, Bin Qi City, Gui Ning City and Yan Zhou began to bustle with life. Survivors in the city began to regain a glow in their faces, and their expressions were once again filled with hope.

Inside one of the largest military factories in Yan Zhou, Yue Zhong was walking around as Xin Jia Rou and Ji Qing Wu followed beside him as they conducted their inspection.

"Are you guys able to manufacture large transport carriers?" After listening to the report of the manager Lei Wang, Yue Zhong immediately asked.

Lei Wang was the chief engineer in one of Yan Zhou's factories prior to the apocalypse. He had been found in a villa's basement when Yue Zhong's army recovered Yan Zhou. When the troops had found him, he was almost starving to death. Even now, he still had a sallow look, as though the wind could topple him at any moment.

When he heard Yue Zhong's question, Lei Wang did not dare tarry with his answer, immediately replying: "We can't!! It's impossible. We lack the technology here. Even before the apocalypse, manufacturing any large carrier would be tough. Even just manufacturing the engine would not be possible."

Yue Zhong frowned when he heard it.

# Chapter 530: Evolving Liquid!

---

Without any large transport carriers, Yue Zhong would lack the means to deploy his troops throughout the country.

The speed of advance of the Kingdom of God was extremely fast, chasing up to before the apocalypse. It was mainly due to them possessing a large number of aerial transport and assault helicopters. With those, they could launch devastating attacks in all corners of the earth to obtain even more designs.

This time, if it wasn't for Yue Zhong's interference, the laser gun designs would have landed in the hands of the Kingdom of God, and they would be able to quickly manufacture laser guns, raising the overall might of their troops.

Yue Zhong also hoped to quickly produce huge transport aircrafts so that he could deploy his forces. After all, it was hard to send aid anywhere he wanted when there were zombies everywhere.

Yue Zhong kept his gaze fixed on Lei Wang and asked: "If we had to manufacture those large transport aircrafts, how many years would it take?"

Lei Wang hesitated a while before gritting his teeth and replied: "Leader, constructing an aircraft would require the support of a few key industrial sectors. It's not a simple matter with Yan Zhou's current state and technology. It would take at least 15 years.

When Yue Zhong heard that, he immediately dropped his hopes of constructing large aircrafts in Yan Zhou. 15 years of time, even the daylily would be cold, and his troops might already reach the coastal area.

Yue Zhong continued to ask: "What about unmanned drones?"

In the operation to conquer Bin Qi City and Yan Zhou, the UAVs had played a vital role, and were also very important with its non-combat functions.

Lei Wang pondered a while before replying carefully: "Gui Xi City has better facilities and equipment to build aerial technology compared to our Yan Zhou's facilities. We would need their equipment to begin work, otherwise it would be incredibly hard for us here at Yan Zhou."

It was Yue Zhong's turn to sink into his thoughts, before he pulled out his laser gun design and handed it to Lei Wang: "What about this?"

The moment Lei Wang received the designs, the information entered his brain, giving him the knowledge on its construction.

"Good stuff! If I had this before the apocalypse, I would have been rich!" Lei Wang gripped the design tightly in his hands, his eyes flashing with a look of excitement then pity. He was in the defense research sector and knew of the value of this laser gun design. It was something that could easily cause all current technology to be obsolete.

Yue Zhong looked at Lei Wang and frowned slightly before asking: "Is it possible?"

Lei Wang shook his head dejectedly: "No Leader, many of the components are not what Yan Zhou is capable of producing. Only the eastern or southern cities along the sea are capable of it. Only the main capitals possess the necessary tools, know-hows and manufacturing lines. However, with this design, it's not impossible to use some replacement parts so we should be able to produce one or two."

Yue Zhong then took out the Nucleus Energy Converter diagram and handed it to Lei Wang: "Ok, this one here, see if it's doable?"

"This!" When Lei Wang received the blueprint of the Nucleus Energy Converter, his face instantly changed. Every normal person knew how important energy was to a country, or even to an entire race. The USA had waged wars in the Middle East purely because of oil as an energy resource.

If this Nucleus Energy Converter could be produced, then Yue Zhong's establishment would possess a clean and renewable energy source. When coupled with the laser gun, it would raise the lethality of the laser guns and extend combat duration.

Lei Wang scrutinized the design carefully, obtaining some important information before saying: "Leader, if I can run some tests, I have confidence that I will be able to produce a prototype within a year. If you need large-scale production, I'm afraid that it would take 3 years. After all, we're lacking talents and are sort of starting from scratch here. Even if we had more details, it would still be hard."

Yue Zhong looked at Lei Wang indifferently and spoke: "This matter will be handled by you. Organize a team to begin your research, if you need people, I'll provide them. The same goes for resources. However, this must be kept confidential. You guys will go to the underground city and set up a lab there, understand?"

"Yes!" Lei Wang replied with respect, he knew the importance of the 2 designs, and that once they became a reality, Yue Zhong's faction would leap in strength.

With a single order from Yue Zhong, a highly secretive lab was constructed in the underground city. They began to gather specific talents. Although the lab could not compare with the Kingdom of God's, it was still highly advanced, and with the production of the 2 designs, the lab would gain an increase in research and development as well.

As the manager in charge of the lab, Lei Wang was naturally excited, and he could guess Yue Zhong's objectives and decided to give a suggestion: "Leader, although we can't produce the aircraft carriers yet, we still have the railroads. Should you decide to travel far, we can definitely station troops throughout Guang Xi with the help of the railroads."

When Yue Zhong heard it, his eyes lit up: "Right! The railroads!"

Yue Zhong had always been following the major highways and roads to travel towards cities. With Lei Wang's reminder, he remembered that the whole country was accessible by railroad.

If they gained control of the railroads, Yue Zhong could reach any corner of the country. He could then station his troops and advance from there.

Because of the existence of these railroads, China had not been as excited about the development of air travel. In times of peace, it was more than enough to use their rails for troops and resources to be transported anywhere that has a railroad and station.

As for the trains, since Gui Ning City, Bin Qi City and Yan Zhou were all in Yue Zhong's hands, he could utilize them anytime.

"But, there's still the possibility that the railroads were destroyed. That would be troublesome." Yue Zhong noticed the issue almost instantly.

Prior to the apocalypse, the railroads were indeed useful and could reach all parts of the country. However, because of the apocalypse, there might be some major tunnels or roads that were damaged, and it would pose a problem.

The rails break down easily, but building them was difficult.

Using the rails to get to the nearby cities would be easy, but to reach the coastal areas, if they were not careful, the troops would be lost to the tracks.

However, with Lei Wang's reminder, Yue Zhong could pour some attention to deploying some troops with the trains to protect the tracks around Gui Ning City, Bin Qi City and Yan Zhou.

If they could protect these vital channels, then his troops would be able to relocate easily between the 3 cities, using them as a centre point for branching outwards and attacking.

"Leader, the Snow Palace escaped." Right as Yue Zhong was prepping his troops to swallow the Snow Palace, he received the

sudden news.

Yue Zhong frowned: "When was this? Which direction did they escape to?"

The officer immediately replied: "3 days ago, they made their way towards He Xi City."

"They're smart, escaping so early." Yue Zhong chuckled.

His next target would have He Xi City anyway, so he decided to allow them the head start for now.

There was also a huge horde over at He Xi City, and if the Snow Palace ran there, they would have to clear those zombies. Their existence would help Yue Zhong attract the attention of the zombies first, thus Yue Zhong decided not to make things difficult for them for now.

Otherwise, it would just take an elite infantry brigade to eliminate the Snow Palace entirely. However, due to the Palace Master Shangguan Bing Xue being a powerful expert herself, he might lose a number of his troops.

"I've produced Ou Ming Ver. 2 Evolving Liquid. Come and get it."

When Yue Zhong was busy with settling the affairs of Yan Zhou, Bin Qi City and Gui Ning City, he received news from Ou Ming in Long An County.

Yue Zhong did not say another word and immediately got on his Swift Shadow Bike and rode straight for Long An County, all the way to Ou Ming's research lab.

The moment Yue Zhong entered the lab, he saw numerous scientists scurrying around conducting various experiments. Compared to the last time he was here, the whole place looked bigger, more spacious, and it was bustling with more people and equipment.

Yue Zhong was very clear on how talented Ou Ming was, and

hence he had provided a huge amount of resources for him.

The moment he saw Yue Zhong, Ou Ming held up a vial: "You're here. This is Ou Ming Ver 2. Evolving Liquid. Upon consuming it, Enhancers with a total attribute points of less than 120 would gain +5 in all 6 attributes. Enhancers with more than 120 points would gain +1 in all attributes. It is only effective once. Further consumption would have no reaction. The main ingredient is the Snake Birth Fruit and the sap from the Green Spirit Vine plant. The research is complete, and with the ingredients, we can begin mass production."

"Truly a good item!" Yue Zhong eyed the vial and his eyes lit up. With this liquid, he could forcefully increase the strength of his soldiers. Of course, the effect of the Ver 1. Evolving Liquid was better, but with the core ingredient being the brain of a Type 3 Mutant Beast, it was a problem to manufacture.



# Chapter 531: Railroad!

---

"Anything else?" Yue Zhong kept the vial in his storage ring, before asking Ou Ming. He was very certain that this genius in front of him had more surprises in store.

Ou Ming revealed a proud smile as he handed a green vial: "This is my new creation: the Ou Ming Ver. 3 Evolving Liquid. Administering this will cause a normal person to instantly become an Evolver. The main component is still the Snake Birth Fruit, but one single pink fruit mixed with other Mutant Plants' sap can produce 20 such vials.

"Amazing!!" When Yue Zhong heard Ou Ming's words, his eyes lit up and he could not help but praise Ou Ming.

Yue Zhong had established communications with Long Hai City for some time. When he left, the Snake Birth Fruit Tree had been consuming large number of zombie corpses, and plenty flowers had already bore fruit. Over a hundred green Snake Birth Fruits had also mutated to the pink variant.

The impact of this Ver 3 Evolving Liquid would play a huge part in strengthening the troops. As long as Yue Zhong could transport the 100 pink fruits over, there would be 2,000 such vials, allowing 2,000 people to become Evolvers.

Evolvers were not invincible, but compared to Enhancers, they had large advantages. Many Enhancers hoped to become Evolvers.

Ou Ming continued excitedly: "Furthermore, I've discovered that if a naturally awakened Evolver were to consume the Snake Birth Fruit, it would awaken a 2nd evolved attribute, gaining a huge boost. Naturally awakened Evolvers are truly the favored of the heavens."

"Oh!" Yue Zhong's heart skipped a beat. If this was the case, then he could make use of the fruit to give rise to more dual-attribute

Evolvers.

The occurrence of natural Evolvers was extremely rare, a mere 1 in 10,000. Even Yue Zhong was not a natural Evolver. Those who awakened naturally were truly favored by the heavens and they would become good at what they do easily. They also had more potential to evolve compared to others.

Ou Ming took out a gold case and handed it to Yue Zhong: "These are 500 vials of the Ver 3. Enough to produce 500 Evolvers.

This time, when Ji Qing Wu and her party came, they had brought 25 Snake Birth Fruits, fully utilized in Ou Ming's research. In the end, he produced 500 such vials.

Yue Zhong's mood was greatly elevated, and he viewed Ou Ming more favourably: "Great! Ou Ming, you have done well this time. What would you like?"

Ou Ming's face flashed with a feverish passion: "I need the corpse of a Type 3 Mutant Beast, fresh blood, blood essence, brains. The bodies of those new L4s, L3s and Devourers as well. The best would be to include new or recent samples of any Mutant Plants, for our lab to have priority over them.

Since Yue Zhong had established 3 major bases, he naturally had research labs in all 3 as well. Each of these labs were running their own research into the Mutant Plants, Mutant Beasts and zombies. Ou Ming was expressly requesting for first priority over the samples.

Yue Zhong nodded and promised: "Fine!"

Ou Ming had shown ample results to Yue Zhong, he naturally would adhere to this talent's requests.

Ou Ming regained his calm and waved Yue Zhong away somewhat impatiently: "Alright! You can go now. I still have experiments to get back to."

Yue Zhong was speechless towards Ou Ming's attitude. As the

leader of Gui Ning City, Yan Zhou and Bin Qi City, many people would clamor to speak to him. Ou Ming was actually disinterested. He was not to be blamed anyway, since he was like this from the start.

Before the apocalypse, people of the research world viewed their field as the utmost priority, and most were crude or blunt. If it wasn't for the right backer, even with his talents, Ou Ming might not have been able to exercise his abilities, due to his poor communication style.

Yue Zhong chuckled lightly, and shook his head before leaving.

Even with the weather forecast Liu Xiao Cha, after going through intense battles, Yue Zhong's army could not afford to launch another expansion mission.

Hence, over at the Guang Xi region, Yue Zhong tried to ramp up the production of ammunition, while deploying small troops out to clear the zombies in the surrounding areas.

Yue Zhong had only managed to deal with the zombies in the those 3 cities, but in truth, there were over 4 million zombies still scattered around the 3 cities in the various settlements.

At the same time, after Yue Zhong had obtained the Ver. 3 Evolving Liquid, he could focus on establishing a form of economy and currency like that of Long Hai City. A dollar would be able to exchange for 1 jin of maize. Since he had conquered the 3 cities, Yue Zhong had obtained a huge amount of resources. He could take them out to sell, and drive the economy again.

Killing an ordinary zombie and bringing the corpse back to exchange nets one 1 dollar. Killing a Type 1 zombie would net 50 dollars. Type 2 zombies went for 500 dollars and Type 3 zombies were at 5,000 dollars. The exchange rate for a Type 4 zombie was 50,000 dollars.

The exchange rate for nucleus went for the following: Ordinary

at 10 dollars. Type 2 at 1,000 dollars, Type 3 at 100,000 dollars, Type 4 at 1 million dollars. Type 5 Nuclei were worth a 10 million dollars.

Furthermore, Ou Ming Ver. 2 and Ver. 3 Evolving Liquids and Type 3 Mutant Beasts packed into cans were put up for sale. A Ver. 2 would required 500,000 dollars, and a Ver.3 required 10 million dollars. Type 3 Mutant Beast meat went for 1 million a can.

When the survivors in Yue Zhong's cities saw the items placed for sale, everyone went crazy. A few teams were formed, intending to take risks. Many became hunters, killing zombies and Mutants Beasts in exchange for cash.

What were Evolvers after all? They were the favored of the heavens, and were experts at the pinnacle. The moment one became an Evolver, as long as the person wasn't trash, and the evolved attribute wasn't weak, it would be harder for them to lose in their fights. Furthermore, the person could learn a new skill during evolution, and gained a huge amount of enhancements to their constitutions. Everyone wanted to become an Evolver, transforming into the doted children of the heavens.

Under the enticement of the prices, the various hunting teams went on a rampage, clearing a large amount of zombies and Mutant Beasts, bringing the corpses back. This ensured a steady stream of nuclei and corpses landing in Yue Zhong's hands.

The Central Dollars that Yue Zhong issued soon became the recognized currency that everyone used. Military and government personnel also stopped doing barter trades, and began dealing in the Central Dollar.

The Guang Xi region could be said to have finally embarked on some sign of society again. The bartering stage had been popular because nobody could trust the previous forms of government, until Yue Zhong came into the picture.

If it had been earlier, not many would have accepted the new

currency. People would just take it as toilet paper. However, since he had already conquered 3 cities, and obtained a huge amount of resources, his reputation and prestige was at an all-time high. Coupled with the allure of the Ver. 2 and Ver. 3 Evolving Liquids as well as Type 3 Beast Meat being priced with the currency, everyone would definitely take up the currency.

There was an additional point, which was that compared to barter, the survivors were more used to having a fixed price on items. Due to circumstances, they had no choice but to barter. Who would use the useless money from prior to the apocalypse anyway.

After issuing the currency and having stabilized the situation in Guang Xi, the region began to recover swiftly. The survivors were not as hopeless as before, and their eyes were filled with an expectant look for the future.

Yue Zhong continued to be at Guang Xi for a while longer, ensuring that things were truly in order, before taking a company of elite soldiers from the 2nd Brigade as they boarded the train back to Long Hai City.

On the rail tracks, a train chugged along, within, many soldiers dressed in the [Raven] combat uniform and Type 2 Mutant Beast hides sat.

At the front carriage, Yue Zhong, Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao were together.

Yao Yao was holding a handheld device as she played games, while Ji Qing Wu was reading a book.

Travelling on the tracks was risky, with unknown dangers, hence the train could only proceed at 20km/hour. There was the danger of getting derailed. Furthermore, there might be Mutant Beasts and high level zombies along the way. It was a sort of exploration for Yue Zhong, to determine the potential problems.

Yue Zhong eyed Ji Qing Wu reading her book quietly, and her quiet but elegant aura caused a stir in his heart: "If I had known, I would have brought Yu Xin out."

For safety's sake, the speed of 20km/hour was a sort of torture to people like Yue Zhong who could not sit still. Plus, there was no form of entertainment on the train, and he was regretting not bringing Xin Jia Rou or Ning Yu Xin and the rest.

Ji Qing Wu was extremely beautiful, but she and Yue Zhong had not gotten past that barrier, and he could only look at this absolute beauty in front of him but not being able to do anything.

After hesitating, Yue Zhong took the initiative to strike up a conversation: "What're you reading?"

A slight smile appeared on Ji Qing Wu's lips as she replied: "Qiong Yao's Plum Blossom Scar"

# Chapter 532: Ji Qing Wu Heavily Injured!

---

Yue Zhong hardened his skin and continued to chat: "Plum Blossom Scar? An interesting novel."

Truthfully, Yue Zhong had never even seen the book nor read romance novels. Compared to reading, he would rather kill zombies and Mutant Beasts.

Ji Qing Wu laughed coquettishly, as she moved her hand away from the cover, revealing the name: "I'm just kidding, it's On War."

Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief. He had seen the book a few times before. Like this, at least he could have some topics to talk about. If it were some romance novel, then he would be grasping at straws.

All of a sudden, the train shuddered, and the sharp sound of brakes being slammed sounded. The train came to a halt.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed and he shot to the front of the train.

Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao had also moved at the first moment, following closely behind Yue Zhong.

"What happened?" Yue Zhong immediately asked when he came to the carriage.

"Leader, there's a monster in front." The driver pointed and told Yue Zhong.

In front, about 200 metres away from the tracks, there was a group of Type 2 Ferocious Apes charging over, each of them towering at 4m.

A herd of Mutant Wild Boars and Mutant Cows were being chased by the Type 2 Ferocious Apes.

As those beasts were running, the tracks beneath their feet were twisted. They could no longer support the train on its journey.

Yue Zhong watched on helplessly, and sighed: "As expected, if we

want to make use of the tracks, we have to clear the entire region of beasts and zombies, otherwise it will be impossible."

The tracks were truly convenient, but likewise, they were vulnerable and susceptible to damages. Yue Zhong would have to arrange for troops to protect the tracks to ensure the continued usage.

"Get down, and get rid of them." Yue Zhong eyed those Type 2 Mutant Beasts and ordered.

Under his orders, the squad of elite soldiers immediately got off and began to launch an assault towards the Mutant Wild Boars, Mutant Cows, and Type 2 Ferocious Apes.

This squad of soldiers were already all Evolvers, and each of them were at least above Level 40. Their combat prowess was strong.

A bright flash appeared from the hands of one of the soldiers, and he waved. A huge blade made out of wind appeared and sliced through the Mutant Beast horde, before lunging for one of the Type 2 Ferocious Ape's head, slicing it off in a huge shower of blade.

One of the soldier wielded a Bronze Bow, and with a radiating light from his hands, a number of bone arrows shot towards the horde of Mutant Beasts, piercing the beasts one by one.

Another soldier grabbed his huge mace with a savage expression and charged into the midst of the Mutant Beasts. He swung wildly and pummeling the heads of the Mutant Beasts in a cruel fashion.

Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao also shot forwards, their aim being the group of Type 2 Ferocious Apes.

This time, there were about 10 Type 2 Ferocious Apes, and to Ji Qing Wu and Yao Yao who were high level Enhancers, only these Type 2 Mutant Beasts could provide them with enough experience.

Yue Zhong stood one side and watched as his subordinates slaughtered the Mutant Beasts, without indication of lending a



helping hand.

These Mutant Beasts were too low leveled, Yue Zhong would not gain anything from killing them, hence he left them for his subordinates, empowering them.

These soldiers under Yue Zhong were truly efficient killing machines, finishing off the Mutant Beasts in a matter of minutes.

At this time, a huge shadow loomed over in the sky, as a huge bird with a wingspan of over 80m suddenly soared down, making a grab for the little loli Yao Yao.

"Level 95 Mutant Beast: Type 4 Flame Bird. Tyrant of the skies, extremely ferocious and terrifying."

"Careful!" Yue Zhong shouted out and activated his Shadow Steps and charged towards Yao Yao's direction.

Yao Yao had just caught a glimpse of the massive claw of the Type 4 Flame Bird, when Ji Qing Wu beside her lashed out with a kick, sending Yao Yao flying back 7 to 8 metres away.

At the next moment, the sharp claws of the Flame Bird pierced the chest of Ji Qing Wu, even through the Type 2 Ferocious Ape she was fighting, before flying towards the sky.

Ji Qing Wu's face instantly turned pale, as she coughed up a large amount of blood. There was a huge bloody wound in her chest as well.

"Big Sis Qing Wu!!! No!!!!" Seeing this, Yao Yao who was kicked away immediately screamed out in a heart-wrenching manner. Her expressionless face was contorted in fear.

Yao Yao had grown close to only Ji Qing Wu, and because of this, she had joined the Special Forces. In times of peace, she and Ji Qing Wu were as close as actual sisters, and Ji Qing Wu herself watched over the growth of this little girl like an elder sister. She had also unhesitatingly sent Yao Yao out of harm's way, sacrificing herself. Yao Yao was afraid that she would lose this one person

that was the closest to her and the one she looked up to the most. Even Yue Zhong who saved her could only place number 2.

"AHH YOU BEAST! WHAT HAVE YOU DONE TO MY WOMAN?!!" Yue Zhong saw Ji Qing Wu pierced with the claw of the Type 4 Flame Bird and his eyes turned bloodshot as he screamed. He immediately conjured out 2 Devil Flame jets, expending 100 Spirit and 30 Stamina. The jets propelled him like a cannon towards the body of the Type 4 Flame Bird.

At almost the same instant, Yue Zhong knocked into the body of the Type 4 Flame Bird, and he grabbed onto the feathers.

The Flame Bird flapped its wings, and it soared upwards with a terrifying gust of wind. It then shot towards the distance with a Mach 2 speed, disappearing from its original spot in a flash.

"What do we do? Leader had been brought away by the Type 4 Flame Bird!" One of the elite soldiers eyed the distance and frowned.

The captain sighed: "Quickly report to headquarters."

Yao Yao looked towards the distance and the pool of blood from Ji Qing Wu, and kneeled down. She began crying profusely, as the tears flowed down her cheeks: "Wait for me Big Sis, I'll definitely come and find you! I'll find you... Yue Zhong, please, please save my sister. Please save my sister. I'll listen to you in the future!"

Yue Zhong was currently on the body of the Flame Bird, and he was blanketed by the roaring winds. Fortunately for his 10 times strength, he held on steadfastly, otherwise he would have been blown off.

"Please don't die.. Please don't die!! Heavens, as long as you're listening, save Qing Wu's life, I'll build a totem for you!" Yue Zhong continued to brave the winds as he slowly climbed downwards, praying hard for the first time.

Yue Zhong never believed in gods, only in himself. Even after he

heard the voice of the one claiming to be 'God' at the start of the apocalypse, he continued to only believe in himself. Regardless of the situation, he would always find a way. However, this time he was really out of options. He could only beg in his prayers, hoping for a miracle.

The Flame Bird continued to fly through the air at its Mach 2 speed, and the opposing winds were as sharp as knives. Even with Yue Zhong's constitution, he came close to being blown off a few times. If he were to fall from such a height, only death awaits.

Yue Zhong continued to brave the winds as he climbed towards the claws. He looked at Ji Qing Wu and his eyes turned red.

In front of his eyes, Ji Qing Wu's entire chest had been penetrated, and the claw had also went through her spine.

If it wasn't for her constitution exceeding a normal person, she would have died long ago. Even so, she was on the brink of death. Her blood continued to flow from her grievous wound, and when she saw Yue Zhong, she managed to stay awake, although her consciousness was fading.

"You...shouldn't be...here....cough..." Ji Qing Wu's eyes flashed as she looked at Yue Zhong, barely managing a sentence before she coughed out more blood.

Tears flowed down involuntarily from Yue Zhong's eyes as he shouted out with some madness: "Don't speak! Don't speak! I want you to live! You must live on, you hear me Ji Qing Wu?! You must not die! You cannot die! I like you, I love you!! Please, live on for me!! Please!!"

Yue Zhong had never spoken those words to any woman, and in truth, when he had first seen Ji Qing Wu, he was already enraptured by this beautiful woman who was full of confidence and grace, and her charming aura when she fought. He had always kept the feeling in his heart, and the constant flow of beautiful girls who had embraced him caused him to put the feeling aside.

Until today, as he watched her about to die, he couldn't hold back any more, and the usually fearless him began to feel afraid to the point that he was crying. Any other day, it would be extremely embarrassing.

# Chapter 533: Biological Armor!

---

Ji Qing Wu heard Yue Zhong's confession and the corners of her mouth lifted slightly. This was what she wanted to hear the most, and it was all she needed. Her lips trembled, as though she wanted to speak.

"Don't speak!! Please, don't say anything!! Look at me! I'll definitely save you!! I'll save you!!" Yue Zhong became anxious when he saw that Ji Qing Wu was struggling to speak, and stopped her frantically, while trying to climb towards her.

The Yue Zhong now did not have the bearing of a cold, ruthless tyrant, nor was he the same leader that viewed survivors like ants. He was just a pitiful person struggling to save his loved one, trying his best to snatch back the ball from the death god's court.

Since Ji Qing Wu's spine had been pierced through together with her chest, her injuries were critical. Yue Zhong was worried that she might expend her energy to speak, and lose her strength to hang on.

She had a smile on her face as she watched Yue Zhong struggle to reach her. Her heart was filled with a warm feeling, and she could see that this was Yue Zhong's true feelings for her. She coughed once more, and a mouthful of blood was expelled, before her eyes started to dim, no longer seeing Yue Zhong clearly.

"Yue Zhong!! I love you! Cough!" Just as Yue Zhong reached her, he heard her using her last breath to slowly speak those words, before coughing a mouthful of blood. Her body trembled slightly, then she went limp.

"Ah!!!! Don't die!! Don't die!! Don't die!!! Please, I'm begging you!!! Open your eyes, please!! Open your eyes!!" He was about 7m away from her. He used all his strength to drag himself towards her, and fumbled with his treasures. He poured the Life-Saving Grass, Ou Ming Ver. 1, Ver. 2, Ver. 3, the 13 recently ripened Purple Jade

Fruits into her mouth. Even the Type 3 Blood Essence he had been keeping was not spared.

The countless valuable treasures entered Ji Qing Wu's mouth, causing her body to shudder slightly. Her body also became less cold.

"I need to calm down!! Be calm!! I will tear this beast apart. But Qing Wu cannot remain like this. What do I do?" He heaved a slight sigh of relief when he felt her body regaining some colour. However, he was still at a loss on her situation.

The injuries to Ji Qing Wu's chest and abdomen were serious, and if Yue Zhong were to suffer such injuries, it was also unknown if he would survive them or not. Ji Qing Wu's Vitality and Endurance were all vastly below Yue Zhong, surviving would truly be hard to say.

"White Bones come out!" With a thought, White Bones stepped out of the nether hole in mid air, its huge hands grabbing on to the claw of the huge bird.

"Secure her body, don't let it move about." Yue Zhong pointed at Ji Qing Wu and ordered.

White Bones immediately shot out a few bone spikes, locking Ji Qing Wu's body in place.

Yue Zhong eyed Ji Qing Wu and gritted his teeth before climbing towards the head of the Type 4 Flame Bird. If he did not kill this beast, Ji Qing Wu would definitely die. Killing it might mean only a 1 in 10 chance of survival, but at least there was a chance.

Yue Zhong climbed up along the body of the monstrous bird, before he expended 100 points of Spirit to conjure a Devil Flame Spear that was 8m long.

After evolving the skill to its Second Order stage, Yue Zhong's expenditure to form a spear shot up from 50 to 100 points. However, this new spear that required a 100 points to prepare was

at least 6 times mightier than the previous one.

The Type 4 Flame Bird seemed to have detected Yue Zhong's strong killing intent. It twisted its body in a bid to peck at him. The blow almost caused him to lose his grip. Yue Zhong grabbed the back of the Flame Bird tightly, and the Devil Flame Spear in his hands became like a shooting star as it shot towards the head of the Flame Bird.

The resulting explosion was extremely gruesome. With such a terrifying strength of the Devil Flame, the combustion blasted a huge hole in the head of the Flame Bird, incinerating at least half its brains.

The Flame Bird might be a Type 4 Mutant Beast, but its strength laid in its Mach 2 speed. With that alone, as long as it managed to launch an attack, even Yue Zhong would be heavily injured. However, its defence was not as tough, and it was at most capable of defending against 12.7mm rounds.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 77...."

"Congratulations on achieving Level 78, you've gained 2 attribute points to be allocated."

The moment the Flame Bird's head was blasted by Yue Zhong, a huge orb of experience flowed into his body, causing him to instantly shoot up 2 levels, until he reached Level 78.

At the same time, a Blue Treasure Box dropped out, and fell downward.

Before it could plunge any further, White Bones fired out a small bone net to retrieve the Blue Treasure Box.

With the death of the Flame Bird, its massive body began to plunge towards the earth as well.

"Remove her from the claw! Bring her to me!" Yue Zhong ordered White Bones.

White Bones quickly removed Ji Qing Wu's body from the claw, and at that moment a large amount of blood and some fleshy parts flowed out.

White Bones didn't seem to notice, and directly extended out its bone spike to deliver her to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had already worn a parachute, and he grabbed Ji Qing Wu, waving his right hand and a transparent silk shot out, sticking to the body of Type 4 Flame Bird.

Yue Zhong hugged Ji Qing Wu tightly, as he gazed downwards with a calm look. When there was a distance of about 1.5km from the ground, he opened the parachute. At the same time, he activated the Gravity Manipulation, lowering the weight of himself and Ji Qing Wu by half.

The body of the Flame Bird plummet straight down, exploding in bits and pieces upon impact.

"This is an island?" Yue Zhong hugged Ji Qing Wu as he surveyed the surroundings, only to discover that the land he was about to land on was only about 1km wide, and there didn't seem to be any greenery. It was as though it was like a coral reef in the middle of a sea.

Yue Zhong carried Ji Qing Wu as they landed gently on the island. He retrieved a blanket and placed Ji Qing Wu on it. Seeing the huge wound in her chest, he felt slightly helpless.

Although she had already taken in all those precious medicines and enhancements, her eyes were shut tight, and she was still in her coma.

"What should I do? Oh right! There's still that!!" As he was about to wring his hands in exasperation, he remembered the corpse of the Type 4 Flame Bird. He went over and retrieved the nuclei that looked like a ball of flame condensed into a physical form, as well as the blood essence, that was fiery to the touch as well.



He came to Ji Qing Wu's side, and with the extremely priceless Type 4 Flame Bird Blood Essence in his mouth, he bit it and broke it apart, before bringing his lips to hers. He then guided the flow of the energy towards her chest.

The blood essence from a Type 4 Mutant Beast was not ordinary, the moment it entered abdomen, it transformed into a warm energy source that began to nourish her body.

Nourished by the blood essence, Ji Qing Wu's wounds stopped bleeding. However the gaping hole and shredded organs were not something that could just repair instantly. These were wounds beyond the help of the blood essence.

A blood essence could enhance a person's constitution and Vitality, but it could not regenerate body parts.

"What can I do!? Oh right! There's still that!! Who knows, there might be something useful!" Yue Zhong eyed Ji Qing Wu's pained expression and began to panic again, before he opened up the Blue Treasure Box dropped by the Flame Bird. With a bright flash, a strange humanoid equipment about 2m appeared in front of it. There were strange blue lines running around the machine like veins. There was also a huge gem right in the middle.

"Level 7 Treasure: Biological Armor Type 1. A cosmic warfare battle armor, providing high defence and allows user to fight under extreme conditions. Provides enough oxygen. Also possesses the ability to automatically heal user. Requires Mutant Beast Nuclei to operate."

"Level 7 Treasure! This is actually a Level 7 Treasure." Yue Zhong was momentarily stunned when he saw the Biological Armor Type 1. It was the first time he came across a Level 7 Treasure. After all, he had fought so hard and the highest grade of equipment he ever got was his trusty and useful storage ring, which was a Level 6 Treasure. This Biological Armor was actually higher by a grade, it must truly be exceptional.

Yue Zhong reached out to touch the Biological Armor, and with a thought, the front gem opened up to reveal a slot, which was meant for the nuclei of Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong placed the Type 4 Flame Bird Nuclei into the compartment, and closed the gem cover. The entire equipment shuddered, before coming to life.

"Open up!" Yue Zhong ordered the Biological Armor.

The Biological Armor opened up and Yue Zhong carefully placed Ji Qing Wu within it.

After the lid closed, it immediately began reparation works on her body.

"Restoration in progress! Calculating... User is currently on the brink of death, in order to fully restore user, it would take approximately 90 Earth days. During restoration, the armor cannot be used in combat, and it would be in a sealed state." A line of text appeared on the lid of the Biological Armor.

# Chapter 534: Type 5 Mutant Beast!

---

Seeing that line of information, Yue Zhong finally heaved a sigh of relief. He then began to survey his surroundings carefully.

"The island is moving!" As he looked around, he could feel it in his bones. Countless ripples were radiating outwards from the reef-like island beneath him.

"Could this island be an actual behemoth-type Sea Mutant Beast?" Yue Zhong's heart turned cold as he looked at his feet.

"The Eyes of Perception must be targeted at a body part. To know for sure, I can only head to the edges of the island."

He pondered for a while, before heading over to the corpse of the Type 4 Mutant Flame Bird and began to cut up its body.

It was purely by luck that Yue Zhong had been able to kill such a tyrannical Type 4 Mutant Beast. If it had been a frontal clash, he would have been instantly decimated by its speed. Even the Shield of Light and the Bronze Spiritual Bell would not have been of much use.

Unfortunately for the Type 4 Mutant Flame Bird, it belonged to the low-defence category of Mutant Beasts, that was how it was finished in one blow by Yue Zhong that had been grabbing onto its body.

Yue Zhong began to let the blood out of the corpse of the Flame Bird, pouring them into large containers before keeping them inside his storage ring. He separated the blood, brain pulp, brain matter, bone marrows and anything that he could squeeze out inside his storage ring. After that, he used his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade to saw off those large talons.

The talons of the Flame Bird had easily pierced the Type 3 Mutant Beast Hide on Ji Qing Wu's body. That was actually incredible, considering that not even cannons can damage the

hides of Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

The Flame Bird had an 80m-long wingspan, and its talons were at least a metre. Even the Black Tooth Blade and Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade that were among Yue Zhong's best weapons could not match the sharpness of the talon.

Yue Zhong intended to forge a sharp machete from the talons. Using it might not gain any enhancements from killing his enemies, but it would be a powerful weapon to utilize.

After harvesting all that he could from the corpse, he hesitate a little while, before carefully proceeding towards one direction to the edge of the island.

"Level 118 Mutant Beast: Type 5 Dragon Whale Beast. It is of the Overlord-Level of the Seas, and it is an incredibly terrifying Mutant Beast."

Yue Zhong had just taken a look and began to edge back carefully. He was afraid of being noticed by that Type 5 Mutant Beast.

In such a vast ocean where there was no end in sight, the moment this Type 5 Dragon Whale Beast entered the waters, Yue Zhong would be in trouble.

The water bodies of the Earth were larger than the land mass, and the marine biology in the waters would definitely be more diverse and larger. Under such circumstances, the threat of these marine creatures were at least a hundred times more dangerous than on land. If Yue Zhong were to enter the waters, he would immediately be in danger. This was because his trump card Devil Flame was of no use in the water.

Yue Zhong returned to the biological armor containing Ji Qing Wu to stand guard.

The Type 5 Dragon Whale Beast was an overlord within the seas, and only other Type 5 Mutant Beasts would dare provoke it. No lower-rank Beasts would be silly to get too close.

Yue Zhong stood like this on the 'island', not able to utilize any of his skills. He could only wait obediently on the behemoth's back with the biological armor on it, while reading a book out of boredom.

Within Yue Zhong's ring, there was a large supply of water and food, more than enough to last him for a year.

After an indeterminate number of days, a huge wave suddenly swept towards the back of the Type 5 Dragon Whale Beast.

"What's going on?"

Before Yue Zhong had the chance to react, he was swept off the back of the Type 5 Dragon Whale Beast, and plunged into the deep blue sea.

The biological armor Ji Qing Wu had always been bound to Yue Zhong's back with some spider silk.

The moment he entered the water, the biological armor followed suit.

As Ji Qing Wu was inside the pod, Yue Zhong could not afford to keep the pod into his storage ring, instead, keeping her outside.

Upon submerging into the waters, he saw the beast which was at least a thousand metres long, with a jaw full of sharp teeth, currently engaged in a clash with a huge shark at least 800m long. Both titans were currently snapping at and biting each other viciously. With them at the centre, the resulting waves of their clash were constantly rippling out, churning the waters.

"Level 113 Mutant Beast: Type 5 Mutant Tiger Shark. One of the kings in the waters, its nature is extremely aggressive."

Yue Zhong saw the beasts engaged in mutual slaughter and hurriedly allowed the waves to carry him away from the vicinity. If it was on land, then it was a different matter. However, since they were helpless in the waters, he didn't dare stay to play the fisherman. If he was not careful, he might end up being finished

off by the 2 behemoths.

Right after he had floated about a hundred metres away, his position was locked on by a huge Mutant Shark, and it immediately swam for him.

"Level 46 Mutant Beast: Mutant Shark. A water-type mutant beast."

Although Yue Zhong possessed a body that was 10 times more powerful than a person, he was unable to utilize his maximum potential in water. Even if his speed now exceeded the world champion prior to the apocalypse, he could not possibly out-swim the Mutant Shark.

In barely a few breaths, the Mutant Shark had reached Yue Zhong and was opening its jaws to chomp down on Yue Zhong.

Before he was about to be bit, Yue Zhong hurriedly activated his Clone Technique, and an identical clone appeared in the waters.

Seeing the appearance of one more prey, the Mutant Shark was momentarily confused, before it went for the one closer to it, and snapped its jaws.

On that clone, there was some spider silk that Yue Zhong had laid beforehand. With a thought, he retracted the silk, pulling himself towards the jaws of the Mutant Shark.

The Mutant Shark saw another prey appearing by its jaws and opened them to bite again.

Yue Zhong immediately casted his Gravity Manipulation, causing a 2-fold gravitational force to weigh down on the Mutant Shark. The beast instantly sunk slightly, its jaws snapping on nothing.

Yue Zhong took the chance to get on the head of the Mutant Shark, using his spider silk to wrap around its body. He then unleashed a single punch with all his strength towards the head of the beast. The hammer-like blow caused the body of the Mutant Shark to shudder.

Because of that blow, the Mutant Shark writhed in pain, trying to shake Yue Zhong off its back.

His fingers dug into the head of the Mutant Shark like claws, while he wrapped his legs around the body. He then proceeded to pummel the Mutant Shark's head viciously.

Although it was difficult to unleash one's strength due to the resistance in water, Yue Zhong's constitution already exceeded a normal person by 10 times. His Strength had already exceeded even some Mutant Beasts, and his blows were a considerable threat.

After close to a 100 blows, the Mutant Shark was punched silly and the spider silk was constantly wearing down the Stamina of the beast .

After struggling for a while, its body went limp helplessly, and it spat out some blood.

Yue Zhong quickly made use of the opportunity to add a point to his Tamer Technique, before casting it on the Mutant Shark.

Under the forceful suppression from the Level 4 Tamer Technique, the Mutant Shark which was not even at its Type 2 stage was brought under Yue Zhong's control smoothly.

He heaved a sigh of relief, and patted its body. With a thought, it directly shot through the water towards the surface like a jet.

When they broke through the surface, Yue Zhong exhaled deeply. The fight with the Mutant Shark had taken 15 minutes. If it wasn't for his high Vitality, he would definitely not have been able to hang on.

Yue Zhong rode on the Mutant Shark before handing a Type 2 Nuclei to the shark and said: "From today, you're called Little Sharkie then."

The Mutant Shark gobbled up the nuclei and expressed its joy through their telepathic connection.

To Little Sharkie, a Type 2 Nuclei was the best form of nutrition. It was already a high-level Mutant Beast within the waters, once it digested the nuclei, it could possibly evolve to a Type 2 Mutant Beast anytime.

Yue Zhong gave an order to Little Sharkie: "Take me to the nearest land!"

Receiving his orders, Little Sharkie shot towards the north-east direction with its maximum speed. Although it had suffered when it was pummeled by Yue Zhong earlier, the Type 2 Nuclei was a sort of nourishment and it was already recovering.

Normal sharks could only swim at a speed of about 40km/hour, and it was only for a short time. Little Sharkie was a Mutant Beast and it was able to hit 60km/hour, or maintain a speed of 40km/hour for at least 12 hours.

Little Sharkie swam for 12 hours straight before it finally brought Yue Zhong to land. It then leaped out of the water onto land, curling its body as if it was dead.

Only Yue Zhong knew that Little Sharkie was currently evolving towards its Type 2 stage.

Yue Zhong glanced at Little Sharkie, ordering White Bones to stand guard over it, while he carried Ji Qing Wu and the biological armor she was in towards the inner parts of land.



# Chapter 535: Japan!

---

Yue Zhong came to a small town, only to discover that it was overrun with tall, wild grass. There were all sorts of abandoned vehicles, and not a single soul was in sight. There were only zombies in groups shambling about. On both sides of the streets, there were various stores with hiragana and katakana characters.

Yue Zhong realized where he was.

"This is Japan. Did we actually come this far?"

He looked around and strided towards the town. With his enhancement level and combat strength, killing a 1000 zombies wasn't a problem anymore, it would just expend a huge amount of Stamina.

When Yue Zhong stepped into town, the huge group of zombies were attracted by his sounds and scent, and began to shamble over.

He waved his huge Black Tooth Blade, slicing the zombies in front of him into 2. As they come forward, they would be casually dealt with.

Just as he was about to reach the center, there was the sound of glass breaking. 2 speedy shadows leaped out suddenly and rushed towards him.

The huge Black Tooth Blade slashed out twice in quick succession, as 2 cold blade beams caused the 2 S2s to be sliced apart, blood splattering everywhere. A Level 3 Skill Book: Agility Solidification appeared in Yue Zhong's hands.

Strength Solidification, Agility Solidification, such strengthening skill books appeared more commonly. In comparison, Devil Flame, Plant Manipulation, Ice Manipulation, etc, such skills that were powerful offensively were only dropped from hunting high-level Mutant Beasts or zombies. Even then, the chances were slim.

"Tasukete! Tasukete! (Help!)"

As Yue Zhong was waving his Black Tooth Blade about to slice the zombies, an anxious cry or help sounded from a supermarket.

"Human? Japanese?" Yue Zhong frowned and looked towards the direction. He saw a huge supermarket and up on the 2nd level, there was a young high school female student. Her hair was long and black, tied in a ponytail. Her eyes were bright and large, her bountiful chest threatening to burst out from her sailor-like uniform. She was currently screaming to get Yue Zhong's attention.

"Should I save her? Ah, what the heck, having a local is better."

Yue Zhong hesitated before walking over.

There were 5 S2s and 2 L2s as well as over a dozen other ordinary zombies gathered in front of the gate. They immediately pounced towards Yue Zhong when they saw him.

He waved his weapon about, easily taking care of them in a matter of seconds.

Within the supermarket, there were a dozen ordinary zombies that were once the employees roaming about. He took care of them and directly headed to the 2nd level, kicking the door wide open.

When the Japanese student saw him, her face revealed a pleasant look of surprise, as she bowed 90 degrees, and greeted him with respect: "Arigatou! Thank you!"

Yue Zhong eyed the student and asked directly: "Do you speak Chinese?"

Hearing his words, the female student immediately became flustered. It was obvious that she couldn't.

He sighed lightly in his heart. Chinese was after all not like English, which was the world's most common language. If he hadn't learnt the Language Proficiency skill, it would have been a nightmare to communicate with the student.

Yue Zhong continued: "I'm Yue Zhong! I'm from China, what's your name?"

The Japanese student replied: "I'm called Fujisaki Kaori! 2nd year student at Sakura High. I'm 16 this year. Thank you very much for saving me, Yue-kun!"

"Why are you here?" He assessed her carefully, noting the Japanese katana beside her, and felt that it must be a system equipment.

Fujisaki Kaori looked at Yue Zhong with her huge eyes filled with reverence and idolization. "I was here to source for food. However, I wasn't careful and allowed those S-types and L-types to surround me. Thankfully, Yue-kun appeared to save me, otherwise, I would have starved to death here. Yue-kun, you're really strong! You can kill so many zombies so easily! It's too amazing!"

The Japanese were respectful people, and their humble attitude and reverence for the strong were deep set in their bones. As long as there was strength, it didn't matter what the other party was. Only the strong would earn the respect and veneration from the Japanese.

Fujisaki Kaori watched how fearlessly Yue Zhong had strolled into the crowd of zombies. He had crushed them like ants, and her heart had fluttered. She felt slightly attracted to him, after all, he had just saved her.

Heroes rescuing damsels in distress was a tradition that was almost a sure-fire way to win the heart of the fairer sex. It was so popular because it was extremely effective.

Fujisaki Kaori was silent for a while before she extended an invitation to Yue Zhong: "Yue-kun! Will you please come with me to our establishment?"

Yue Zhong looked at her expectant expression, and guessed that she might be from a small establishment. Those small-time

factions had no way of containing someone like him, if he were to rage, he could easily decimate one or two of such bases.

"Sure." He agreed, even though he was not of a favourable impression of the Japanese. However, he had no choice because of the foreign land, and he needed someone to guide.

"Come with me! I'll gift you something from the supermarket!" Yue Zhong turned and headed down.

Fujisaki Kaori followed him down.

He pointed to the entire supermarket and said: "Help yourself!"

"Thanks!" After expressing her thanks, Fujisaki Kaori ran and grabbed a huge haversack. Before stuffing it with all sorts of things. After filling it up, she then found a trolley, filling it up before pushing it out.

"This Fujisaki Kaori is pretty intelligent!" Yue Zhong eyed her actions and praised her silently.

Most people would not think of using the trolleys to collect and transport items. After all, one's mobility would be affected when using it. However, Fujisaki Kaori had done precisely so because she knew she had Yue Zhong around.

Soon, she carried her haversack and pushed the trolley in front of him.

"Let's go!" Yue Zhong eyed Fujisaki Kaori and turned around, not minding the trolley at all.

She was slightly disappointed, and proceeded to push it herself, following behind Yue Zhong.

Along the way, many zombies tried to attack Yue Zhong, all he had to do was to slash out casually. The zombies didn't stand a chance, each and every one of them being sliced in two. None could get close enough.

"Strong!! He's even stronger than demons!" Fujisaki Kaori

watched on as Yue Zhong continued to slaughter the zombies, and her heart trembled.

With her leading, Yue Zhong soon came to a small village in between 2 mountains.

"Kaori Onee-chan!!"

"Kaori Onee-chan, you're back!"

When Fujisaki Kaori returned to the village, a number of small kids from the ages of 9 to 13 came running out. Other than them, there were 2 other women that seemed above 30, as well as 3 other younger women of about 16 to 18.

There were a total of 15 kids that came running out. Every one of them were scrawny, and had visible signs of the conditions of the apocalypse. However, they had no signs of being mistreated, and were still as innocent and boisterous as kids should be.

At this time, one 17 or 18 year old young woman with freckles and an obese figure shot Fujisaki Kaori a look and barked: "Kaori! Who is this person? How can you bring a man back? Have you forgotten that all men are animals?"

Another one, who was shorter and had an ordinary face, looked at the Black Tooth Blade on Yue Zhong's back with apprehension in her eyes and asked: "Kaori! Who is this?"

There was also a bespectacled and pretty but strict-looking Japanese lady who was assessing Yue Zhong through narrowed eyes. She kept silent.

The kids in the village were also curiously looking at Yue Zhong.

Fujisaki Kaori started to explain to the rest: "He is Yue Zhong, from China. He saved me from being trapped at the supermarket! Because of him, I was able to get all these!"

The freckled fatty immediately shout out in agitation when she heard Yue Zhong was from China: "What?! He's Chinese?! Shit!!

Fujisaki Kaori! How can you bring a Chinese here? This is Japan, we're Japanese, this is not a place you can come to. Get the hell out!"

"Get out!! We don't welcome you here!!"

"This is Japan, we don't welcome the Chinese here! Get out!! Uotsuri Jima is ours!"

When they heard the shouts of the freckled fatty, the rest of the Japanese kids also began to jump up and down as they hollered at Yue Zhong.

Various Japanese right-wing forces had been rearing their heads in recent years, and influenced much of the public opinion on a general hatred towards the Chinese.

As the kids began to shout, some even bent down to pick up stones and pebbles to pelt Yue Zhong.

"Bunch of unconscientious people!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly and shot forwards. He lashed out with his leg, kicking 5 of the kids, sending them flying about 7 to 8 metres backward. They all spat blood. He then lunged towards the freckled fatty and slapped her harshly across the face, causing her to tumble, and a few of her teeth to be knocked out. She also coughed up blood as a result.

# Chapter 536: Xenophobia!

---

Yue Zhong pulled out his huge Black Tooth Blade and pointed it at those Japanese survivors. He barked out coldly: "All of you shall kneel! Those who don't, I'll slice your head off!"

"You dare hit me!! I'll kill you!!" The freckled fatty instantly charged over with a face contorted by fury.

"No!!" Fujisaki Kaori immediately screamed out.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and the Black Tooth Blade sliced through the air like a beam of light.

The head of the freckled fatty soared through the air as fresh blood splattered. Her headless corpse struggled a little before slumping to the ground.

After killing the freckled fatty, Yue Zhong's eyes turned even colder as he pointed at all the Japanese survivors and shouted out with a menacing and oppressive tone: "Get the fuck on the ground! Otherwise you'll die!"

When they saw Yue Zhong killing the girl without hesitating, everyone stared in shock and fear, as though they had just seen a demon.

"Sorry!!"

"Sorry!! Forgive our offence!!"

"Sorry!! Please forgive us!!"

The pretty bespectacled girl was the first to get on the ground. The rest also hurriedly got on their knees in terror, as they begun to plead for mercy.

"Please, Yue-kun! Please have mercy on us, don't kill anyone else! They didn't mean it!" Fujisaki Kaori also knelt and begged Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had kicked the Japanese kids and took the life of the

freckled fattt without batting an eyelid. This was proof of his cold nature and not someone to be pushed around. They had been totally suppressed by his terrifying aura.

"Please use as you wish, but spare the kids!! They're innocent!" The 2 middle-aged women crawled over and pulled their clothes off, revealing their fair breasts. They hoped to use their bodies to appease Yue Zhong.

"I'm not interested in you!! Since you guys don't welcome, then you won't like the food that I had kindly provided. Let me burn them all!" He eyed the Japanese survivors coolly, and pointed at the trolley. His Devil Flame immediately ignited the trolley, turning the trolley and its contents into cinders.

All the survivors looked at the burning items and their eyes flashed with an intense regret. A few of them began to wail. They were running out of supplies, otherwise, the weak Fujisaki Kaori would not have risk her life to search for food.

The small town might not pose a problem to Yue Zhong, but to those ordinary survivors, it was as terrifying as hell. A single S2 was enough to kill the entire village of survivors.

After turning the trolley into ash, his gaze landed on the haversack on Fujisaki Kaori's back.

She felt a chill down her spine, and grabbed the bag tightly. She kneeled on the ground and began begging: "Yue-kun! Please! Let us have at least this bag. It's our only hope! As long as you leave this for us, I'm willing to spend the night with you! I'm a virgin, and I should be able to satisfy you..."

The pretty, bespectacled girl who had been kneeling rigidly also spoke up: "Yue-kun! I'm Ida Kyoko, 17 this year, I'm also a virgin. This time, it was our fault! Please be magnanimous and let us have this bag! I'm willing to join Kaori and let you have your way with us for a night!"



Without food, the entire town could not survive beyond a few more days. Ida Kyoko was also extremely clear, and decided to use her body to exchange for the food.

Yue Zhong spoke coldly: "I need a map of this area. I also need someone to lead the way, to the nearest establishment. As long as you can provide this, I'll leave tomorrow, and the bag is yours."

He had no goodwill towards the Japanese, but he would not go on a massacre for no reason. Unless both sides were enemies, where he would not hesitate to rain hell and carnage upon his foes.

Ida Kyoko kneeled in front of Yue Zhong and spoke respectfully: "Yes! I have a map here. I also know where the location of the nearest survivor base is. Let me be your guide tomorrow Yue-kun. Please rest for the night here."

If he had not displayed his strength, they would have already chased him out. However, since he showed that he was willing to punish children, and killed the freckled fatty who had dared to assault him, they were filled with fear towards him. Naturally, they would not chase him out, for fear of him going crazy and killing them all.

"En!" He replied indifferently and began to walk into town.

After he left, the survivors stood up.

"Damn Chinese dog!! Lowlife Chinese scum. You dare kick the future elites of my Great Japan!! I'll not let you off! I'll make life a living hell for you!!"

A 13-year-old Japanese boy by the name of Ueda Koji with dyed blond hair stared hatefully at Yue Zhong's back, his eyes flashing viciously.

Ueda Koji looked at Ida Kyoko and Fujisaki Kaori and his face contorted in rage: "Kaori onee-chan is mine!! Kyoko onee-chan is also mine!! I'll not let you take them away, Chinese dog!!"

With these vile thoughts, Ueda Koji thought to find a chance to

slip out of town.

Soon, it came to dinner time. The 2 Japanese housewives prepared a large wok of porridge, before separating in many bowls.

The Japanese children lined up to get their bowls, before slurping the porridge, wiping the bowls clean.

Yue Zhong watched this sullenly. In his country, his fellow countrymen had lack of manners and the habit of queueing. Even the little rascals would frequently jump the line, and made use of their bodies to squeeze through or bully the weaker kids for food. These were all bad habits instilled in them by their parents. Only after Yue Zhong punished this behaviour did it start to disappear. Seeing the orderly manner of the Japanese kids, he was slightly unhappy. After all, he was slightly nationalistic, and seeing the Japanese being better than the Chinese in any aspect caused him to feel sour.

"Yue-kun, this is yours." Ida Kyoko served a plate to Yue Zhong.

It was a simple meal. There was soup, rice, as well as canned fish and vegetables. In this apocalypse, it was considered a sumptuous meal.

Many of the Japanese looked over, their mouths salivating. However, they sat still, not daring to move about. The Chinese in front of them had shown them how ruthless he could be, and they dared not provoke this man who killed without blinking.

"No need! You guys have it." Yue Zhong declined their goodwill and pulled out his own canned Type 2 Beast meat, and began to devour it down.

The Type 3 Mutant Beast meat would boost his energy and replenish what he expended, so he would only save it for situations, where he might need to recover or save weaker survivors.

Ida Kyoko had also done so as a perfunctory gesture, she wasn't

really willing to let Yue Zhong have such precious food. When he declined, she brought the food back, and separated into 14 equal portions, giving the little kids to eat. Although it was just a little bit, the kids all had expressions of bliss on their faces.

Yue Zhong watched the actions of Ida Kyoko as well as the kids, and he thought silently: "What a scary race of people."

Japan had been able to pick itself up and soar to economic greatness after World War 2. On one hand, it was because there was the assistance from America, on the other hand, which was more important, was that the Japanese were very united, and had an undying resolve no matter the obstacle.

The more he watched, the more depressed he got, and he decided to hoist the biological armor and walked into another room to rest.

When he left, all the Japanese survivors heaved a sigh of relief. His very presence exuded a overpowering pressure on them, making it hard for them to breathe. When he left, they could finally relax.

One of the housewives asked: "Kyoko, are you really going to lead him tomorrow?"

Ida Kyoko nodded "En! This Yue Zhong seems to be a man of his word, if I help him, he will keep his promise."

The other housewife spoke: "I wonder what he wants with a larger survivor base? Why don't we all follow him? Maybe joining a larger survivor base would be easier for us all."

Right at this time, the sounds of motorbikes and cars came roaring from outside the village.

Hearing the commotion, the survivors all stepped out to take a look out of curiosity.

Only to see a whole bunch of men in tattered and mismatched clothes, each of them wielding weapons like baseball bats, knives and blades. Ueda Koji was behind the leader, a burly man with a

shaven head. He had a huge scar running down his face, and he had plenty of tattoos on his body.

Ueda Koji spoke respectfully to the scarred man: "Kuwata-oyabun, it's here."

The bald scarred man was called Kuwata Taro. He was the boss of this area, and had 60 soldiers under him, and was the king of about 300 survivors.

# Chapter 537: Blade Beam!

---

"Kill!!" Kuwata Yutaro revealed a savage smile and waved his hands, leading his subordinates into the village.

The dozens of armed men charged into the village in a frenzy.

"Quick! Escape!!" Fujisaki Kaori immediately screamed when she saw those men.

After which, she led the kids towards the village.

The 2 housewives ran over towards the men, hoping to use their bodies to buy some time for the kids.

The subordinates of Kuwata Yutaro began to surround the 2 housewives, as they took off their pants and began to rape the 2 women, while laughing in glee.

While the 2 women were surrounded by 10 men, the rest of the armed men charged towards the village while roaring with laughter.

"Kaori onee-chan!! Save me!!" All of a sudden, a 12-year-old boy tripped and fell, his face wearing a frightened expression as he shouted for Kaori.

"Hahahaha!! Die!" One of the thugs swung his blade down with a perverse look of madness, separating the kid's head in a shower of blood.

While it was true that the Japanese had a powerful will and fighting spirit, likewise, some had an intense side to them. Many had their own mental demons, which when unleashed, would cause them to be worse than beasts.

Those subordinates of Kuwata Yutaro were capable of all evils, and every one of them had no qualms committing acts of evil.

"Kenta!!" Fujisaki Kaori screamed out in misery when she witnessed the cruel and inhumane scene.

A 10-year-old girl fell as well, and she sobbed uncontrollably with snot and tears flowing out of her eyes and nose. She pleaded as she looked towards Ida Kyoko: "Onee-chan!! Save me!! Kyoko onee-chan, save me please!!"

3 of the burly thugs instantly surrounded that little girl, and took off their pants before proceeding to press the girl underneath them. They basically allowed their primal but perverse nature to go wild.

Soon, the screams of pain mixed with the pants of excitement from the thugs filled the air. There was a disgusting tension in the air.

"Masako!! Masako-chan!! Animals!!" Ida Kyoko screamed out as she watched on helplessly. Her beautiful face was an expression of fury, her eyes bloodshot, and her hands were pale white from clenching too tight. However, she was extremely clear that even if she went back, she would just become a sacrifice, not doing any good.

"Yue Zhong!! There's only him left! Only he can save us!!" Ida Kyoko came to a swift decision, and thought of the only person with the village that could save them.

On the other side, Fujisaki Kaori was not stupid as well, and brought the kids towards Yue Zhong's location.

Ida Kyoko came to where Yue Zhong was staying, and saw that he was leaning against the window, watching the events unfold quietly. He showed no intentions of lending a helping hand at all.

Yue Zhong watched the Japanese thugs killing and raping their own countrymen and there was a mix of emotions in him. There was fury, numbness, and a slight sense of gratification. He was furious because these brutes actually had no qualms killing their own people. Numb because he had seen so much of these types of scenarios since the apocalypse began. Each time a faction took over another, there would be such unrest and chaos. He had truly seen

too much. And the slight gratification was because he silently thought that, even the Japanese were not saints, seems like there were enough perverts among them as well.

Ida Kyoko immediately knelt down in front of Yue Zhong and pleaded: "Yue-kun! Please lend a hand and save us!!"

If Yue Zhong did not do anything, the survivors would likely be wiped out, leaving at most the women to serve as sex slaves.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a look of ridicule: "I'm a hated Chinese of your Japanese people. Why should I save you guys? You should look for your own people to help."

When the Japanese survivors had first seen Yue Zhong, they were immediately xenophobic. Yue Zhong was still fuming over their ungrateful attitude towards his goodwill.

He was the sort that was clear about his feelings, he would be nice to those who treat him well, and he would be ruthless to those who were his enemies.

Ida Kyoko raised her head to implore Yue Zhong with those mesmerizing eyes of hers. There was a resolute look in them: "Yue-kun, I would like to propose a deal. Please save these kids, after all, they're innocent. In exchange, I'll be willing to serve you as a maid from now on. From today onwards, whatever you ask of Kyoko, I'll do it."

Ida Kyoko wasn't an idiot. She knew those thugs outside were beyond control. They had no way of talking sense or logic with them. In comparison, although Yue Zhong was a foreigner, he was at least reasonable. In her eyes, there was a chance to negotiate with him.

"Kyoko!" Fujisaki Kaori heard those words and turned to look at her, her face pale and her mind blank. Although her abilities were the strongest among the villagers, her adaptability and reaction to situations were not Ida Kyoko's equal.

Yue Zhong stared at Ida Kyoko who was looking straight at him with a resolute gaze, and replied coolly: "Remember all that you've said today. If you dare go back on your word, I have my means to make you regret it for life."

Ida Kyoko kneeled in front of Yue Zhong and bowed deeply: "Yes!"

She had received an upbringing from the higher rungs of society, and wore those thick old-fashioned glasses to hide her beauty.

"Haha! So many women!"

At this time, 13 men barged in. When they saw the 2 women in the room and those kids, the eyes of the men all lit up in excitement.

Fujisaki Kaori looked at one of the group that had barged in, a look of disbelief flashing in her eyes and she exclaimed shrilly: "Koji!! It was you!! You betrayed us?! Why? Why did you betray us?"

Of the 13 men, one was precisely Ueda Koji.

Ueda Koji looked at Fujisaki Kaori and Ida Kyoko, his face contorted in madness: "Kaori onee-chan! Kyoko onee-chan!! I like you guys!! I want you to be my women!! What is that Chinese dog worth? Why is it that you 2 were smitten by him the moment he came? This Chinese dogs are our Japan's enemies!! Why, why must you treat him so well, to the point of offering your bodies to him? Since it's like this, why can't I be your man?! Yutaro-oyabun has already promised me. As long as I lead them here, the 2 of you will be women from now on!"

Ida Kyoko looked at Ueda Koji, her eyes flashing with pity: "Koji! You have been deceived! They will not give us to you!"

The few subordinates of Kuwata Yutaro laughed at Ueda Koji with scorn and ridicule in their eyes.

With these 2 beauties, Kuwata Yutaro would definitely not leave



them just for Ueda Koji to enjoy alone.

However, Ueda Koji didn't seem to discover anything amiss, looking at Kuwata Yutaro with an expectant look: "Kuwata-oyabun will not lie to me. Kuwata-oyabun, you can deal with the rest how you like. Kaori onee-chan and Kyoko onee-chan are mine. Please capture them for me."

Kuwata Yutaro's eyes flashed coldly, and he suddenly pulled out a sharp katana and sliced towards Ueda Koji, causing his body to be separated.

"Ah!!!" With blood splattering everywhere, and his legs separated from his body, Ueda Koji didn't die instantly, instead, he fell to the ground, screaming out. His face was hideous, his eyes filled with fear and disbelief.

Kuwata Yutaro looked at Ueda Koji and there was contempt and ridicule in his eyes: "I'm not lying to you. I will hand them to you. But since you're dead, then your women will be shared by the rest of us!"

He then turned to Yue Zhong and waved his hands, ordering out coldly: "Chop up that Chinese. I want him alive, and I will cook him and torture. Whoever can remove his limbs, after I'm done with these 2 women, that person will get to be 2nd."

"Kill!!"

The other 11 men that were surrounding the room instantly charged towards Yue Zhong with savage looks. 2 of them were Agility Enhancers of Level 7, their abilities stronger than the rest of the thugs.

Seeing the assault of the 11 thugs, the remaining kids immediately darted behind Yue Zhong, their faces filled with fright.

Each of the thugs wielded sharp katanas, and they looked positively terrifying.

Ida Kyoko couldn't help but screamed out in warning: "Watch

out!!"

These were 11 thugs encircling one man, she was afraid that once Yue Zhong was killed, they would all be at the mercy of Kuwata Yutaro, and their fates would be worse than death.

"Thrash!"

With that mild snort, a blade beam slashed out across the room. The 11 thugs were instantly sliced into pieces, blood splattering everywhere.

Witnessing such a horrifying scene, Kuwata Yutaro was shocked, his heart instantly plummeting.

# Chapter 538: Dispute!

---

Kyoko, Kaori and the remaining kids were all shocked when they witnessed this. This sort of technique exceeded what was possible, and they were truly shaken.

Kyoko's eyes were filled with veneration: "Too terrifying! His technique had exceeded human limitations. Even a sword saint would not be able to block that blow. He's as terrifying as a demon!"

"AH!" Kuwata Yutaro was afraid, but he was known around these parts as a fierce thug after all. He forcefully suppressed his fear by shouting out loudly, charging at Yue Zhong with a fearsome killing intent.

"What a fast blade!" Kyoko was the chairman of the kendo club back in school, and knew about kendo. She could see that the move of Kuwata Yutaro was not simple, and if it was her facing him, she would definitely not be able to defend against this strike, furthermore, it was backed by his strength of a Level 23 Enhancer.

Kuwata Yutaro had just run forwards a few steps and reached Yue Zhong, when suddenly, a blade flashed. Kuwata Yutaro's head was sent flying into the sky with a shower of warm blood. His headless corpse continued to stumble a few steps forwards before crashing to the ground.

Yue Zhong stepped forward and picked up the katana from the corpse of Kuwata Yutaro, and a flurry of information appeared in his mind: "Level 2 Treasure: Odachi. An incredibly sharp blade."

Yue Zhong threw the odachi over to Kyoko: "Take it! I can't be protecting you all the time. Only you can protect yourself!"

"Yes! I understand!" Kyoko picked up the odachi and bowed to Yue Zhong, before taking a few swings. Each and every move of hers was precise and purposeful.

"This girl definitely has some background."

Yue Zhong eyed Kyoko before turning around and walked out:  
"Come with me!"

Kaori and Kyoko followed behind Yue Zhong. They were joined by the remaining Japanese kids.

Outside, the remaining subordinates of Kuwata Yutaro were currently raping their captives indiscriminately. When they saw Yue Zhong and his group step out, they rushed over with looks of savagery.

Yue Zhong watched the incoming bandits indifferently and slashed out, slicing them all in two.

As the scene of carnage unfolded, Yue Zhong strolled through like a bloodthirsty devil, any bandit that got too close would be immediately sliced.

"Terrifying! He's like a demon! He's too strong!" Kaori stood behind Yue Zhong and watched as he dealt with the bandits, her heart filled with shock and reverence.

When the bandits had almost been wiped out, leaving a dozen behind, those remaining ones tried to make a break for it.

"Get the hell on the floor. Otherwise you'll die!"

Yue Zhong barked out coldly when he saw them running. He then shot forwards with a speed that exceeded a Type 2 Lightning, rushing towards the bandits.

In the dark of the night, a few of the escaping bandits were separated in two, as blood splattered everywhere, their innards spilling out of their corpses. It was a horrifying scene, and the screams rang out through the night.

"Don't kill me!! I surrender!"

"Don't kill me!!"

There were many cowards who feared death among the bandits

as well. When they saw their comrades being slaughtered like pigs, they immediately got on the floor and begged Yue Zhong tearfully.

In that short carnage, all that was left of the bandit group was 9 people. The rest had become corpses.

The 9 of them kneeled on the floor, their bodies trembling uncontrollably as they awaited Yue Zhong's judgement.

Along Kaori's path, she had seen the dead bodies of her fellow survivors. With every passing body, the fury in her heart intensified.

The housewives were naked, their bodies covered with spots of semen everywhere. Their eyes were opened wide, and their bodies were covered in bruises. They had no life left in them. There were also 4 other lolis of about 10 to 11, while they were not dead yet, they had been tortured till the point where they're on the brink of death. Their bodies were bruised, and there was blood everywhere. 6 of the boys were also covered in semen, their necks already snapped, and their faces full of fear even in death.

In the apocalypse, ration was precious. Girls and women would be used to satisfy desires, that was why they were likelier to survive. To the rotten bandits under Kuwata Yutaro, anyone else were just dispensable. They were cruel and vicious, and naturally would not allow the other boys to survive.

When Kaori saw the bandits lined up in front of Yue Zhong, she lost her cool and screamed: "Bastards!! Yue-kun!! Kill them!! KILL THESE FUCKING BEASTS!!"

Hearing her shrill screams, those men began to tremble even more. They looked fearfully at Yue Zhong and his long Black Tooth Blade.

"Shut up." Yue Zhong shot Kaori a cold look.

She felt like a bucket of cold water had been poured over her, and she immediately clammed up.

Yue Zhong ordered: "Kyoko, go tie them up!"

"Yes! Master!" She replied and found a few ropes before tying the captives seriously. She then escorted them to a small storehouse and locked them in.

Yue Zhong gazed at the remaining survivors, as he spoke indifferently: "My deal with Kyoko is completed, the rest is up to you."

After that, he went back to his room and rested.

If it were in China, Yue Zhong would definitely have slaughtered these thugs and used his resources to save the children. He would then train them and teach them how to survive in this cruel world.

However, this was Japan, to a deeply nationalistic person like Yue Zhong, it was a mercy that he didn't slaughter them all. He would naturally not lend a hand to the xenophobic Japanese survivors.

"Kako-chan!! Hang in there!! Hang in there!!"

"Nishi-chan, hang in there!!"

Inside a room, Kaori was currently applying all the precious medicine that they had on the 4 pitiful girls. The girls laid there, their bodies still defiled and covered with bruises and blood, and Kaori's tears would not stop flowing.

Those thugs who had followed Kuwata Yutaro were inhumane beasts, and scum among scum. They had lost all sense of rationality, and had vented their desires without care for the frail bodies of the girls, causing them to be broken.

Kaori looked at those pale and shivering children, who were teetering between life and death, and asked Kyoko frantically: "What do we do, Kyoko? What should we do?"

In this small village, the housewives had been the ones to call the shots. Kaori was just a pretty high school student. She was part of

the gymnastics club in school, and had also learnt some karate. After the apocalypse happened, she had become an Enhancer by chance. However, her circumstances were vastly different from Yue Zhong, and she wasn't as strong. She did not dare take risks as well, hence her low level. Other than her status as an Enhancer and a beauty, she could not compare to Kyoko in terms of her intelligence and adaptability.

Kyoko looked at Kaori and the remaining children and frowned. She was extremely clear that once she was brought along with Yue Zhong tomorrow, the rest would not stand a chance out here. In fact, one of the reasons she decided to follow Yue Zhong was to rely on this expert in the future.

Kyoko pondered for a long while, before speaking softly: "Kaori, go plead with Master. Only he has the means to save Kako-chan and the rest."

When Kaori heard that, her eyes lit up, before turning crestfallen again: "Kyoko, he would not help us easily."

After this matter, Kaori had a good feel of Yue Zhong's character. The first meeting the villagers had with him turned antagonistic. Expecting him to help out without asking for anything was basically impossible.

Kyoko suggested: "Simple. Submit to him, accept him as your master. Then he would not abandon us without a care."

One of the boys of about 12 or 13, Kuramoto Kira, immediately opposed vehemently: "No way!! I oppose!! He's cruel and he's a Chinese, our hated enemy! I will definitely not accept him as our master. This is Japan, not China. We are the pride and glorious people of Japan, how can we submit to him? No, no way! He didn't even say he wanted us. We could handle our own problems in the past, we should continue doing so in the future!!"

The village had been fortunate, having found a huge source of rations right at the start of the apocalypse. Also, there had been a

moral Enhancer who helped to clear the town, allowing them to stay here hidden. They had gone through much lesser hardships compared to survivors outside, and due to that, they had been blinded by the cruelty of the world.

"Kira-kun!" Kaori heard his words and faltered. This wasn't like ancient times, she too wasn't willing to become a maid.

As long as a modern person did not go through any sort of hardships, no one would be willing to recognize someone else as master. Especially with a Chinese man like Yue Zhong.

Kira held up a small kodachi and declared with confidence: "Kaori onee-chan! I, Kuramoto Kira, swear to work hard to become a hero to protect you guys! With this kodachi in my hands!"

The kodachi was a first class weapon. It had been picked up by Kira from one of the dead thugs. With it, he was suddenly filled with confidence. Although he acknowledged that he was not a match for Yue Zhong, he had the confidence to protect Kaori.



# Chapter 539: Type 3 Liger Beast!

---

Kaori hesitated, before she looked towards Kyoko, imploring her to help with her intelligence and perspective.

Kyoko looked back and sighed: "Kaori! I'm not part of you guys already. You'll have to make the decision yourselves."

By now, the 3 Japanese boys had stood up and were wielding their kodachis. Their eyes flickered with an unwavering resolve, obviously not intending to pledge allegiance to Yue Zhong.

The 3 of them were only about 12 or 13, and under the education system, they were brought up to hate the Chinese. If it wasn't for the strength of Yue Zhong that was so frightening, they would try to assassinate him in the night.

Kira looked at Kaori and spoke loudly: "Kaori onee-chan! The Chinese have a good saying, one must be guarded towards those not of one's race. He would definitely not view us as equals and he might even use us as slaves or cannon fodder."

Hearing Kira's words, Kaori sunk into contemplation again.

"I'll be going!" Kyoko saw the 3 boys filled with hostility towards her, and left the room. She could tell that she was no longer welcomed.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong brought out the remaining 9 thugs from the locked storehouse.

Yue Zhong approached one of the shorter man who looked about 26 or 27, with ordinary features and asked: "What's your name?"

The young man replied somewhat hesitatingly: "My name is Takeshi Honda! I'm 28 this year."

These thugs did not refrain from committing evil acts in the apocalyptic world. They had seen their fair share of things, and knew that this man in front of them was a truly strong expert. The

Japanese revered the strong, and having witnessed Yue Zhong's might, they were both in fright and in awe.

Yue Zhong stared at Honda and questioned: "Where's the nearest radio broadcast station?"

"Radio station? Please let me think for a while!" His brain began to work, before his eye lit up and he responded: "Yama County. Honoki Station. There's a large survivor base in that vicinity. There should be a radio station there."

Yue Zhong then shot out a flurry of questions: "What is the faction ruling over there now? Who's the leader? How many survivors are there?...."

Honda thought hard before replying: "The ones governing Yama County should be the Shimazu clan. The current leader is Shimazu Yuji. There're over a 10,000 survivors there. They're considered the strongest faction, and no one dares provoke them."

When Yue Zhong heard that, his brows furrowed. If it were just a thousand-strong establishment, he could definitely charge by himself to suppress the faction and forcefully obtain the station.

However, a base of more than 10,000 survivors was bound to have a number of strong experts. Furthermore, Japan had plenty of thick forests, which would mean more diverse Mutant Beasts and Mutant Plants. There would definitely be plenty of experts.

Yue Zhong pondered before making a decision: "I just need the radio station anyway! Let's just see how it goes!"

Yue Zhong gave Honda an order: "From now on, you are the captain of this small team. This is my maid Ida Kyoko, her position is higher than yours. Now move out!"

"Yes! I got it!!" When Honda heard those words, he was overjoyed. He was originally just a small-time thug among the group of bandits. Now he had become a captain. Furthermore, following someone as strong as Yue Zhong wasn't too bad. With his

strength, it was possible to trample over many obstacles.

In fact, any Enhancer above Level 30 could go around sourcing for survivors to form a small faction. Of course, expanding from there wasn't as easy.

Yue Zhong had always been a man of action, coming and going like the wind. He brought Honda and Kyoko, leaving Kaori and the rest of the children as he walked towards the direction of Yama County. He was not a nanny and had no obligation to look after those that had nothing to do with him.

Seeing Yue Zhong turn around without so much of a care, Kaori's gaze was complicated. She felt uncertain about the future of the village, and was slightly at a loss.

About 67% of Japan were forest areas. Other than the major cities, the rest were forests. Yue Zhong escorted the captives while being led by Honda through one particular forest.

All of a sudden, there was a mighty roar that resounded throughout the forest. Countless birds were alarmed and scattered to the skies.

The moment Honda and the rest heard the roar, their bodies shuddered, their faces full of shock.

Honda immediately exclaimed with fear: "Not good!!! It's a Liger Beast, a Type 3 Liger Beast! We should escape now! Otherwise we'll die."

"Type 3 Mutant Beasts?" When Yue Zhong heard it, his eyes lit up in excitement. He was now at a high level and he had already promoted his Devil Flame into its Second Order stage. Against a Type 3 Mutant Beast, he possessed some means to go against one. It was unlikely that he would be killed quickly. Hence he had the intention to hunt it.

Yue Zhong immediately gave a gun to Kyoko and ordered: "You guys stay here. Kyoko, this is for you, if anyone dares make a move

on you, execute him immediately."

Seeing the gun in Kyoko's hands, Honda and the rest of his team all showed signs of greed and envy. The might of a gun was powerful, and some Evolvers could not withstand them still. The bunch of thugs were ordinary, with only 2 low-level Enhancers among them. They were definitely incapable of handling Kyoko.

After passing his instructions, Yue Zhong shot towards the direction of the roar, disappearing in a flash.

In his heart, only Kyoko had some value. The rest could die for all he cared. If the thugs were to run, it would at most be a bit of trouble.

Yue Zhong ran with his maximum speed, arriving near the source of the noise.

Hong!!

Hong!!

When Yue Zhong was approaching the area, sounds of huge explosions rang out.

"There're people!!" Yue Zhong's heart turned cold and he immediately became cautious. He hesitated before retrieving the Stealth skill book and immediately learnt it.

He was in a foreign land, Japan's advanced technology coupled with their xenophobia towards China meant that he was in a more dangerous situation compared to Vietnam.

After all, as long as Yue Zhong had continued to move in the direction of Guang Xi, he would be like a fish in waters. However, in Japan, he had no kin no friends, he didn't even know which direction he could move towards. It was infinitely more prudent to be careful, and turned everything at his disposal to something he could utilize.

Yue Zhong proceeded towards the sounds of explosions, before

activating the skill. His entire body blended with the surroundings, without a sign of his aura nor killing intent.

The moment he activated Stealth, even if he were to meet an existence stronger than him by a few times, it would be hard for him to be discovered.

About a few hundred metres in front of him, there was a forest, and he could see a 3-m tall beast of over 15m in length. It had the head of a tiger and body of a lion. A layer of scales covered its body. Its tail was lengthy at 3m, and its eyes were as large as plates. The fearsome beast was currently engaged in a fierce battle with a bunch of people.

"Level 88 Mutant Beast: Type 3 Liger Beast. It has a terrifying body, and is an overlord within the jungles."

There were over 300 people, each of them wielding different firearms and weapons.

The group of people were all high level Enhancers, each of them possessing powerful offensive abilities, like the Ice Pick, Flame Arrows, Earth Spikes, Air Cannons, Gravity Lock, Plant Manipulation, Summon Beast, etc. All sorts of abilities were casted towards the Type 3 Liger Beast.

The 300 Enhancers were all working in tandem without any flaw in their teamwork. With their smooth cooperation, even Yue Zhong would be dead if he engaged them.

The Type 3 Liger Beast leaped with all its might, using its pure strength and power to break away from all the shackles. Even with the power of the various Gravity and Vacuum users, it still possessed a speed that exceeded a Type 2 Lightning.

However, because it was still slowed down considerably, with the numerous abilities being casted on it, parts of its scales were chipped away. There was no considerable damage dealt to it however, but the attacks served to enrage it further.

The Type 3 Liger Beast pounced into the midst of some of the humans, and caused one Enhancer to be trapped under its paws. With a bite, the Enhancer had his throat ripped out. The Type 3 Liger Beast then swept its powerful tail, smashing into the head of one other Enhancer, separating it from his body.

The Type 3 Liger Beast was like a tiger among sheep as it smacked a number of Enhancers to the ground, before biting into their throats, killing them in showers of blood.

As the Type 3 Liger Beast was massacring the elite Enhancers, 4 men stood a distance away observing the situation.

A young man with a 2.5m huge sword on his back looked at the Type 3 Liger Beast with a hint of greed in his eyes: "Powerful! It truly is a Type 3 Mutant Beast. I wonder what will drop out once I kill it?"

A middle-aged man frowned slightly: "Ogawa-kun! That beast is not something you can handle alone! Only by working together, we can take it down. Plus, whatever that drops doesn't belong to you alone, it belongs to Emperor Amaterasu, the whole of Takama-gahara!"

Ogawa stared at the Type 3 Liger Beast and licked his lips: "Yes! Yes! Goto-senpai! Let us join hands and deal with this beast then!"

# Chapter 540: Killing The Liger Beast!

---

When the Type 3 Liger Beast decimated those 20 Enhancers, Ogawa's eyes flashed with a chilly light. He waved his hands, and a number of translucent spider silk shot towards the Type 3 Liger Beast noiselessly.

The Type 3 Liger Beast had just slapped a high-level Enhancer in two, when the spider silk stuck themselves to its body.

However, the Type 3 Liger Beast didn't seem to notice the spider silk hanging from its body.

As the Type 3 Liger Beast continued to rampage and tear 6 other Enhancers apart, Ogawa shouted: "Kawada-senpai!"

A burly man who was about 2m tall with rippling muscles shot forwards. His name was Kawada Kotaro. He activated his Second Order Explosive Strength, and his Strength index shot to a whopping 28 times. He grabbed onto the spider silk released by Ogawa and bellowed in rage, before activating his Level 3 Might, causing his Strength to further increase to 56 times. He then pulled savagely, and the 3m tall Type 3 Liger Beast with a body length of over 15m was instantly shackled down.

Kawada Kotaro was a Strength-based Evolver, and the Second Order Explosive Strength could cause him to increase his Strength by 10 times that of a person.

The Level 3 Might would also double his strength as long as it go beyond 400 points. This allowed him to drag the body of the Type 3 Liger Beast down.

When the Type 3 Liger Beast was forcefully suppressed onto the ground, the Enhancers all around immediately launched all their skills on it, causing the entire body of the Liger Beast to be covered in wounds.

"Divine Spear Break!" Komauma Ichiro, an expert wielding a 2m-

long Black Spear, roared out. His Spirit was pushed to its maximum, and his entire body seemed to become one with the Black Spear as they turned into a flash of light that shot towards the Type 3 Liger Beast viciously.

Divine Spear Break was a powerful Second Order skill, and when Komauma Ichiro transformed into a shooting star, he managed to pierce the scales of the Type 3 Liger Beast, and even tore a huge wound in its body.

"Seems like Japan has its experts too."

Yue Zhong watched as Komauma Ichiro exhibited his powerful spear move, and he thought silently to himself. If it was him who was faced with that strike, even he would be severely injured.

The Type 3 Liger Beast released an earthshaking roar as its claw swung down like a clap of thunder. Komauma Ichiro's head was instantly separated from his body, and blood splattered everywhere. This was a Level 58 Evolver, and he was just killed in an instant by the Type 3 Liger Beast.

The Type 3 Liger Beast then tugged on the spider silk, as a powerful strength traveled along the silk to reach Kawada Kotaro. He was immediately sent flying through the air towards the direction of the Type 3 Liger Beast, which seized the chance to lift itself up and bite Kawada Kotaro into two. The scene was gory.

Ogawa's reaction was fast, the moment he saw Komauma Ichiro's head being slapped away, he quickly cut off the connection between the silk and himself. That was how he avoided being sent into the mouth of the Type 3 Liger Beast as well.

The Type 3 Liger Beast's muscles became taut as its eyes turned bloodshot. It drew a ragged breath, and leaped forwards while still under the effects of the Gravity Manipulation. In a flash, it appeared in front of a middle-aged man that looked like the leader of the troops and with a swipe of its paws, that man's head was sent flying.



"Baka!!" Ogawa's body's turned cold, and he immediately activated his Level 4 life-saving ability: Flicker, causing his body to disappear from his spot, and appearing about 10m away.

His voice then resounded as he ordered the rest of the Enhancers: "Kill it! All of you, attack!"

Ice Picks, Fireballs, Ground Spikes, Lightning Orbs, all sorts of abilities were launched at the Type 3 Liger Beast. They served to injure it further, causing new wounds to open on top of the already serious old ones.

A battle that uses mass numbers was truly useful, as the Type 3 Liger Beast was slowly being whittled down by the constant barrage of attacks from the Enhancers. There were multiple fist-sized wounds all over its body, and there was an especially large one at its chest. The precious blood was flowing profusely.

The Type 3 Liger Beast was nearing the end of its line, yet it was still not dead. It continued to leap about in the battlefield, causing mayhem and deaths everywhere it went. Heads would pop out from their bodies and their headless corpses dropping to the ground.

As the death toll climbed, the attacks and skills being casted at it were beginning to drop, and it allowed the Type 3 Liger Beast to be more ruthless and savage in its attacks.

Under the slaughter, the remaining 100 Enhancers begin to lose their fighting spirit, and they started to escape in different directions. Humans were after all different from zombies, and they would fear death when facing an indomitable existence.

Ogawa eyed the Type 3 Liger Beast hatefully and gritted his teeth: "Shit!! This time, it's a failure!"

All of a sudden, there was a sniper gunshot, and Ogawa's head exploded in a shower of blood like a watermelon.

From the grass, Yue Zhong's cold eyes looked on as he kept the

Falcon Sniper in his hands.

Although he did not know the background of Ogawa and the rest, their strength was not a joke. To him, they were a threat. Therefore, he resolved to take the strongest one out in an assassination the moment he could.

Even after hearing the sniper shot, the rest of the Enhancers did not turn back. They just continued to run for their lives. There was a terrifying beast behind them, and the moment they slowed down, death would fall upon their heads.

After Yue Zhong took out Ogawa, his right hand blazed with flames and a Devil Flame Spear appeared. His eyes flashed with a cold look, and he locked on the Type 3 Liger Beast's position. Taking a few breaths, he then threw it towards the Type 3 Liger Beast as the spear turned into a flash of light and exploded on the body of the Type 3 Liger Beast.

With a large explosion, the Devil Flame Spear penetrated the front leg of the Type 3 Liger Beast, causing the leg to be blasted into bits and pieces. The Type 3 Liger Beast immediately came to a halt as it kneeled down.

Yue Zhong shot forwards with both his hands blazing with Devil Flame, and he fired 2 more Devil Flame Spears without wasting a beat.

At this time, the Type 3 Liger Beast recognized Yue Zhong as its greatest threat. It forced itself to evade one of the Devil Flame Spears, but was unfortunately besieged by the other. The Devil Flame Spear combusted on its body, causing a large wound with blood flowing out.

Waving his hands, Yue Zhong brought out his Stinger and fired 6 consecutive shots at the Liger Beast. All 6 bullets found their target, causing the wounds on the beast to worsen.

Even after suffering such extensive damage, the Type 3 Liger

Beast still did not die. Its eyes flashed fiercely, and it tensed its body, leaping towards Yue Zhong with a speed that was just slightly slower than a Type 3 Lightning. It slashed out with its claw, intending to take Yue Zhong's head off.

Yue Zhong was expecting that move and before the Liger Beast had appeared in front of it, he had already activated his Shadow Steps and pulled out his Black Tooth Blade to block in front of him.

The remaining front paw slapped onto Yue Zhong's Black Tooth Blade, and a tank-like force traveled through the blade, causing Yue Zhong to be sent flying backwards.

As the Type 3 Liger Beast launched its assault, Yue Zhong's left hand also conjured out a Devil Flame Spear that expended 80 Spirit and 20 Stamina to strike at the face of the Type 3 Liger Beast.

With a loud blast, a huge bloody hole appeared in the head of the Type 3 Liger Beast, as flames still burned around the wound, causing the brain to be fried.

On the other side, as Yue Zhong was about to smash into a huge rock, a white shield appeared behind him. He crashed into the boulder, but the resulting force caused the shield to disintegrate, before he slid to the ground, his face pale.

"Congratulations on achieving Level 79, you've gained 2 attribute points to be allocated."

A large experience orb flew into Yue Zhong's body, causing him to level up.

A blue treasure box also dropped beside the corpse of the Type 3 Liger Beast.

Seeing the dead Type 3 Liger Beast, a few of the escaping Enhancers immediately turned back, their eyes red as they charged towards the blue treasure box.

A blue treasure box definitely meant something valuable. Even if it was a blueprint, it would be a technologically advanced

blueprint. If they could bring it back to Takama-ga-hara, they would instantly leap up the ranks to become important personnel.

A rope suddenly shot down from a nearby large tree, as it coiled towards the blue box, seemingly alive.

"You're seeking death!!" Yue Zhong roared out with anger as he fired a Devil Flame ball towards the tree, causing it to combust and burn. The Japanese Enhancer fell out of the tree, wailing in agony as he was burned alive.

Yue Zhong didn't spare a glance for the burning Japanese Enhancer and in a flash, he appeared beside the blue treasure box and grabbed it.

"Damn Chinese dog! Put that down! That's ours!!" One Enhancer who was Agility-based and Level 46 wielded an odachi as he charged towards Yue Zhong with bloodshot eyes.

"Go to hell!" Yue Zhong shot forwards, and the Black Tooth Blade in his hand swung down, slashing the Level 46 Enhancer in two.

# Chapter 541: Takama-ga-hara!

---

Seeing the Level 46 Agility-based Enhancer being sliced in 2 in a single slash, the rest of the Japanese Enhancers felt their hearts turn cold.

This time, the hunting of the Type 3 Liger Beast had gathered Enhancers of at least Level 30 and above. However, the majority of them were precisely around that level. It was hard to break past the Level 40 stage. Hence, when the Level 46 Enhancer was executed by Yue Zhong just like that, it shocked the rest of the Japanese Enhancers.

After killing that Enhancer, Yue Zhong flashed forwards, appearing beside a Strength-based Enhancer. He waved his hand and the head of the unsuspecting Enhancer was sent flying even before he could react.

Yue Zhong had been enhancing his Agility without stop, and his current Agility was very high. Even a Level 40 Agility-based Evolver would not be able to match him. He was like a grim reaper, culling lives wherever he went. In just 7 steps, he took the lives of another 3 more Enhancers.

“Strong!! This Chinese is so damn strong, he’s like Kami-sama from Takama-ga-hara!” When the Japanese Enhancers witnessed how Yue Zhong was casually killing their comrades, their hearts were filled with shock.

Yue Zhong felt that he was taking too long and pulled out his Stinger. He then fired 5 shots in an instant, causing the heads of 5 Enhancers to burst in a mess of blood and brain matter.

“Stop!! Don’t kill me!! I surrender!” One of the Enhancers could not take the terror anymore and screamed out as he kneeled.

As the Enhancer took the initiative to surrender, 6 others also followed suit and began crying for their lives.

There were 5 others who weren't willing and quickly tried to run.

Yue Zhong eyed the escaping Enhancers and his eyes narrowed coldly. With a wave, 5 fireballs shot out towards the 5 Enhancers, and upon contact, they immediately combusted. The 5 Enhancers died screaming as they burned to death.

When the 7 Enhancers witnessed this, their bodies trembled uncontrollably, and they turned to look at Yue Zhong, unsure of how this Chinese would deal with them.

All of a sudden, 4 transport carriers lifted into the skies, before flying into a cluster of clouds and disappearing.

“Transport carriers! This Japanese faction actually has them! If only they were mine...”

Yue Zhong eyed those vehicles, as his eyes flashed with a hint of jealousy and pity.

Yue Zhong was currently lacking large aerial transport means. If he had those large transport carriers, then he could deploy his troops anywhere he liked.

In China prior to the apocalypse, the rails went everywhere and fulfilled the needs of transport. Deployment of troops were mainly through the movement of trains. However, when the apocalypse happened, there were zombies and Mutant Beasts everywhere. Many areas were now inhabited by monsters. It was impractical to rely on the tracks to deploy troops. Only the usage of transport carriers would make sense.

The Kingdom of God was conquering Europe, but they had managed to spare some attention on Asia. This was because of their possession of such carriers, which allowed them to travel to all corners of the world.

Yue Zhong stood and eyed the surrendered Japanese Enhancers, asking coldly in Chinese: “Who knows how to speak Chinese here?”

The 7 men looked at each other helplessly. Chinese was not like English which was more widely used. Unless there was someone with the intention to expand in China, there were few Japanese who went to pick up Chinese on their own.

One middle-aged man who had a medium build and ordinary looks hesitated a while before speaking up: “I know some Chinese!”

“Your name! Ability!”

“My name is Muto Shin. My ability is the Level 2 High Speed Movement.”

Yue Zhong fixed his piercing gaze on Shin and asked: “Good! From now on, you’re the leader of this group. They are your subordinates. I’ll ask you this. Who are you people, and what faction were you from?”

Muto Shin hesitated for a moment before gritting his teeth and spilling his background: “Yes! Sir! We’re servants of the gods from Takama-ga-hara!...”

Every country would possess those with no backbones. This Muto Shin was a classic example. He literally spilled the beans on all that he was and knew, hoping to gain favour with Yue Zhong.

Hearing Muto Shin’s explanation, Yue Zhong finally understood their background.

Takama-ga-hara was, according to myths, the land of the Japanese gods. Right as the apocalypse started, a wealthy leader of a large business conglomerate had survived due to luck. His successor had also awakened as an Evolver. He reorganized the survivors and remaining factions, and accepted any survivors, thus forming a powerful group known as Takama-ga-hara.

In the faction, divine soldiers were the lowest-grade soldiers, while divine servants were Enhancers above Level 30. Deities were Enhancers above Level 50, and at the pinnacle, there were Kami-s,

the highest level of experts. There were only 5 of them in the entire Takama-ga-hara.

Each and every one of them possessed terrifying strength, and the leader of them all was called Nendori Tatsuo, a powerful Evolver.

Due to the faction establishing early, they managed to gather more than 500,000 people. They even managed to conquer the Nagano Prefecture, claiming it as a base.

Japan's Nagano was on par with any Chinese city, with over 2 million people before the apocalypse, and being able to occupy such a huge territory was a sign of Takama-ga-hara's power.

“500,000 survivors. A truly large faction.”

Yue Zhong frowned when he heard that. He could feel a sense of foreboding just hearing about their accomplishments.

While Takama-ga-hara was not comparable with the Kingdom of God, it was near China. If they were to expand in power, in a few years, by the time they absorbed the rest of the powers in Japan, they might instigate the next Sino-Japan war.

As they were on a separate island, they had very few strategic options. They longed to expand outwards, and in truth it was the only possible strategy. However, to other countries, it was a huge problem.

Yue Zhong quickly threw all vexing thoughts to the back of his head. He had to consider his next move.

“It's currently an unfounded worry. No matter what happens, I need to make going back to China my priority. I need a broadcast station, an airplane and a pilot.”

Yue Zhong was extremely clear about his own power. He was strong, but not invincible. If he were to charge in single-handedly against Takama-ga-hara, it would be suicidal.



Yue Zhong then ordered Shin: “Go gather everything from here.”

“Hai!” Shin and the rest immediately responded respectfully, and began to collect the equipment and stuff from their dead comrades.

Yue Zhong opened up the blue treasure box, and with a bright blue flash, a blueprint appeared in front of him: “Level 7 Treasure: Sky Fortress Laser Secondary Cannon Diagram. One part of the full Sky Fortress Design. The components of the designs consist of: Power Furnace, Main Cannon, Outer Hull, Secondary Cannons, Structural Design, Power System and Operating System. A total of 7 separate diagrams. When all 7 are collected, the full and complete Sky Fortress diagram will be obtained.”

Yue Zhong eyed the diagram in his hands and his eyes flashed with a glint of pity: “Sky Fortress! This is definitely a powerful war fortress. Otherwise, it wouldn’t require so many diagrams and components. What a pity, it requires 7 of them, who knows how many donkey years it will take to collect them?”

However, the might of the secondary laser cannon was not to be disregarded, even if there was no way to fit it on a Sky Fortress now, it could still act as a powerful weapon. He kept the design carefully in his storage ring, before going over to collect the Blood Essence and Nuclei from the dead Type 3 Liger Beast.

On the other side, since Yue Zhong had left for a long period, Honda’s eyes gleamed strangely.

One other thug exchanged a look with Honda, before they took a step towards Kyoko, their gaze was unkindly.

“Don’t come over, what are you guys doing?” Kyoko was on extreme alert, and she retreated while staring at the thug.

Honda tried to plead with Kyoko: “Kyoko-san! Let’s run together. That Chinese man is like a devil, and he obviously has some bias against us Japanese. He might just kill all of us.”

Kyoko eyed them coldly and barked: “Master has ordered us to

stay, are you thinking of disobeying?”

Honda's eyes flashed with another strange glint: “What about this! You let us go Kyoko-san, you can stay here on your own.”

As long as they could leave, Honda would bring the rest back to the village and rape Kaori and the rest.

Kyoko lifted the guns and retreated further, her gaze piercing: “No way! You guys have to stay here.”

Honda's face sunk and he barked: “Do it! Capture her!”

The remaining thugs leaped into action, their eyes gleaming with a greedy and perverse look. They wanted to press this beautiful woman beneath their bodies and rape her thoroughly.

At this point, Kyoko also took action, as she took 5 steps back while firing her gun at the thugs.

Peng! Peng!

A few rounds penetrated the bodies of the thugs, and they fell on the ground, their blood flowing profusely.

# Chapter 542: Surrender!

---

“Go to hell!” The thugs knew that this was a critical moment, and they charged towards Kyoko in rage, intending to subdue her.

One of the thugs was an Agility-based Enhancer and his speed was faster than the rest. He was the first to reach Kyoko and made grab for her viciously.

As the thug was about to grab her, Kyoko’s eyes flashed with a chilly light, and she pulled out the incredibly sharp odachi by her waist, slicing the thug in two. Fresh blood splattered onto her, covering her beautiful looks with a huge bloody stench. It was as though she was a blood-coloured rose with thorns.

As they saw their comrade sliced in two, the lack of Kyoko’s hesitation caused them to feel a chill in their hearts. They were momentarily stunned and stopped in their tracks. A person who could use guns and swords to kill was not easy to deal with.

Honda tried to shout: “Everybody! Attack! She’s but one woman, after we conquer her, you guys can fuck her first! I’ll be last!! We don’t have a choice anymore, the moment that Chinese dog discovers that we want to escape, we will all be killed without fail!! Now’s the best chance to do what we need to do!!”

With his words, the rest were pushed to step forwards, having lost their rationality.

Kyoko’s eyes gleamed, and she employed a strange footwork, charging into the midst of the thugs like a female leopard. The odachi in her hand danced, and she began to slaughter the thugs.

Soon, the field was littered with corpses, while Kyoko stood alone. She was covered in blood, and was panting slightly as she looked at the corpses.

As she looked around, her face turned pale and she began to double over near a tree and threw up whatever she ate the day

before. It was the first time that she had actually slaughtered real humans, and seeing the result of her actions, she could not help but become nauseous.

There were 2 experts from the small Japanese village, one was Kyoko, the other was Kaori. They were both Enhancers. It was just that their levels were low. Kaori had been a kendo practitioner before the apocalypse, while Kyoko was a successor of the Tenshin-style sword arts. After becoming an Enhancer, she was even stronger than common Enhancers her level with her elite swordsmanship.

“Killing, is truly unbearable!” Kyoko thought to herself. She had killed a number of zombies, but when it came to killing a live human, it was hard for her to accept.

Yue Zhong brought Muto Shin and the rest at that time, and he looked at Kyoko with a little surprise: “You didn’t go?”

He had assumed that Kyoko would have left stealthily. After all, most modern people weren’t willing to be another’s slave. Just one look at a beauty like Kyoko would cause one to believe she had been brought up under the most care, and would definitely not be willing to submit to others.

“Your orders were to stay here.” Kyoko looked straight at Yue Zhong and explained, before pointing to the corpses of the thugs and continuing: “These men not only tried to escape, they also wanted to make a move on me so I killed them. If I didn’t handle it well, please punish me accordingly.”

Yue Zhong chuckled mildly and threw a set of equipment to her: “Well done. This is your reward.”

When Muto Shin saw the set of equipment, their eyes turned red. That was one of the equipment that Yue Zhong had obtained from one of the Deity-level experts of the Takama-ga-hara, it was sufficient to give a person a heaven-shaking transformation.

Upon receiving the equipment, a look of excitement passed in Kyoko's eyes and she could not help but express her gratitude: "Thank you Master for your gift!"

The set of equipment was enough to bolster her combat strength to at least 4 times her current power, so she was naturally excited.

"Let's go!" Yue Zhong did not even spare a glance for Honda's corpse as he continued forward.

The group continued their journey through the forest, and it wasn't long before over 100 Mutant Japanese Monkeys appeared.

This group of Mutant Japanese Monkeys were easily taken out by Kyoko who had worn the equipment. She also swiftly rose another 2 levels.

Due to the large areas that the forests covered in Japan, there were many Mutant Beasts and a wide diversity of life. Soon after they cleared the Mutant Japanese Monkeys, a whole group of lower level Mutant Lizards and Mutant Yellow Snakes appeared.

They were also quickly taken care of by Kyoko and the other Enhancers. Yue Zhong only struck out thrice to save Kyoko when she was in peril. After all, each and every single type and variant of the Mutant Beasts were not simple to deal with, without Yue Zhong's protection, Kyoko would have died thrice over.

"Kill!!"

"Wipe them out!!"

As Yue Zhong's group continued through the forest, they suddenly chanced upon enraged cries. He swiftly led them towards the source of commotion.

Out in a field, there were 2 groups of Japanese survivors currently facing off against each other. There were over 100 people in one group, each of them wielding odachis and their movements were nimble. They were obviously Enhancers, just that their levels were not too high. The other group only had 60 of them, and they

were on the losing end. There were only about 13 guns shared among them, and they were relying on these guns to hold their ground. Otherwise they would have long been killed. In their midst, there were 20 women and children, which greatly affected their combat strength.

“So it was just dogs biting dogs!” Yue Zhong eyed the 2 groups without a look of concern.

Yue Zhong could see that there were only 2 Enhancers above Level 30 among the 2 groups, and facing such a group, he wouldn't even need to employ any skills. He could single handedly take them all out.

Just as Yue Zhong's group arrived to watch the events unfold, one of Enhancers of above Level 35 had just chopped off the head of one gun-wielding Enhancer, breaking the stalemate.

Another gun-wielding survivor was suddenly stabbed in the back by a Level 36 Enhancer that had stealthily appeared behind him, striking his heart.

With the 2 defence points crumbling, the odachi-wielding survivors immediately surged forth like tigers, making their way towards the gun-wielding survivors.

Many of the survivors immediately abandoned their guns and kneeled to surrender. However, the odachi-wielding survivors just roared out with laughter and carried out their slaughter.

The female survivors within the losing group were dragged and thrown to the ground before being raped on the spot. Since the apocalypse began, many people had already succumbed to their inner demons, and these thugs were no exception.

“Grab them!!” Just then, the leader of the odachi-wielding group caught sight of Yue Zhong and his people, and he roared out.

Hearing that order, 60 of the assailants immediately made for Yue Zhong's direction.

“Kill them all!” Yue Zhong watched as they came closer, and gave a cold order to Muto Shin and his men.

“Hai!” Muto Shin immediately saluted and shouted to the rest in Japanese: “Yue Zhong-sama has ordered us to kill those trash. Charge with me!”

After that, he led the 6 Enhancers who were Divine Servants-level that had submitted to Yue Zhong and charged towards the assailants.

While these 7 Divine Servants might not be much to Yue Zhong, they were truly invincible existences when compared to ordinary survivors. As they charged into the midst of the enemy that were 10 times their number, their blades flashed about and the assailants were slaughtered mercilessly.

After all, Divine Servants were an elite group that were nurtured by the Takama-ga-hara faction through their resources. Their combat prowess was comparable to Yue Zhong’s elite soldiers.

Muto Shin and the rest killed over 23 of the assailants before the rest started to feel the regret and tried escaping backwards.

The Japanese leader saw this and a look of shock flashed past his face, as he muttered: “Why is it like this? Who are these people? How come they’re so strong?!”

All of a sudden, a shadow shot down from a tree with lightning speed towards Yue Zhong. His speed had reached over 10 times that of a normal person. This was the Level 36 Enhancer that had assassinated the gun-wielding survivor earlier. Even an ordinary Level 40 Enhancer would not have a nice ending if caught unprepared.

Just as the shadow was about to reach Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong pulled out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade and slashed down.

The 2 parts of the body fell onto the ground in a gory manner.

“Surrender!! I surrender!! Don’t kill me!! I surrender!!” The

Japanese leader watched in horror as his comrade of similar level was taken out in one move, and his heart chilled. He immediately knelt down and began to beg for mercy.

The moment the leader surrendered, the rest of the assailants began to abandon their weapons and cry out for mercy as well.

“Go to hell!! Go to hell!! Go to hell!!” The 7 Takama-ga-hara Divine Servants continued to slaughter the assailants who had surrendered.

This Takama-ga-hara people were ruthless, and killing gave them a morbid sense of excitement and pleasure.

Kyoko watched on in horror and screamed out: “Stop it!! Stop killing!! They already surrendered!!”

Shin replied coldly: “Kyoko-san!! Yue Zhong-sama has given the order to wipe them all out. Without completing his order, we will not stop!!”



# Chapter 543: Valley

---

Kyoko immediately kneeled in front of Yue Zhong and begged: “Master, please command them to stop, otherwise those innocent survivors will be killed by them!”

Yue Zhong looked at Muto Shin and his men slaughtering the other Japanese with glee, thinking silently for a while before giving an order indifferently: “Alright, enough!”

Indeed, Yue Zhong had intended for Shin and his group to eradicate all the Japanese survivors. After all, it would be the Japanese against each other, and he didn’t really feel any emotions. However, he caught sight of 2 little girls amongst the survivors and suddenly felt unwilling to go through with the massacre.

Muto Shin immediately barked loudly: “Yue Zhong-sama has orders! Stop!”

“Hai! Wakarimashita (Understood)!” Hearing Shin’s orders, the 6 Enhancers immediately kept their weapons, looking at the survivors as though they were livestock.

The nature of reverence for the strong was etched deep in the Japanese’ bones. Yue Zhong’s strength was comparable to the Kami-s of the Takama-ga-hara. After submitting to him, they really complied with his orders.

Japan was a country that focused on hierarchy, regardless of context, work, school, gatherings, even the yakuza. The strong and upper-class would always be treated with respect. Otherwise it would be hard to survive.

Honda and the rest of thugs were still youths of the society, and had no intention of truly submitting to Yue Zhong. Hence, they had wanted to rebel and escape from him. That was why they disobeyed his orders.

With the threat of death looming over their heads, the 100-plus Japanese survivors trembled. They were unsure of how Yue Zhong was going to deal with them, given that he was Chinese. After all, Yue Zhong had been conversing in Chinese with Shin, and the survivors instantly guessed his background.

Yue Zhong came up to the leader and spoke: “What’s your name?”

Muto Shin stepped forwards and acted as a translator, posing the question once more in Japanese.

Yue Zhong would usually want the other party to accommodate him, and not the other way round. Muto Shin was not the strongest among the 7 Divine Servants of Takama-ga-hara. However, he became the leader purely because he knew Chinese.

The Japanese leader quickly got on his knees in front of Yue Zhong and spoke in Japanese: “Sir, I’m called Kira Waichi. I’m willing to swear fealty. Please accept me!”

One young Japanese roared out furiously: “Leader Waichi! He’s a Chinese dog, how can you kneel?!”

Yue Zhong looked at the youth with the outburst and spoke coldly: “Kill him!”

“Hai! “ Shin shot forwards and his blade swung down on the head of the Japanese youth. With a spray of blood, the corpse of the youth slumped to the ground.

Witnessing this cruel scene, shock was written all over the faces of the survivors. They felt their bodies shiver more, and their hearts filled with fear.

Yue Zhong was not a good-tempered person. Upon reaching here, he had been dealing with xenophobia every step of the way. This only served to fuel his foul mood and he wanted to kill some people to make an example.

Kira Waichi kneeled silently, afraid that he would be next. He

could tell that even if all 100 of them charged at this Chinese man, he would be able to wipe them out easily.

Yue Zhong eyed Waichi coldly: “I’m Yue Zhong, I’ll accept you. Bring me to your base.”

It was nearing evening, and Yue Zhong needed a place to rest. The forests were too dangerous, and was not suitable for resting.

Waichi stood up and bowed in respect: “Hai!”

Led by Waichi, Yue Zhong and his group came to a valley surrounded by mountains on 3 different sides. There was only one access point.

This valley used to be the private property of an influential businessman, and there were many luxurious villas within. Around the main mansion, there were a few small wooden houses that were erected recently.

The main villa was the living quarters of Waichi and his trusted aides, as well as women. The rest of the wooden houses belonged to the ordinary members and the slaves that they have caught.

Slavery seemed like a thing of the past, but in fact, it was still persistent in modern society. Even prior to the apocalypse, slavery was rampant in Africa.

When the apocalypse happened, society crumbled. Before societal and cultural norms regained their footing, all sorts of weird characters had appeared. It was no surprise that slavery was popular again.

Even Yue Zhong’s establishments had slaves. The vast majority of them were the spoils of war between him and Wuyan Hong, and they were branded as slaves to make up for the atrocities against the Chinese. He was likewise merciless to the families of his enemies.

There were about 400 survivors in the valley. The moment Yue Zhong’s group walked in, everyone stepped out to look at them

curiously.

Yue Zhong looked towards the survivors, noticing that most of them looked sallow and lacked nutrition. It felt like they could fall with just a blow of a wind.

Yue Zhong eyed them and a strange glint flashed in his eyes. He was somewhat pleased: “This place can’t compare to my Gui Ning City!”

Yue Zhong had established some form of society in Gui Ning City and Long Hai City, as long as he didn’t die, and his resources didn’t run out, the stability of his cities would not crumble. An established city was definitely a lot stronger than this small faction of Waichi.

“Welcome back, Master!!” The moment Waichi and Yue Zhong stepped into the villa, 6 beauties between the ages of 18 to 25 immediately came up to greet them in a bow.

One particular 25 year old had a voluptuous body, and there was a beauty mark at the corner of her lips. She came in to lead Waichi and Yue Zhong’s group further within the villa into a large hall.

Waichi gave an order to the beauty: “Masako, from today onwards, this Yue Zhong-sama is our leader. You must be obedient and attend to his needs. Go get Shiroyuki and Asami to come and serve Yue Zhong-sama.”

“Yes!” Masako replied respectfully, before retreating.

Waichi then turned to Yue Zhong with a smile: “Sir, Masako is the butler of this villa. She specializes in training other women. Regardless of the type of women, under her training, they would become obedient and docile.”

“Oh!” Yue Zhong replied absentmindedly.

Not long after, Masako led 2 beautiful Japanese women in kimonos into the hall. One had doll-like features, long slender legs and fair skin. Her bountiful chest threatened to push out of her

clothes, and she wore an extremely sweet smile on her face. The other had an oval-shaped face, her skin as fair as snow, and her frame slender. Her chest wasn't as impressive as the other, but her exquisite features looked as though she was a beautiful painting that had come to life.

Masako immediately introduced them to Yue Zhong: "Yue Zhong-sama! This here is Sakura Shiroyuki and this is Amano Asami. Both of them have never been touched by any men and are still virgins. Shiroyuki, Asami, come over here to greet the Master!"

The 2 beauties were reserved by Waichi to tend to experts, or to be given as gifts as a form of a bargaining chip. He had a number of beauties with him, but they were the only 2 remaining virgins.

The busty doll-like beauty was Shiroyuki, while the other exquisite beauty was Asami.

"We greet Master!" The 2 beauties stepped up and executed a Japanese-style greeting.

Yue Zhong replied mildly: "Get up!"

He had seen his fair share of beauties and would naturally not lose himself over the sight of 2 more.

The 2 beauties continued to smile sweetly as they sat down on either side of Yue Zhong and began to massage him.

"Damn it!" Kyoko thought unhappily to herself as she watched the 2 women.

Waichi looked on before asking carefully: "Sir, what is your next step?"

"Yama County. I'm making my way there." Yue Zhong replied indifferently while on the sofa.

Shiroyuki, who was kneeling by Yue Zhong's left side, carefully placed his hands into her clothes, in between her deep cleavage.

Yue Zhong twisted forcefully, as a bouncy yet smooth and alluring feeling travelled up his fingertips.

Shiroyuki's face flushed red, however she continued to help Yue Zhong massage his leg.

When Waichi heard what Yue Zhong said, his eyes lit up in joy: "Yama County! Sir, you truly are an ambitious man. Shimazu Yuji is the current leader over the 10,000-strong establishment. You actually want to kill him and take it over. Truly admirable!"

Currently, Japan had returned to its feudal periods, and there were various factions vying for power. Many warlords sought to become the leader of Japan. Waichi thought that Yue Zhong wanted to be one of the contenders.

In the apocalyptic world, whoever had the strongest fist would be the leader. With Yue Zhong's strength, it was truly enough to vie for the position of leader. If Yue Zhong were successful, Waichi would become a renowned figure as well.

Yue Zhong saw how excited Waichi was, and did not dampen his spirits. His only intention was to use the broadcast station there. He laughed mildly and assumed a superior look as he asked: "If I want to bring Yama County down, what good ideas might you have?"

Hearing this question, Waichi sunk into silence. Yama County's Shimazu clan was truly a powerful foe, and he was like an ant to them. He had no means of even launching an attack against them. Therefore, it was a difficult question that Yue Zhong was posing to him.

# Chapter 544: Battle in the Night!

---

Waichi thought hard and long, before replying slowly: “Sir, the Shimazu clan is truly powerful.”

“Even if Sir, you are invincible and can fight against gods and devils, you can’t afford to just charge in like this. There are still other factions like the Saishima, Keiwa and Yoshida establishments around. If we can conquer them and assimilate them into our forces, we would possess enough capacity to contend with the Shimazu clan.”

There were various factions of different strengths, if one wanted to expand one’s strength, the only way was to swallow the other smaller factions. Waichi had intended to do just that, that was why he had launched an assault on the smaller factions nearby.

However, Yue Zhong wasn’t too interested in establishing a huge faction here in Japan. Although the Japanese revered the strong, there was a strong xenophobia. With his strength, it wasn’t a problem to form a decent-sized base. However, it would be much tougher to expand and contend against Takama-ga-hara. After all, it would be increasingly hard to find trustworthy subordinates.

Even if Waichi and Muto Shin were both at his command, the moment a strong enemy appeared, Yue Zhong would have to be on his guard against these 2 fellows while fighting off the enemy. After all, they were now listening to him purely because they had no choice. It wasn’t out of their own free will.

Right at this time, a middle-aged man of about 37 years old wearing an eye patch came storming into the villa. He had a suit, and there was a long blade at his waist. He even emitted a strong killing intent as he barked out coldly: “You pathetic trash dare to even dream about taking on the glorious Shimazu clan? What a bunch of fools!”

8 other men came storming behind him, each of them wearing

male kimonos.

Waichi's face turned ugly when he saw how brazen these 9 intruders were, pulling out his odachi at his waist as he barked: "Who are you people?"

This was a relatively unknown place, and ordinary people would not be able to just barge in. It was obvious that they did not come with good intentions.

The guy with the eye-patch looked at Waichi coldly and ordered: "I'm Kuwata Masashi from the Shimazu Clan. Kira Waichi! I had originally intended to let you live, and allow you to join our Shimazu Clan. However, you dare to collude with a Chinese! You're a failure to our glorious race! Today, I shall wipe you off the face of the earth! Kill him!"

"Sir! Save me!" Waichi's level was only at 38, and he was definitely not a match against 4 Enhancers above his level.

As the 4 Enhancers were about to slice Waichi, Yue Zhong whose left hand was still in between the huge breasts of Shiroyuki raised his Stinger with his right hand, and fired 4 consecutive shots.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Just as the odachis of the 4 Enhancers were about to land on Waichi's body, their heads were instantly blasted into smithereens, blood and brain matter splattering onto the floor.

Yue Zhong's Agility was at 203 and he had a reaction speed 20 times of an ordinary person. This had already exceeded a Type 2 Lightning's speed. Even a Level 40 Agility-based Evolver could not surpass him. The speed of those 4 Enhancers might seem lightning-quick to most, but to Yue Zhong, they were as slow as ants.

"So strong!!" Waichi saw the fate of those Enhancers and sucked in a ragged breath, turning behind to look at the indifferent Yue Zhong. His eyes flashed with delight. If it wasn't for Yue Zhong, he



would have already been halfway to heaven, his body dismembered.

Seeing how casually Yue Zhong had disposed of 4 Agility Enhancers, Masashi and the remaining 4 men had looks of disbelief on their faces, and they took a few steps back involuntarily.

Yue Zhong sat at his seat like a killing god and shot the intruders a cold glare: “Kneel down! Or die!”

Masashi immediately bowed down apologetically: “Esteemed one! I’m Kuwata Masashi from the Shimazu Clan, this time, we had unknowingly offended you, and incurred your wrath. We seek your mercy and magnanimity in allowing us to leave. Our Shimazu Clan will definitely offer you beautiful virgins and precious rations as a token of apology.”

Masashi had brought his men intending to wipe out Waichi’s faction, thinking that it would be a breeze. Only 8 of his subordinates were enough to overcome all of Waichi’s forces. The only problem was that they could not have possibly foreseen the arrival of Yue Zhong.

“Go to hell!” Yue Zhong eyed the 5 of them coldly and fired another 5 shots with the Stinger.

Peng! Peng!

After 5 consecutive shots rang out, the heads of Masashi and his men were instantly blasted. Not a single person could react in time.

“Strong! So terrifying!” Waichi, Shin looked at Yue Zhong, who had fired without talking, their hearts filled with mixed emotions.

They were excited because they had the backing of such a terrifying expert, any ordinary factions that dared to provoke them would be courting death. The fear, however, was that Yue Zhong was likely to kill more than he spoke, and they were truly

terrified that Yue Zhong might just kill them without saying anything.

Shiroyuki and Asami who had been kneeling and watching saw the instantaneous deaths of those 9 intruders, had their bodies froze. They had just witnessed Yue Zhong's cold-blooded killing of the people from the Shimazu Clan, and knew that if this person was provoked, even they would not be spared.

While most people thought of the modern Japanese man as gentle, in truth, many of them were still chauvinists. In this apocalypse, just like any other man who had given into their inner demons, many had become vile and perverse. There was no remorse in slaughter. Back then, during the Rape of Nanking, many female corpses were carted out of the cities in trucks to be buried.

A subordinate covered in blood ran into the hall in an extremely pitiful state and hollered: "Sir!! Sir!! There're many intruders out there now! The Saishima, Keiwa and Yoshida factions have just brought their men over. The valley is already under attack, and they're charging in!"

"What?!" When Waichi heard those words, his face fell. They were still in the midst of discussion on how to swallow those families, who would have thought they actually came to attack first.

"Sir! Please lend us a hand and eliminate those intruders!" Waichi got on his knees and begged Yue Zhong.

Every single one of those factions were individually more powerful than Waichi's faction, and now all 3 were attacking them at the same time!

"En!" Yue Zhong removed his left hand from Shiroyuki's kimono and stood up.

As he stood up, the floorboard suddenly split open, and a shadow

appeared in a flash, striking at Yue Zhong's heart.

This shadow was the top assassin of the Shimazu Clan, a ninja that was Level 53. He was extremely skilled in the art of assassination, and even Level 60 or 70 Enhancers would not necessarily survive an assassination attempt of his.

“Watch out!!” Kyoko screamed out. In the entire hall, she was the only one that truly cared for his wellbeing.

“Will he die?” Shin looked at the ninja with a worried look. The assassin had appeared too suddenly, and Shin did not dare to guarantee that a Kami-sama level expert from Takama-ga-hara would be able to survive that assassination.

“Too slow!” Just as the ninja reached Yue Zhong, Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly and he sent an explosive fist towards the face of the ninja. A 10-times Strength came blasting into the ninja's face, breaking his nose and denting his head inwards. The ninja's body was sent flying through the hall and knocked into a wall, before sliding down and becoming motionless. He was dead.

Waichi could not help but shudder and thought to himself: “This guy's insane! Even this was not enough to take him out!! He's too scary!”

If it had been Waichi, his head would have already been separated from his body, before he even knew what was going on.

“Come with me!” Yue Zhong looked at Kyoko, before striding out the door.

“Yes!” Kyoko's eyes lit up in joy as she scampered after him.

Shin looked at Kyoko's back and his eyes had a strange look: “Seems like Kyoko does possess a position in his heart. Second only to that humanoid weapon on his back.”

Yue Zhong walked out the villa, only to see a messy scene out in the valley. Many survivors were currently running towards the villa.

Every single militant that had intruded were vicious and cruel, laughing savagely as they killed the survivors who were trying to escape. Many of them grabbed women and tore their clothes off before proceeding to violate them.

There were many families living within the numerous wooden huts. Some women were also malnourished and weak, but it didn't matter to those militants. Those who weren't good looking were instead tortured by their weapons, and there were all sorts of maniacal laughter and screams of misery resounding throughout the valley.

The perverse militants didn't even spare any of the young girls or boys, taking off their clothes and raping them. There were a few militants who began setting fire to the wooden huts, causing them to burn up.

The entire valley looked like a scene right out of hell!

# Chapter 545: Defeating the 3-clan alliance!

---

Yue Zhong looked at the cruel hell-like scene in front of him, as he pulled out his 2m-long Black Tooth Blade to slice a militant in front of him in two.

Yue Zhong ordered Shin beside him: “Go! Kill all the intruders!”

“Hai!” Shin and Waichi replied respectfully, and roared out loudly: “Kill all intruders!!”

Under Yue Zhong’s orders, the combined forces of Shin and Waichi charged towards the militants who were currently raping women. The militants of the 3 factions were so engrossed in their vile acts that they lost all bearings of discipline.

Yue Zhong brought Kyoko as he continued outwards, not caring about the slaughter amongst the Japanese people. Any Enhancer or militant that took action against him would be instantly killed, their bodies sliced in two.

Yue Zhong’s appearance was like an undefeatable general that stormed the battlefield, giving Shin, Waichi and their troops a boosted morale, while at the same time, pressurizing the enemies who tried to retreat when they could.

However, after a bout of shouts, 3 teams consisting of about 20 to 30 people suddenly appeared. Their moves were not ordinary, and they began to launch a counter attack on Shin and Waichi’s forces.

“Enhancers!!” Yue Zhong saw those soldiers and his pupils constricted, recognizing that they were all Enhancers.

These 30 men were the joint elites of the Saishima, Keiwa and Yoshida factions. Everyone of them were above Level 20, and were the precious soldiers of the alliance. They were considered the trump cards as well.

Without hesitating, Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps and flew into the midst of one of the teams. His Black Tooth Blade

began to swing around like a meat grinder, slicing all the Enhancers in a 5m-radius into two.

Within 10 seconds, 20 Enhancers were slaughtered, and the troops were basically annihilated by Yue Zhong, with the remaining soldiers trying to escape.

“Go to hell!!”

Among the Japanese, there were a few that were unafraid of death. They surrounded Yue Zhong, roaring in fury to disperse the fear in their hearts, as they charged at him.

Facing the kamikaze attacks of those 8 militants, Yue Zhong scoffed and unleashed 8 blade beams, instantly slicing the 8 militants apart. Fresh blood sprayed everywhere in a gory manner.

“Demon!!”

“He’s a demon!!”

“Help!!”

Seeing how easily Yue Zhong killed 8 Agility-based Enhancers, the rest of the 3 teams got frightened out of their wits. They began to escape in various directions.

“Get on the ground!! Or you can die!!” Yue Zhong shot forwards and killed one escaping Enhancer, before barking loudly.

“Kneel! We’ll kill those who disobey!!” Shin heard Yue Zhong’s orders and immediately shouted out in Japanese.

“Kneel! We’ll kill those who disobey!!”

On the battlefield, the Japanese troops under Yue Zhong began to shout across the battlefield.

The elites had been wiped out pitifully by Yue Zhong, causing the morale and spirit of the other soldiers to crumble. They hurriedly abandoned their weapon and got on the ground.

The Enhancers of the 3 factions also kneeled to surrender to Yue

Zhong. They were after all ordinary people prior to the apocalypse, and lost their courage the moment death seemed inevitable.

There were both male and female Enhancers among the intruding troops of the Saishima, Keiwa and Yoshida factions. When the oppressed saw that their enemies had been subdued, they instantly surrounded the female Enhancers, and began to tear their clothes off to rape them on the spot.

Some of them were even perverse enough to grab an odachi to pierce some of the female Enhancers, cutting new wounds and causing moans of agony.

The tortured had become the torturers. In fact, they were even more vicious and cruel. Those female Enhancers were like top existences, which gave rise to a desire in the soldiers to torture them.

“Hahaha!!” One soldier was currently raping a woman while excitedly carving the woman’s skin with his odachi. The woman was covered in bloody wounds, yet he continued to laugh with glee.

Yue Zhong frowned and immediately shot forward to behead the soldier, as a shower of blood splattered all over the Japanese woman.

The naked Japanese woman just laid there numbly, her eyes devoid of any emotions. She had already suffered plenty of humiliation at the hands of other men even before becoming an Enhancer. It was just a repeat of events to her.

However, the rest of the soldiers were all stunned when they saw Yue Zhong slaughtering his own subordinate, and stopped whatever they were doing, eyeing him helplessly.

Yue Zhong swept a gaze across the field as his cold voice rang out: “If you want women, sure. However, it must be through proper protocol. Before I assign any to you, they are all MY spoils of war.

Whoever dares to use them, I will kill him!”

These militants weren’t Chinese anyway, and Yue Zhong had no qualms killing them. Furthermore, even if they all decide to revolt, he was more than enough to wipe them out.

Hearing his words, the militants began dressing again, looking at the women somewhat unwillingly. Compared to the women, they valued their lives more. Furthermore, they knew that Yue Zhong himself had caused the defeat of the 3-clan alliance. He was practically a demon on the battlefield, and no one dared challenge his authority.

3 of the captives came in front of him and kneeled down as they spoke: “Sir!! I’m the head of Saishima/Keiwa/Yoshida Clan, Saishima Shohei/Keiwa Masataka/Shinji Yoshida! Today, we had unknowingly offended sir, and we seek your forgiveness. We’re willing to pledge the allegiance of the Saishima/Keiwa/Yoshida factions and join your power!”

Waichi quickly came up to Yue Zhong and spoke urgently: “Sir!! They’re not joining with good intentions! This is the time to kill them and assimilate their troops!”

The 3 clans were all larger than Waichi’s factions, and he was afraid that once the 3 clans joined, they would become a faction larger than him, that was why he wanted to prevent that.

Of course, Waichi’s suggestion was not wrong. If Yue Zhong really wanted to establish a faction that truly belonged to him in Japan, he had to wipe out the previous leaders and take in their subordinates.

When the 3 clan leaders heard Waichi’s words, they were filled with hatred and killing intent towards him. However, they did not dare step out of line as they watched Yue Zhong carefully, unsure how he would deal with them.

Yue Zhong eyed Waichi coldly: “Waichi, when has it been your



turn to make decisions for me?”

Waichi's heart turned cold and he immediately kneeled and kowtowed: “I apologize! Sir! Please forgive my mistake!!”

Yue Zhong glanced at the 3 leaders and spoke: “From today on, you 3 are my subordinates. Work hard for me, or you'll face death.”

“Hai!” The 3 leaders responded in a resounding yes.

Yue Zhong asked: “Among you guys, who knows Chinese?”

“I do!” Saishima Shohei spoke up in slightly broken Chinese: “I was interested in the rich culture and history of China and its 5,000 years of heritage. When I was young, I had wanted to study in China, but unfortunately, I did not get the chance to.”

Yue Zhong immediately gave an order: “Good! From today on, Saishima Shohei, Kira Waichi, Muto Shin and Ida Kyoko. You 4 will be the Elders of this establishment. Kyoko is the 1st Elder, Shin is the 2nd Elder, Waichi is the 3rd Elder and Shohei will be the 4th Elder. Keiwa Masataka and Shinji Yoshida will follow Kyoko.”

“Many thanks Sir!” Shohei immediately bowed in gratitude. He was jubilant that his past decision to learn Chinese had paid off today, earning him a position in this faction.

The other 2 clan leaders were filled with envy.

Waichi felt sour in his heart as well: “Damn it! If only I knew Chinese as well. If I hadn't given Shiroyuki and Asami to Sir, I might not have even gotten this Elder position. I must work harder to learn Chinese and become a trusted aide of Yue Zhong-sama!”

Upon returning to the villa, Yue Zhong asked Shohei: “Was this operation instigated by the Shimazu Clan, Saishima-Head?”

Shohei looked at Yue Zhong and replied: “Yes! Sir! This time, it was the Shimazu Clan who ordered us to come. They had promised, that if we can conquer Waichi's faction, he would allow

us to join the Shimazu clan, plus there would be no change to the our current control.”

In this apocalypse, it was hard for the smaller factions to survive. If they could join a larger faction, and still retain their own troops and control, it was an attractive offer.

Of course, in doing so, there would be potential problems in the long run as well. The various factions within the larger faction could potentially overthrow the main power should they all ally together.

Yue Zhong thought for a while before asking: “What was the most recent activity on the Shimazu’s side?”

Saishima Shohei gave an important intel to Yue Zhong: “Yama County is currently facing a strange movement from the zombie horde nearby. In 4 days, the horde will reach the base of the Shimazu Clan.”

# Chapter 546: Enjoyment

---

“Oh! So there was something like that!” Yue Zhong’s eyebrows arched slightly, and he understood why the Shimazu Clan would suddenly recruit and absorb other factions.

A horde attack was a huge headache for any faction. Yue Zhong had fended off a number of hordes himself, and each time, the expenditure of ammo and casualties would cause him to be frustrated. Without enough manpower, he would have lost all of his troops. The Shimazu Clan obviously intended to gather the surrounding factions to fight off the horde together.

Yue Zhong then asked a few more questions before dismissing them: “You can go!”

“Hai!” Shohei and the rest left the room.

“Sir! The hot water in the bath is ready! Would you like to use it now?” After Shohei and the rest left, the voluptuous and beautiful Masako came in, asking respectfully.

Masako had been an instructor for females prior to the apocalypse, and she was well-versed in Japanese, Chinese, English, Russian, French, German and a few other languages. Conversing with Yue Zhong in Chinese was no problem for her.

“En! Take me there!” Yue Zhong had fought and killed a fair share of his enemies, and he needed a bath to wash off the blood.

Masako led Yue Zhong to the huge bathroom of the villa.

In the middle of the marble-paved flooring, there was a huge pool the size of 400sqm. There was even a small faux hill in the middle, where hot water would flow out from, filling the pool. The steam was very dense as it rose and filled up the room.

Within the pool, 8 beauties who were wrapped in towels were kneeling on the ground. When Yue Zhong entered the pool, they greeted him carefully: “Welcome Master!”

Shiroyuki and Asami also came in and kneeled down respectfully beside Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong spoke indifferently: “Shiroyuki and Asami can stay, the rest of you may go!”

“Hai!” Masako translated her words, and the rest of the maidservants left.

Shiroyuki and Asami came closer to Yue Zhong and began to undress him.

He slid into the hot water and felt comfortable almost immediately. The accumulated exhaustion in his body began to disappear.

Shiroyuki entered the pool and brought water up all over her full breasts, before soaping herself up and pressing against Yue Zhong’s back to clean him with her body.

Asami on the other hand soaped Yue Zhong’s legs and cleaned them thoroughly, before lowering her head to take in his toes into her small mouth. She began to use her tongue in short and sharp motions to clean them.

Yue Zhong, who had been relaxing with his eyes closed felt his toes entering a warm and moist area, and he opened his eyes, only to discover Asami servicing him.

“Is this a little too much?: He looked at how shamelessly Asami was cleaning his foot and felt his heart tremble. He might have been a dictator back at home and had many slaves to do his bidding, but he had never forced the other party to do something like this. No one would obviously help him clean his toes willingly.

However, the exquisite Asami had the looks of a Japanese idol from prior to the apocalypse, and seeing such a beautiful girl lowering herself to service him, he couldn’t help but feel a sense of excitement.

Yue Zhong struggled internally for a while, before deciding to

just give in to the pleasure and enjoy her service: “Forget it! This isn’t China anyway, and it might be their custom to do so. When in Rome, do as the Romans do.”

Asami had undergone strict training and instruction from Masako. She continued to treat Yue Zhong’s feet, while using coquettish eyes to shoot furtive glances at Yue Zhong. It was truly titillating, and it didn’t seem like she was a virgin at all.

After thoroughly cleaning Yue Zhong’s feet, she climbed up onto Yue Zhong, before grabbing onto his member, and taking the initiative to guide it into her.

Yue Zhong had not let himself go for a long time, and he naturally would not turn away someone who offered herself. He pushed her down beside the pool, and began to pound furiously.

Shiroyuki continued to use her voluptuous breasts to add to the excitement, while constantly rubbing his back.

Yue Zhong’s constitution was far beyond any normal person, after being done with Asami, and leaving her limp on the ground, he reached for Shiroyuki and proceeded to pound her as well.

2 puddles of blood formed at the poolside.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong opened his eyes to find the 2 beauties lying on either of his sides. Seeing them lying docilely in his embrace while sleeping, the tension in his shoulders and stress weighing on his mind was somewhat lifted.

After coming to Japan, Yue Zhong had been on alert at all times, and the pressure wasn’t weak. Having released the pent up stress, he felt much better. After all, while his constitution was strong, stress was not something that could be recovered from if he kept at his activities all day long.

Yue Zhong wanted to return to China, and he required a broadcast station, an airplane, a pilot and fuel. Even with all these things, it was not a guaranteed journey. This was a stressful

situation for him. Those resources were not easy to obtain, as small factions would not have them, and larger factions would definitely not give them up easily. After all, which faction would just lend such important resources out?

Yue Zhong had a few helicopters and every single one of them was precious to him. He wouldn't lend it to anyone. He was clear on how difficult it would be to obtain them.

Yue Zhong shifted slightly, and Shiroyuki was stirred awake: "Master! You're awake!"

"Master, you're truly energetic! Let me deal with that for you!" Her naked body felt the stir of a hot and stiff rod, and her eyes twinkled mischievously, before she dove under the covers. Lowering her head, she took Yue Zhong's member into her cherry-like lips.

Yue Zhong was also aroused by this exotic and alluring beauty, and immediately dove under the covers to enjoy her taste as well. Not long after, Asami also woke up and joined in the fray.

After having breakfast, Yue Zhong went out with Shohei towards the camps of the 3-clan alliance.

By that time, the alliance had already gathered all of their people into a small town, with a total of 1,200 people.

After gathering all these people, Shohei spoke: "Sir, these are all of our people."

Yue Zhong looked at the 1,200 survivors and asked: "Any of you Chinese?"

Every single one of them kept silent.

Yue Zhong sighed lightly. He had intended to find some Chinese people he could trust. It seemed that the plan had to be scrapped.

Shohei spoke up daringly: "Sir, if you want to find some Chinese people, the Shimazu Clan will most likely have them. I remember

that there are over 200 Chinese survivors there.”

“En! Go back!” Yue Zhong turned around and replied.

Shohei thus led the 1,200 survivors towards the valley.

Waichi’s valley was spacious enough to accommodate over a thousand people. Even the villa itself could fit a few hundred people with no problems.

The moment they returned to the valley, Waichi came over and reported: “Sir! The Shimazu Clan had sent someone to negotiate with you. Would you like to see him?”

A tinge of excitement arose in Yue Zhong’s heart: “Oh! The Shimazu Clan? Bring them in.”

“Yes!”

An average-looking man in a suit came walking in, before kneeling respectfully in front of Yue Zhong. He spoke in Chinese: “I’m Tanaka Shiro from the Shimazu Clan, it is an honour to meet you, Yue Zhong-sama. Please forgive us for the offence last night.”

The matter of Yue Zhong killing 9 Shimazu Clan members in a matter of seconds had spread throughout the entire clan within a night. Dealing with such an expert was a headache, hence they decided to send a diplomat over.

“This is a gift from us, we hope to appease your anger.” Tanaka Shiro clapped his hands as 2 beauties entered from outside.

The older girl was about 17 or 18, and she had an alluring figure, with slight make-up on that accentuated her features. The younger girl was about 13 or 14, and her long hair was in a ponytail. She had long slender limbs, and surprisingly, a well-developed C-cup chest. Her face had large eyes and was pretty, it truly fit the description of a loli.

Tanaka Shiro spoke respectfully: “This is Yoshino Megumi, an idol before the apocalypse. She’s 17 this year. This is her sister

Yoshino Sayaka, 14 this year. They're both virgins, and we hope that they're to your liking."

The sisters were one of the top beauties in the Shimazu clan. They were saved to pull strong experts over to the Shimazu Clan. Few people could withstand such a tempting pair of sisters, especially when one of them used to be an idol.

Yue Zhong eyed Tanaka Shiro and spoke mildly: "I'll accept the gifts then. Yesterday's matters has come to a close. What else do you have for me?"

Tanaka Shiro quickly ordered the sisters: "Megumi, Sayaka, go over to your master!"

The pair of sisters kneeled in front of Yue Zhong and greeted: "Yoshino Megumi (Yoshino Sayaka), greets Master!"

Yue Zhong called out: "Masako, take them away!"

Masako came out and led the Yoshino sisters away.

Tanaka Shiro saw that Yue Zhong had accepted the 2 sisters and dived straight to the point: "Yue Zhong-sama, our Shimazu Clan hopes to form an alliance with you!"

When Yue Zhong heard his words, he replied without batting an eyelid: "Alliance? It's not impossible. What conditions do you guys have? If they are acceptable, I'll form an alliance with you!"



# Chapter 547: Clash!

---

Tanaka Shiro handed over a photo album and a tablet to Yue Zhong and said: “Yue Zhong-sama, we’re willing to give you a thousand ton of food, 10 beautiful virgins, 1 ton of fuel, 2 off-road vehicles. At the same time, as an expression of goodwill, our Shimazu Clan Leader would like to offer his daughter, Shimazu Mina’s hand in marriage. This are her pictures and videos.”

Yue Zhong flippee the album casually and checked out the tablet, and saw what Shimazu Mina was like.

She was a girl of about 14 to 15, and wore a faded yellow skirt and white cotton top. Although her figure was petite, she had explosive measurements, boasting a C-cup bust, fair skin, and an extraordinary aura. Her looks were graceful and refined, and when she smiled, it was truly charming.

Yue Zhong did not skip a beat and continued: “Add another 200 rifles and 20,000 rounds of ammunition!”

Tanaka Shiro replied: “Sir, I can only promise an additional 10 rifles and 1,000 rounds. However, we can provide 20 more virgins. As long as you agree to the alliance, we can still send more virgins from today onwards.”

In this apocalyptic world, firearms were more important and precious compared to virgins. The Shimazu Clan was willing to hand over virgins rather than firearms to prevent Yue Zhong’s military might from increasing.

Yue Zhong had no intentions of expanding in Japan anyway, and he directed the topic to his true aim: “Alright. I agree to those terms. However, I heard that you guys have a broadcast station. I would like to use it, there shouldn’t be a problem right?”

Tanaka Shiro celebrated silently: “No problem! The details will have to be discussed at Yama county though, so we would like to

invite you there. The broadcast station is there.”

Yue Zhong turned to Waichi and Shohei, giving an order: “Alright! Waichi, Shohei, I’ll follow Tanaka Shiro to Yama County. I leave this place to you guys.”

“Hai!”

Waichi and Shohei were overjoyed and quickly bowed respectfully.

After making his arrangements, Yue Zhong organized 40 Enhancers of Level 20 and above into 2 groups, handing command of each group to Muto Shin and Ida Kyoko respectively. He brought Shiroyuki and Asami with him on the journey to Yama County.

Although the Shimazu Clan was known to control Yama County, in actual fact, they had conquered a small town nearby as their base. There were over 500,000 zombies gathered within Yama County and the Shimazu Clan had no way of taking care of them.

The town that was the Shimazu’s base of operation was called Sakura Town. It used to hold over 30,000 people, hence it wasn’t a problem for the 10,000-strong Shimazu Clan.

Prior to the apocalypse, Sakura Town was known for its hot springs, which had now turned to a huge giant spring. There were 6m-tall walls constructed around the town, surrounded by long rivers as well. The entire place had become some sort of fortress.

When Yue Zhong and the rest entered the town, they saw many survivors busy constructing defences. Men, women, the old and young alike, they were all hard at work. In order to face against the impending horde, everyone was working hard.

At this time, it was about lunch, and Yue Zhong could see the survivors lining up orderly to get their food.

Out of curiosity, Yue Zhong walked over to take a look, and discovered that the survivors were having porridge and wild leaf.

“The Shimazu Clan’s resources should be thin as well.” Yue Zhong eyed the food and the weak-looking survivors and came to a conclusion.

The problem of food was a large one that all factions had to face since the start of the apocalypse. Yue Zhong had managed to fight battle after battle because the number of survivors he had was less by over a 100 times. With enough resources from prior to the apocalypse, they were able to sustain themselves.

“Let go of me!! Let go of me!!” Just as Yue Zhong was observing the survivors, he heard Shiroyuki’s voice from the side.

Yue Zhong frowned and turned, only to see a few youths with dyed hair and strange clothing surrounding Shiroyuki and Asami. The leader was a blond hair punk with piercings in his ears and nose. He was currently grabbing Shiroyuki’s hands.

Muto Shin looked at the youth and his eyes flashed with a hint of fear, leading his men to face off against the rest of the youths.

Yue Zhong’s eyes flashed with an icy look and he strided over.

Tanaka Shiro looked at the youth and called out to him anxiously: “Arai-kun! Quick let go of the woman! She’s Yue Zhong-sama’s woman!”

The youth was called Arai Fuji, and he was the successor to one of the 3 strong factions with the Shimazu clan, the Arai Clan. He had a good background and was an Evolver to boot. His level was above 45, and was a strong expert in the Shimazu Clan. Due to his strength, he had fearlessly snatched Shiroyuki from Muto Shin’s side.

Arai Fuji roared with laughter as he made to grab Shiroyuki’s breasts. He liked big-breasted women: “Yue Zhong, that China man? China dog?! What an idiot, he dared to come here, he’s practically seeking death! I will kill him later, and take in all his women. Such a beauty, only I have the qualifications to enjoy!!

Hahaha!”

Just as his hands were about to land on Shiroyuki’s breasts, a flash of a blade swung by, and his right hand was removed cleanly from his arm, fresh blood splattering.

“Ah!!!” Arai Fuji could not help but screamed out.

“Go to hell! Your women will be mine!” Yue Zhong’s gaze was icy cold as he swung his Black Tooth Blade, and Arai Fuji’s head was immediately chopped off. Fresh blood splattered everywhere, dyeing the ground red.

Yue Zhong then pointed to the dozen of youths who had followed Arai Fuji and barked: “You fuckers, get down on your knees. Serve me, or you can die!”

This was Japan. It was not in China where Yue Zhong was unwilling to kill. However, the moment he acted, nothing could stop him.

Muto Shin immediately translated his words into Japanese.

“Kill him! Avenge Arai-kun!!”

“Everybody, charge together!! Kill him!!”

6 of the youths immediately shouted and charged at Yue Zhong, activating their abilities. They charged at Yue Zhong with a speed of about 6 to 7 times that of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong’s eyes narrowed, and he brought down the life-taking Black Tooth Blade a few more times, instantly slicing the assaulters in two. Their body parts flopped to the ground in huge showers of blood.

“Demon!! He’s a demon!!”

“Demon!! He’s a demon!! Too scary!!”

“Don’t kill me!! Please!! Please don’t kill me!”

The rest of the youths immediately got down on their knees and

pleaded for their lives.

“Take me to the Arai clan!” Yue Zhong pointed at them with the Black Tooth Blade and barked out an order.

“Yes!! Sir!! Please come this way!!”

The youths stood up and began to lead Yue Zhong towards the Arai Clan.

Tanaka Shiro’s face was pale white as he tried to advise Yue Zhong: “Yue Zhong-sama! The Arai family is one of the 3 strongest factions in the Shimazu Clan! Please reconsider, don’t be rash! Let me go and discuss this with the leader. Please maintain your calm and do not antagonize the Arai family any longer!”

Arai Fuji was was a natural Evolver and he was just executed in cold blood by Yue Zhong. This was enough grounds for both parties to have an irreconcilable grudge. When he thought up to this point, Tanaka Shiro felt his head hurt. He had already guessed that Yue Zhong was not to be provoked, but he never expected that Yue Zhong had actually killed the Shimazu people in their own territory.

Yue Zhong’s gaze was extremely icy as he walked over towards the Arai Clan: “Is this the way the Shimazu Clan welcomes its guests? I came here out of goodwill to be your ally, and there’re people already intending to kill me and steal my women. Am I that easy to bully? Tanaka Shiro, save your breath! Today, I’ll wipe out the Arai Clan!”

“Damn it!! How did it come to this, I need to report this to Shimazu-sama!” Tanaka Shiro’s face fell, and he hurried towards the direction of the main Shimazu house.

“It’s this place!!” One of the youths that submitted pointed to a luxurious place and told Yue Zhong.

“Charge in! Kill all those who don’t kneel to surrender!” Yue Zhong shot forward like an arrow and killed the 2 guards with a

swing of his Black Tooth Blade before shouting out the vicious order.

“Charge in! Kill all those who don’t kneel to surrender!” Muto Shin followed in with bloodshot eyes. He was extremely clear that he had allowed Shiroyuki to be snatched, which caused Yue Zhong to be extremely unhappy. If he didn’t perform better, his position beside Yue Zhong would definitely plummet.

Yue Zhong charged into the Arai house and immediately felt a sense of danger. He leaped towards the left.

A sniper bullet fired at where Yue Zhong was, if he had been the slightest bit slower, his brain might have been penetrated. Apparently there was a sniper protecting the family. Their position was not simple.

Yue Zhong lifted his head towards the direction of the sniper and shot out a ball of Devil Flame. It instantly incinerated the entire bunker, turning the sniper inside into ash.

“Who are you people, you dare attack the Arai Clan?!” Motoki Shiro, a Level 56 expert came charging into the villa, leading 20 Enhancers of above Level 30. He roared furiously when he saw Muto Shin and the rest massacring the people in the Arai Clan.

# Chapter 548: Annihilating the Arai Clan!

---

“Kill all of the people!” Yue Zhong’s eyes blazed, and he activated his Shadow Steps. His speed instantly soared, exceeding a Type 2 Lightning. He disappeared and appeared right in front of Motoki Shiro in a flash, slashing at him.

Yue Zhong’s speed had vastly surpassed that of a Type 2 Lightning. Even some weaker Type 3 Mutant Beasts might not be able to contend with him. That single slash of his was as fast as lightning, and Motoki Shiro did not even have time to react nor cast his own ability. His head was separated from his body in a shower of blood.

“Who is this guy?”

“Lord Motoki had been killed in just a second!!”

“Is he a demon?”

Seeing the strongest expert of the Arai Clan taken out in one strike, the soldiers present felt a chill in their hearts, and lost their will to fight in an instant.

Initially, if these 20 Level 30 Enhancers were to give their all, even if they were ultimately disposed of by Yue Zhong, they would still be enough to create some trouble for him. However, in that display of strength, they immediately fell on their knees, without a single shred of their courage or confidence.

“Clan Lord-sama, things are bad!! Yue Zhong is killing his way in! Lord Motoki Shiro has been killed by him in a single move!” One servant ran into a bedroom and reported anxiously to a middle-aged man. This middle-aged man was precisely the patriarch of the Arai Clan, Arai Onikiri.

Arai Onikiri’s face fell as he threw the 12-year-old girl in his embrace onto the floor, shouting: “What?! Motoki Shiro is dead? How is that possible?!”

Motoki Shiro was the top expert of the Arai Clan, and Arai Onikiri just couldn't believe that he would be killed by someone else.

“He’s dead, you’re next.” Yue Zhong stepped in at this moment, his gaze traveled from Arai Onikiri to the little girl beside him whose body was riddled with bite marks and eyes were devoid of emotions. Yue Zhong’s killing intent intensified.

Arai Onikiri frowned and asked Yue Zhong without his usual overbearing tone: “You must be Yue Zhong! I’m Arai Onikiri of the Arai Clan. This is the first time we’ve met. We have no grudge, why have you suddenly charged in to kill my clan members? This is the Shimazu territory, do you think you’ll get away with this?”

Yue Zhong stepped forward and his blade swung down, causing the head of Arai Onikiri to soar through the air. A hot shower of blood sprayed everywhere, dying the room red.

Yue Zhong looked at the headless corpse and spat coldly: “You talk too much. Today, I’m using your head to establish my position.”

“Don’t kill me! I’ll let you do what you want. Please don’t hit me. Don’t hit me! I’m a dog! I’m a bitch! Rarff! Rarff! Rarff!” The little girl saw Arai Onikiri’s corpse and fear flashed in her eyes. She crawled towards Yue Zhong’s feet like a dog and pleaded while barking.

Arai Onikiri was also a pervert, and loved to torment young girls. It seemed that this young girl was one of his victims.

Yue Zhong eyed the little girl, noticing that her eyes were large and her skin was fair. Her body was frail and small, and her limbs looked like they would break at any moment. Her features were delicate and her bust was already well-developed, looking like a pair of buns. She was a pretty loli.

Yue Zhong looked at the trembling girl and frowned before using



Japanese: “Stand up!”

“Hai!” The girl got up shakingly, looking at Yue Zhong with fear.

“Put on some clothes and come with me!” Yue Zhong threw her a set of clothes before turning around to leave the room.

The girl received the clothes and stood silently behind Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong asked: “What’s your name?”

The Japanese loli began to speak: “I’m Ogura Reiya. 12 this year. 5 days ago, my mother and I were captured by Arai Onikiri. After 5 days of training, I was sent today to service Arai Onikiri-sama. I haven’t been here long, and wasn’t humiliated yet by Arai Onikiri-sama, before you appeared, Sir.”

“Where’s your mother?”

Ogura Reiya’s face turned pale and her expression instantly became depressed, as tears welled up in her eyes: “She’s already dead.”

Ogura Reiya’s mother had provoked Arai Onikiri, who had ordered for her to be tortured to death. Little Reiya had seen her mother’s death with her own eyes, that was why she had lost all spirit, and was forced to become like a dog for Arai Onikiri.

As Japan was well known for its AV, there were many positions of ‘instructors’. In fact, these instructors were similar to the ancient China’s mamasan or pimp. It was just that with the modernization of society, such roles were much lesser now.

Yue Zhong took the information in and spoke mildly: “The dead are already dead. The living have to continue living. Move on!”

After all, he had seen his fair share of stories. Reiya’s story was just one of too many.

Reiya wiped her eyes and looked at Yue Zhong, speaking innocently: “Hai! I understand. Today, you saved me. From today

on, Ogura Reiya is Sir's slave and bitch."

Reiya had experienced the cruel nature of the apocalyptic world. She knew that only by relying on an expert, would one be able to live on. After all, living like a slave of an expert was much better than living like an ordinary survivor.

"Alright!" Yue Zhong could tell what Reiya was thinking but he didn't reject her. In this world, even if he did not allow her to be by his side, she would rely on others. Those without strength would have to live like that.

After Motoki Shiro and Arai Onikiri had been slaughtered by Yue Zhong, the entire Arai family collapsed. There were many experts and elite soldiers, but the moment Muto Shin raised the decapitated heads of their leaders, the rest of the elites immediately surrendered.

There were a few stubborn ones, so Yue Zhong made short work of them.

Not long after, the Arai Clan settled down. However, there were numerous corpses lying about, and fresh blood dyed every part of this lavish dwelling. Many of the Arai Clan members had been tied up as captives and were kneeling on the ground.

Outside the Arai Clan, an entire armed battalion, together with 36 armored vehicles, 12 tanks and 12 assault helicopters had surrounded the premise.

This was the trump card of the Shimazu Clan. It was a modern army. The Shimazu Clan had managed to bring the town under its control and established itself as a major power because of their equipment. Just their elite battalion alone was enough to deal with many Enhancers.

Prior to the apocalypse, although Japan was not allowed to have aircraft carriers or nuclear weapons, their self defence forces were pretty well equipped.

The troops had surrounded the Arai Clan's premises, but did not charge in. Instead, they were facing off against Muto Shin's forces.

Right at this time, Yue Zhong walked out of the villa, and his cold voice rang out: "What's the meaning of this? You want to start a war with me?"

The moment the soldiers saw Yue Zhong, every one of them felt a chill. They could not help but raise their weapons against him. Their intuition told them that this man was dangerous.

Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed and he leaped forward, his killing intent billowing towards the sky: "You guys dare to raise your weapons against me! You want to force me right? Good! Let me show you what a massacre is!"

The dozen of elite soldiers closest to him were immediately affected by Yue Zhong's powerful killing intent, and involuntarily stepped back. Their faces were pale.

Right at this time, Tanaka Shiro came running out full of perspiration as he shouted: "Stop!! Yue Zhong-sama! We don't mean that! Please, calm down!"

He was extremely clear about Yue Zhong's terrifying temper. The experts in the Arai Clan were numerous, but had been easily controlled by him the moment he charged in. Even Motoki Shiro had been sliced in one move. Such an expert was sure to have numerous trump cards. Even if in the unlikely scenario that the Shimazu Clan brings him down, they would have to suffer incredible losses as well.

If such a thing were to happen, Tanaka Shiro knew that the Shimazu head would not let him off. As for the deployment of the elite forces, it was to show their might, the Shimazu Clan had no intention of actually attacking Yue Zhong.

"Lower your weapons!" Tanaka Shiro shouted out.

The soldiers immediately lowered their weapons.

“Hmph!” Yue Zhong scoffed coldly, and kept his Black Tooth Blade back on his back. He had no intention of fighting to the death with the Shimazu Clan anyway. After all, if both sides were to really fight, other than Yue Zhong, the rest would definitely die.

Tanaka Shiro walked towards Yue Zhong and spoke respectfully: “Yue Zhong-sama, the Clan Leader would like to see you. Please follow me.”

Seeing for oneself is better than hearing from a hundred others. Tanaka Shiro had finally seen how terrifying Yue Zhong was, and he became even more respectful. The Japanese were a proud race, but they knew when to yield. In the case of World War II, the Japanese had only surrendered after the 2 bombs had devastated a huge part of their nation. They had then become docile. Of course, if America became weak, then it would be a different story.

The Shimazu Clan was located at a deep part of Sakura Town, in a huge but ancient-looking estate. Many of the rich and powerful liked to live in large and spacious but traditional buildings. Of course, in places like Tokyo, where land was scarce, it was harder to have such luxury. However, such building architecture and design would be common in the smaller towns.

Under Tanaka Shiro’s guidance, Yue Zhong and Kyoko walked through a number of corridors and passages before arriving at the centre of the mansion.

# Chapter 549: Alliance

---

Inside a large hall, an old but fit man of about 56 years old, with a short buzz cut and wearing a kimono sat on a tatami. Beside the old man, there was a beautiful young lady in a kimono kneeling and grinding tea leaves.

The old man looked at Yue Zhong and there was a slight smile: “I’m Shimazu Yuji. Yue Zhong, I’m very pleased to meet you here. Please! Sit!”

“How do you do!” Yue Zhong eyed this leader of the Shimazu Clan and sat down comfortably. He was not used to the Japanese style of kneeling.

“This is for you!” The young beauty served cups of tea to both Yue Zhong and Kyoko.

“Thank you!” Yue Zhong received the cup of tea and placed it on one side without drinking it. He might be strong, but he wasn’t entirely impervious to poison. There were all sorts of mutated plants in the apocalypse and he would die if he was poisoned as well.

Shimazu Yuji pointed to the young girl and said: “This is my daughter, Shimazu Mina. Mina, go greet your husband.”

Shimazu Mina came in front of Yue Zhong and bowed elegantly, before speaking in a graceful manner: “Yue Zhong-sama, this Miss is lacking in many areas, I seek your guidance in the future.”

“Good! Get up!” He nodded slightly at Shimazu Mina, before turning to face Shimazu Yuji: “Shimazu Clan Head, is there something important for calling me here?”

Shimazu Mina adjusted her position slightly, kneeling beside Yue Zhong like she was already his wife. Since she had been brought up with certain etiquettes, she was clear on what she had to do.

Shimazu Yuji looked at Yue Zhong and smiled with affection:

“You still call me as Shimazu Clan Head? Isn’t ‘Father-in-law’ better?”

Yue Zhong chuckled: “Shimazu Clan Head, I reckon that it’s only right that I call you that after we have gone through with the rites.”

Even if it was a political marriage, getting Yue Zhong to suddenly call a stranger his father-in-law was strange.

Shimazu Fuji looked at Yue Zhong and his smile slowly receded, only to be replaced by a serious look: “That is acceptable. However, even if there was a reason for your actions, wiping out the Arai clan was too much.”

Yue Zhong did not miss a beat and asked: “Well things had happened like that. Shimazu Clan Head, what do you intend to do?”

Shimazu Fuji’s face was full of smiles again as he suggested: “The Arai Clan was an important strength in our Shimazu Clan. The zombies in Yama County would invade soon. Having lost the Arai clan is equivalent to losing a huge part of our strength. Yue Zhong, I hope that you can take your men to help protect this town. If you can promise me this, the past matters will be treated as a misunderstanding!”

Since the Arai Clan was wiped out by Yue Zhong, Shimazu Fuji was naturally filled with anger. However, as the Clan Lord, he could not just allow anger to cloud his judgement. If they could get the assistance of Yue Zhong, then, their battle prowess would increase to a terrifying level. As long as they could deal with this threat, they would be able to expand further in the future.

In the face of such a critical situation, Shimazu Fuji was unwilling to make an enemy out of Yue Zhong whose strength was truly unfathomable.

Yue Zhong’s eyes narrowed and he stated his conditions: “Sure!

But, I want all the Chinese survivors in the Shimazu Clan.”

After coming to Japan, although Yue Zhong had recruited Shin and Waichi, they were not trustworthy yet.

Yue Zhong had no means of seeing through the thoughts of a person, but he was extremely clear. The Japanese were only submissive to him because of his strength. If something were to go wrong, then they would definitely betray him at the first moment. This was why he wanted to have the Chinese survivors in the Shimazu Clan.

There was a strange glint in Shimazu Fuji’s eyes, as he spoke: “The Chinese survivors? Sure! I can give them all to you. Mina, go lead him to the Chinese survivors.”

Shimazu Mina stood up and brought a whiff of fragrance as she revealed a beautiful smile to Yue Zhong: “Yes, Otou-sama! Otto-sama, please come with me.”

(Otou = Father. Otto = Husband.)

Yue Zhong returned Shimazu Mina’s smile and followed the beautiful lady out.

The moment they left the room, Shimazu Fuji’s expression sunk, as the wrinkles on his face became more pronounced. His eyes held a dangerous and grim look.

After a while, he regained his composure, and spoke to a shadow in the corner: “Yamada, what do you think?”

From the corner, a person wrapped tightly in black stepped out, only his eyes were visible. A ninja from the legends stepped out and appeared beside Shimazu Fuji. This ninja-like person was the trump card and strongest assassin of the Shimazu Clan, Yamada Ichiuma. His level was above 58, and he was an Agility-based Evolver.

Yamada Ichiuma was the strongest expert of the Shimazu Clan, and he had contributed greatly to them.

He spoke in a cold and harsh tone: “Sir! He’s extremely strong! Furthermore, he was vigilant at all times. If we were to clash, I would only be able to last 5 minutes. If it were an assassination, I only have 30% confidence of succeeding.”

“Only 30? Too little!” Shimazu Fuji frowned. He disliked the fact that there was a foreigner with immense strength running about amok.

Yamada Ichiuma’s evaluation of Yue Zhong was extremely high: “This is also under the assumption that he’s at his least cautious state. Only then there’s a 30% chance. If he were to maintain vigilant, I wouldn’t even be able to get within 20m of him.”

Yamada Ichiuma had assassinated numerous experts. He had killed his fair share of Mutant Beasts and high-level zombies. That was how he was capable of comprehending the pressure Yue Zhong gave him. It was an intuition molded by experiencing countless battles.

Shimazu Fuji waved his hands: “Dismissed!”

“Hai!” Yamada Ichiuma swiftly disappeared into the shadows again.

Shimazu Fuji pressed a button by his side and a beautiful Japanese woman appeared, kneeling by his side.

Shimazu Fuji eyed this beauty and ordered: “Noriko, convey my orders! Tell everybody of the Shimazu Clan to not offend this Yue Zhong. Try to become friends with him.”

This beautiful Japanese lady was called Iwa Noriko, and she was one of the beautiful women kept by Shimazu Fuji after the apocalypse. She was dignified and well versed in customs, and was one of the overseeing members of the Shimazu Clan.

“Hai!” Iwa Noriko bowed respectfully and left.

“Since we can’t afford to make him an enemy, we can only try to be friends!”



After Noriko left, Shimazu Fuji's sullen voice resounded softly in the room.

Inside a warehouse that was converted into a prison, 30 Japanese were currently keeping guard over the prisoners.

“Crawl faster!! Crawl faster!!”

“Fuck!! Bitch No. 1, you better fucking crawl faster! Otherwise, you can forget about eating!”

Amidst the cruel laughter of the Japanese, 6 women with scars all over their bodies were crawling on the ground, scrambling to reach a white line on the ground.

All around the prison, there were over 200 Chinese survivors with wooden expressions.

This was one of the programmes, Horse Run, that pit the women survivors against one another in a race. The last 2 contestants would usually be fed dirty water and scarce dog food. And the front 4 would be fed normal water and scarce dog food.

As the Japanese laughed, one of the naked women rushed past the finishing line, and fell to the ground. As she gasped for air, she croaked out in Japanese: “Water! Food!”

One of the Japanese kicked out at the woman with a savage glint, before taking off his pants and started to pee on her face: “Stinking bitch!! You can crawl so fast, you cost me to lose a cigarette! Since you want water!! This is for you!! Open up!! Drink it all!!”

The Chinese woman whose looks were considered decent opened her mouth numbly, accepting the revolting pee.

The Japanese man roared out in laughter: “Hahaha! Look! Everybody, this woman actually drinks pee!! The Chinese are truly wretched!! What a bunch of sluts!! They're just like dogs! No, they're worse than dogs! Haha!”

The rest of the Japanese laughed out as well. Tormenting the

women was their source of entertainment, after all, many would go insane from the apocalypse.

There was a woman amongst the survivors that listened to the laughter around. Her name was Jin Li. She was a Shanghai student who was enamored with the Japanese culture. She always felt that the Japanese were better than the Chinese, and had intended to marry a Japanese. After she graduated, she moved over to Japan in the hopes of living her dreams.

However, the Japanese man that Jin Li was seeing soon swindled her out of her money, selling her to the adult industry. Jin Li had no friends nor family to rely on, and was reduced to a wretched state.

After the apocalypse set in, while the lands were filled with zombies, she relied on selling her body to rely on experts. She managed to survive like that before ending up in the Shimazu Clan as a toy.

5 Japanese went to the cell and took off their clothes before proceeding to rape some of the women.

“Get the hell out!” One of the soldiers walked among the survivors and his eyes suddenly lit up, as he grabbed a young girl of about 11 to 12. The child’s face was full of dirt and grime, her hair messy, and there was even a putrid smell about her.

“Let go of my child!!!” A skinny male survivor screamed out as he shoved the soldier away.

# Chapter 550: Rascal

---

“Baka!! Go to hell!” The Japanese soldier was enraged and used the butt of his rifle to smash the stomach of the skinny survivor, causing him to kneel down, his body bent over in pain.

(Baka = Idiot)

“Daddy!!” The child who was grabbed immediately shouted shrilly.

“Go to hell!” The Japanese soldier laughed cruelly and stabbed at the male survivor with his rifle, penetrating his abdomen and stabbing at the intestines.

The little child immediately wailed with bloodshot eyes, her voice heart wrenching: “Daddy!! Daddy!! Daddy!! No!!”

The man whose intestines were slashed lifted his head to look at his child, reaching out as though to grab her. He loved his child very much, and wanted to look at her once more before he died.

“Daddy! Daddy!! Daddy!!” The kid cried out as she struggled madly like an injured beast. Her screams were pitiful, and caused one’s heart to clench in sorrow.

The 200 Chinese survivors lowered their heads silently, not bearing to watch the scene. The soldiers were cruel, and if they were to speak up, they would definitely be killed. In this apocalypse, human lives were treated like ants. In Japan, the Chinese led lives that were wretched.

There was a lot of right-wing movement prior to the apocalypse, and there were many anti-Chinese sentiments.

Many wished they could rid their nation of the Chinese. However, as there was still society norms and measures in place, no one could just brazenly indulge in their exclusion nor xenophobic behaviour.

However, after the apocalypse happened, the Chinese in Japan became the lowest life forms. Many of the Japanese were already cruel enough to their own people, needless to say, the fate of the Chinese that they hated.

“Chinese dog, die!” The Japanese soldier watched the struggling little kid and licked his lips somewhat excitedly, before pointing his rifle to the middle-aged Chinese man’s head and pulled the trigger.

Following the loud sound of firing, a bullet hole appeared in between the brows of the man. His eyes lost the light of life, and he crumpled to the floor. His vacant eyes were still staring in the direction of the child.

“Daddy!!!!” The child watched the cruel death of her father and wailed out in a heartbreaking scream, her eyes losing all will, and she stopped struggling as well.

“Hahahaha!!” The Japanese soldier immediately threw the rifle in his hand to one side and reached to tear the clothes of the kid.

Just as his hands were about to come in contact with the child, there was a gunshot, and the right hand of the Japanese soldier was immediately blasted.

“Ah!!! Ah!!” The soldier screamed at the sight of his missing right hand and the immense agony.

Right as the gunshot fired, the rest of the Japanese soldiers who were raping the other women immediately became alarmed, and turned their head to the source of the gunshot.

At the entrance, Yue Zhong walked in with a frosty expression.

Yue Zhong looked at the soldiers who were pointing at him with their rifles, his eyes blazing with a strong killing intent: “Put down your weapons, or die!”

Shimazu Mina walked out from behind Yue Zhong and swiftly barked out in Japanese: “I’m the Shimazu Clan’s princess,

Shimazu Mina. I order you all to put down your weapon. This person here is my fiance, and your future leader. Pointing your weapon at him is a huge crime!”

Although she looked demure and harmless, in truth, she was an extremely capable person.

If she wasn't a girl, Shimazu Fuji would definitely have passed the reins of the family to her. She could feel that the rage of Yue Zhong would cost the lives of all the Japanese soldiers here.

Under her orders, the Japanese soldiers hesitated a while before lowering their weapons. They did not dare refute the orders of the princess of the clan.

“Baka!!! Go to hell!!” The soldier who was injured by Yue Zhong charged at him in his blind rage.

Yue Zhong raised his right hand to grab onto the face of the Japanese soldier and threw him down like a broken rag doll. He then stepped on the back of the soldier, exerting a mountain-like pressure.

He looked at the scrawny kid, and asked coldly: “Rascal! Do you want to avenge your father?”

The little kid understood vengeance, and the originally soulless eyes of hers stirred, as she immediately knelt in front of Yue Zhong and shouted in Chinese: “I want!! I want revenge!! I want revenge!! Uncle!! Please help me!!”

Yue Zhong handed a .54 to her and said: “As long as you swear fealty, this gun is yours! Take it and fire at this scum here, your wish will be fulfilled.”

The kid received the gun and immediately pointed it at the Japanese soldier.

“Baka!! What do you think you're doing?!” The rest of the soldiers shouted out in alarm and raised their guns, not willing to see their comrade being killed.

Yue Zhong swiftly raised his hand and fired consecutively, as a few rounds found their target in the soldiers' heads.

A number of the Japanese soldiers immediately fell down dead, bullet holes in their heads.

Shimazu Mina witnessed dozens of the soldiers dying at Yue Zhong's hands and her face fell, immediately kneeling in front of Yue Zhong and pleaded: "Stop!! Otto-sama, please calm down!! Please calm down!!"

Every death signified a decrease in the Shimazu Clan's strength. Furthermore, Shimazu Mina did not want to see any more conflict between this terrifying Chinese man and her subordinates.

Yue Zhong's action of killing those Japanese soldiers in a split second shocked the rest of the soldiers, as they eyed him with renewed fear and horror, not daring to make any movements.

Seeing them all recoil in shock, Yue Zhong stopped, and his gaze landed on the kid.

"Beast! Die!" The kid screamed at the Japanese soldier with rage and squeezed the trigger while gritting her teeth.

Following the gunshot, a bullet hole appeared in the head of the Japanese soldier.

The kid was also injured by the recoil of the gun, falling down on the floor. However, she gripped it tightly and stubbornly, her eyes filled with a savage bloodlust.

At the next instant, the kid turned pale and vomited. After throwing up a bout of her stomach acid, she crumpled to the floor, her body flushing red.

"Fever?" Yue Zhong shot forwards and felt her forehead, feeling a burning temperature.

Yue Zhong carried the smelly and dirty child, handing her to Kyoko: "Kyoko! Go take this rascal back to clean her up, then

arrange for her to rest. Give her some medicine.”

“Yes!” Kyoko hugged the child and left.

After settling the issue of the kid, Yue Zhong turned to face the other 200 survivors in the prison.

There were about 50 men and the rest, women and children. In this apocalypse, as foreigners, men were more likely to be killed, and as long as women were not too ugly, they would be caught as tools to be used.

Yue Zhong eyed them with a complicated gaze, saying: “I’m Yue Zhong, from China. If you’re willing to swear loyalty to me, follow me. As long as you’re loyal, I will feed you and give you your dignity. You will live your lives with pride. Those who are willing, stand on my left. Those who aren’t, you can stay where you are, or stand to my right. I’m giving you 20 seconds! 20...”

Hearing his words, the 200 survivors glanced at the Japanese soldiers with fear, not daring to move immediately. They feared that it was a trap, that they would fall into the tiger’s mouth upon leaving the wolf’s den.

Yue Zhong saw this and his heart sank. He never imagined for them to be so weak-willed. He had come to rescue them, and these bastards were still hesitating.

When he reached 5, one man gritted his teeth and hurried stood by Yue Zhong’s left. The man’s action stirred the rest, as a number stood up and immediately went over.

After his countdown, Yue Zhong threw the rest of the survivors who stayed, including Jin Li, with a complex but grim look. There were 60 of them who stayed or stood on his right.

“Let’s go!” Yue Zhong eyed them coldly, before turning around to leave.

Shimazu Mina walked by his side and pointed to those who stayed, asking: “What do we do with them?”

“Deal with them how you like. They have nothing to do with me.” His eyes flashed with a cold and ruthless look. Since they were willing to stay on as slaves and dogs, he didn’t want to force them otherwise.

Jin Li looked at those who were leaving and her shrill voice rang out: “Don’t trust him! That Chinese is lying to you! Only the Japanese are good people!! The Japanese are better than the Chinese!!”



# Chapter 551: 5 Evolvers!

---

The Japanese were better than the Chinese. This thought had long since become the only truth to Jin Li. If this belief crumbled, she wouldn't have sold her body initially to work in Japan. All her actions leading up to her marriage with the Japanese would also have been meaningless. Even if she became just a piece of meat to be toyed with, she would hang on to that motto. Furthermore, she hoped that the Japanese soldiers would treat her better if she stood up for them. At the very least, they might give her clean water and bread.

“Baka!! Shut up!! Stupid bitch!! Damn piece of meat, who allowed you to speak!!” One Japanese soldier immediately lashed out viciously, smacking Jin Li in her mouth. He was afraid that her words might anger that killing devil and hurried to shut her up.

Jin Li rolled on the ground, a few of her teeth knocked out. After being treated mercilessly, her belief and support was decimated and crumbled instantly. She finally lost her mind and turned into a maniac, muttering: “Japanese... superior, I want to marry... a Japanese...”

“Save me!! Yue Zhong!! I'm willing to follow you!!”

“I'm willing to swear loyalty! Save me!!”

Those who were hesitating previously looked at Jin Li and her wretched state, and a chill came over their hearts. They hurried to plead with Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at them, his eyes indifferent as he left a statement: “I only give one chance. Since you guys didn't cherish it, don't blame me.”

“Let's go!”

Yue Zhong turned around and together with Shimazu Mina, they led the survivors out. The survivors followed closely for fear of

being abandoned. In Japan, they had only this guy in front of them left.

“Haha! Get down, raise your asses!!” The moment Yue Zhong and the rest left, the remaining Japanese soldiers immediately went straight to torturing the survivors that were left behind. They wanted to vent their frustration, fear and anger of the deaths of their comrades on these damn Chinese people. Only by doing so would they feel like they have regained some form of control of their lives.

Shimazu Mina was efficient and quickly arranged for accommodations for Yue Zhong as well as the other survivors. She even got people to send water and bread to the survivors.

As the survivors bit into their food and drank their water, every single one of them shed tears. It was just simple bread and water, but to them, it was the greatest meal they’ve ever had. After all, they had been at the mercy of the Japanese soldiers in the prison, and were even forced to consume urine, and expired dog food.

Yue Zhong asked the first man who joined him: “What’s your name? Your occupation before the apocalypse?”

The guy was an average-looking male, with a knowledgeable look and scholarly aura. He heard Yue Zhong’s question and immediately replied: “Sir, I’m called Yuan Tian Gang! I used to be a senior engineer in the field of optoelectronics.”

(Optoelectronics: Branch of technology concerned with the combined use of electronics and light.)

“A senior engineer in optoelectronics?” Yue Zhong’s eyebrows arched slightly. This was a rare talent, if he had this man on board his research team in Gui Ning, the development of the laser gun technology would likely be propelled.

Yue Zhong continued: “Amongst the rest of them, are there any men like you?”

Yuan Tian Gang pondered a moment before shaking his head: “Not that I know of! There should only be me.”

Yue Zhong then spoke: “En! I will assign someone to train you guys in combat. From now on. Whatever you all were in the past, work hard towards becoming a soldier. Go tell the rest, let them make their mental preparations.”

Yuan Tian Gang replied with respect, feeling a chill in his heart: “Yes!”

Yuan Tian Gang was extremely clear that in this current society, scientists could not compare to farmers. To a weak faction, a scientist was not as useful as a soldier.

After hesitating a while, Yuan Tian Gang approached Yue Zhong: “Sir, there’s something else!”

“Speak!”

He was somewhat uncomfortable as he continued: “Among us that were captured into the Shimazu Clan, there’s an expert in the field of kinetics, and an expert in the study of composite armor. They were both taken by the Shimazu Clan. I’m not sure if this news will be of use to you.”

“Kinetics! Composite Armor! Did the Shimazu obtain some technological blueprint?” Yue Zhong came to a conjecture when he heard those words.

Yue Zhong chuckled lightly and handed a vial of Evolving Liquid to Yuan Tian Gang: “Good!! This news was vital to me. I appreciate the loyalty, and I will definitely not disappoint those who are loyal. This is an Evolving Liquid. After consumption, you will become a powerful Evolver.”

“Many thanks Sir! I will definitely serve you with my life!” Yuan Tian Gang knew that Yue Zhong didn’t need to resort to any tricks to kill him. Upon receiving the liquid, he saluted Yue Zhong, before dumping the contents into his mouth.

The moment the liquid entered his body, he also fell into a feverish state.

“Kyoko!! This is an Evolving Liquid. Drink it and you’ll become an Evolver.” Yue Zhong beckoned for Kyoko and handed her a vial as well.

Ida Kyoko received it and held it firmly, bowing once more to Yue Zhong and said: “Thank you for your gift, Master!”

In this apocalypse, immense strength was everything. Kyoko knew the value and preciousness of the Evolving Liquid in her hands. If she brought this out to sell, it would be enough to exchange for an entire city. Evolvers were after all, a different tier from Enhancers.

After gifting Kyoko with the Evolving Liquid, Yue Zhong also gave 2 others to Shiroyuki and Asami, allowing them to transform.

Yue Zhong lacked powerful subordinates now, and there were only 500 vials on his hand. However, in one night, he had 5 more Evolvers at hand. Their loyalty was the only big question now.

Yue Zhong was unwilling to squander the precious liquid on the Japanese men. This was because he found it hard to trust them.

Inside a room in the Arai Clan, there were 2 pretty maids in kimonos waiting to serve.

The moment Yue Zhong stepped into the room, he saw a number of beautiful lolis of ages 9 to 15 kneeling and speaking in unison: “Welcome home, Master!”

(There were a few other terms of address like Brother, Uncle, Daddy, Big Brother)

These lolis were all kept by Arai Onikiri as play toys. There were all beautiful, and amongst them there were 2 of his biological daughters. They had become Yue Zhong’s spoils of war as well.

Ogura Reiya wore a white shirt and yellow skirt, and a pair of

white and pink shoes as she ran up to Yue Zhong and kneeled: “Master! You’re back! Welcome home!”

Yue Zhong eyed those lolis, his brows arching: “Dismiss them!”

Ogura smiled sweetly at him, before turning around and ordered the rest in a wooden expression: “Yes! All of you, dismissed!”

Under her orders, the rest trudged out somewhat unwillingly. Although they were young, they knew the cruelty of the current world. Without someone strong to rely on, their fates were likely unbearable.

Yue Zhong walked over to the bed and saw a short-haired girl with beautiful features and fair skin lying on the bed.

Yue Zhong frowned: “She’s a girl?”

Ogura came up and replied: “Yes! She’s a little girl.”

The girl struggled a while before she opened her eyes, disoriented. She then looked at Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong’s sensitive perception could tell that the girl was different. His gaze narrowed and he asked: “I’m Yue Zhong. What’s your name? Have you evolved? What’s the skill you’ve obtained?”

“My name is Feng Yu Bing. I’ve evolved, and am a Spirit-based Evolver. My skill is Ice Manipulation!” Feng Yu Bing looked at this man who helped her exact revenge over her father’s murder and stretched out her hands to exhibit her ability.

Yue Zhong looked at Feng Yu Bing with an excited look: “Good! Yu Bing, from now on, you’re my subordinate. I will train you up to become a proper soldier. You must know that in this world, those without strength would be trampled on. Only by obtaining strength, would you be able to protect the ones you love and the things you treasure.”

Feng Yu Bing was a natural Evolver, and her natural ability was

stronger than those used the Evolving Liquid. After all, natural Evolvers were favoured by the heavens, and as long as they undergo proper training, they would become elite soldiers.

Feng Yu Bing looked at Yue Zhong and nodded her head silently. Her life was saved by this man, and her vengeance was made possible by him as well. She had no other wish in this life except to repay this man.

Together with Feng Yu Bing, Yuan Tian Gang, Kyoko, Shiroyuki, Asami also became Evolvers. They manifested abilities alongside their evolution. Yuan Tian Gang became a Spirit-based Evolver, and his skill was Mechanical Manipulation Specialization, allowing him control over any machines. Kyoko was an Agility-based Evolver, with a Second Order Agility Solidification. Shiroyuki and Asami were both Agility-based Evolvers as well, both of them awakening the ordinary High Speed Movement ability.

# Chapter 552: Training!

---

Inside a government office in Gui Ning City, Wei Ning Guo summoned all the important members to announce some news.

Hearing the news, everyone heaved a sigh of relief. Yue Zhong was still their leader, and the only one they could place their trust and hopes on. If he were to die, then all that he had built up would instantly crumble. When they heard that he was alive and well, all those with some ambitions quickly killed off their insidious thoughts.

Yao Yao had an anxious expression as she asked: “How is Sis Qing Wu?”

To Yao Yao, Yue Zhong was important, but Ji Qing Wu held a higher position in her heart. In order to save her, Ji Qing Wu had nearly sacrificed her own life.

“According to Leader’s report, Ji Qing Wu had suffered life-threatening injuries, and is currently recuperating by his side. In order to recover, she would need another 4 months’ time.” Wei Ning Guo was after all a good soul, and due to his loyalty to Yue Zhong, he did not dare offend his women. Although Yao Yao was young, she was beautiful and a natural Evolver to boot. She was also one of the earliest comrades of Yue Zhong, and was already the vice-captain of the 1st Elite Battalion of Long Hai City. He could not afford to brush her off.

The apocalypse had shattered all forms of norms of the past society, as long as one had the wisdom and strength, even a kid could become a leader or a high-ranking officer.

Yao Yao looked at Wei Ning Guo and immediately said: “I want to go to Yama County. Wei Ning Guo, I want a Thunder Fighter to go there.”

Yao Yao’s strength caused her to be more direct when handling

matters, and she seldom beat around the bush. Even if Wei Ning Guo was the highest authority in Gui Ning, she was as blunt as ever.

Wei Ning Guo immediately agreed to her request: “Sure! I’ll arrange for 4 of the Thunder Fighters to accompany you to Japan.”

Yue Zhong had obtained the 12 Thunder Fighters from the Kingdom of God, but he lacked the necessary manpower to drive them all. In the entire Guang Xi Region, there was only maybe 4 decent pilots. They were all Enhancers with the Vehicle Driving Specialization skill. These was why they could operate the mechanical beasts.

Hu Yi looked towards Wei Ning Guo expectantly and asked: “What instructions did Boss have for us?”

After the huge expenditure of ammunition, they had stopped all forms of fightings. There were only small scale assaults on the surrounding zombie groups around. This caused Hu Yi, Zhang Xue Wang and Zheng Ming He as the commanders of their respective battalions to be bored. Only through fighting would military men show their might. They hoped for a huge fight to raise their merits.

Wei Ning Guo replied softly: “Leader told us to rest for one more month. After the ammunition is replenished, we will focus our attention northeast, to clear a way between Long Hai City in the Hunan Region and Gui Ning City. Specific tactics to be decided by the army.”

Although Guang Xi still faced the threat of over a million zombies, Yue Zhong’s aim was to clear the northeast region. The moment they established the connection, Yue Zhong’s faction would leap in strength, making using of the connecting rails and combining into a complete base.

Now, the Hunan and Guang Xi regions were still separated. By connecting them, the research and talents could be shared.



“Yes!”

Not long after the meeting concluded, 4 Thunder Fighters lifted off from the underground city, and in a flash of light, flew towards the direction of Japan.

Within the 4 Thunder Fighters, there were 100 Enhancers, each of them at least Level 40. At the same time, there were 20 Evolvers among them as well. They were all elite and loyal soldiers that Yue Zhong had trained specially.

This was a terrifying strength. With the 4 Thunder Fighters and the 100 fully-equipped Enhancers could raze an entire faction of 10,000 people to the ground.

Yue Zhong had made use of the broadcast station to establish a radio communications back home and finally heaved a sigh of relief. He did not, however, squander his time on enjoying himself with the women. Instead, he got to work training the Chinese soldiers as well as the new Evolvers by his side.

Early the next morning, inside the accommodations, an alarm blared out incessantly.

The moment the alarm sounded, a number of men and women rushed out from their rooms neatly within 20 seconds. Each of them carried large bags, and swiftly gathered at the parade square.

Ida Kyoko, Sakura Shiroyuki, Amano Asami, Yuan Tian Gang, Muto Shin, Ogura Reiya and Feng Yu Bing stood amongst the soldiers and looked at Yue Zhong quietly.

Yue Zhong stared at everyone present and ordered loudly: “Carry your equipment! Let’s move out!”

After that, he hoisted a 100kg bag onto his bag and started to run out.

The rest hoisted their bags and followed quickly.

This was the morning run of 10km in the wild. If it was before

the apocalypse, not many would be able to withstand such a intense workout. However, because of the threat of death, everyone managed to tap into their potential and forced themselves to the limit.

Furthermore, most importantly, after training everyday, he would allow them all to consume Type 3 Mutant Beast Meat, strengthening their bodies.

After 15 days of rigorous training, every single one of the survivors had been pushed to the brink of death and back, yet their physique had swiftly soared, reaching levels that exceeded even special forces of before the apocalypse. This was possible only because of the intense training and the miraculous Type 3 Mutant Beast meat.

Ogura Reiya was different from the other lolis. She could withstand the tough training. She did not detest the training unlike other women, and instead, volunteered to take part. She knew that with just her strength alone, it was not enough to control her own destiny. Furthermore, Yue Zhong had given her the chance.

Shiroyuki and Asami could not compare to Reiya. They were after all trained to be more feminine and to serve, if it wasn't for the fact that they had become Evolvers, and Yue Zhong's forceful request, they would not want to be part of the hellish training.

After the morning run, Yue Zhong would then lead the Chinese to hunt zombies. Yuan Tian Gang, Muto Shin, Feng Yu Bing, Ida Kyoko were appointed as captains and they used weapons to weaken the zombies, allowing the other Chinese survivors to become Enhancers.

Yue Zhong had a number of equipment that he obtained from the corpses of the Takama-ga-hara soldiers from the Liger hunt, and handed them to his men.

Under such training and enhancement, the entire group of about

100 survivors rose to become Enhancers of above Level 15.

Amongst them, Kyoko, Yuan Yian Gang, Shiroyuki, Feng Yu Bing, Asami and Reiya all become Level 30.

These 6 could level up faster was because Yue Zhong found a territory of a 100 Type 2 evolved zombies, allowing them to train against them. That was why they could level up so quickly.

Only with resources, and the carry of an expert, a faction could easily make use of any group of high-level zombies to groom an Enhancer of above Level 30.

Training these people to be Level 30 was easy for Yue Zhong. However, the Level 40, 50 and even 60 mark were extremely difficult. After all, the higher one went, the more difficult it was to level. This was why Takama-ga-hara could only deploy a group of Level 30 Enhancers as a hunting team.

Inside a small town, Kyoko led a number of soldiers in killing zombies. Yue Zhong was waiting quietly outside. The Type 3 zombies inside had been annihilated by him, and the ordinary zombies were simply not a match for the 5 Evolvers and their elite soldiers.

One soldier suddenly ran up to Yue Zhong: “Leader, there’s movement from the zombie horde!”

“What, the zombie horde is moving?!” Yue Zhong’s expression turned when he heard it, and he ordered: “Convey my orders, everyone is to return and prepare to retreat.”

“Yes!” The soldier quickly rushed off.

At this time, propeller and motor sounds rang in the distance, as a number of Thunder Fighters rushed by overhead in the skies.

“Those are Thunder Fighters! There’re 12 of them, these must be an assault team of the Kingdom of God!!” Yue Zhong saw the aircrafts and his face fell.

He already knew that Yao Yao was on her way with 4 Thunder Fighters, yet the sudden appearance of 12 could only mean the Kingdom of God.

Looking at the direction they were flying towards, he came to a conjecture: “That’s the direction of Yama County, the Shimazu Clan!”

“Convey my orders! Everyone is to gather at Point 1. Without my orders, no one is to actively go out to fight!” Yue Zhong left this line of instructions and he sprinted by himself towards the direction of the 12 Thunder Fighters.

Yue Zhong had trained Kyoko and the rest up in order to gain a unit he could trust and use. However, with his strength, they were still not a match for him. Against the Kingdom of God, they were not going to be much help either. A single elite troop could wipe them out.

# Chapter 553: The Viciousness of the Thunder Fighter!

---

Yue Zhong activated his Shadow Steps and his speed reached the limit, exceeding the speed of a Type 2 Lightning, even surpassing the Thunder Fighters in the sky.

The Thunder Fighter was a large aircraft, its speed reaching 550 km/hour. However, it had not exceeded the sound barrier, while Yue Zhong's speed had reached 700 km/hour.

Of course, Yue Zhong could not maintain that speed for long, after all, he was a biological lifeform, at most it was for 10 minutes. However, he managed to chase up to the Thunder Fighters.

One was significantly larger than the rest by two times, loaded with plenty of weapons. Its interior was spacious, as though it was a fortress in the sky. There was a layer of lavish Turkish rugs on the floor, as a blond man with handsome looks stood quietly sipping a glass of wine.

There were 2 beautiful and voluptuous Japanese women kneeling by his side, helping to massage his legs.

This charming male took another sip before he turned to a bespectacled middle aged man and asked: "Ashman! Does the old man from the Shimazu Clan truly possess the Sky Fortress Power System and Outer Hull? They don't even have a Level 60 Evolver, how could they kill a Type 3 Beast to obtain such a treasure?"

Ashman pushed his glasses up and replied mildly: "Divine Envoy, sir, other than strength in this world, there's luck. Shimazu Fuji was just lucky. The Power System diagram exploded out when he expended a large number of experts to kill a Type 3 Mutant BEast. As for the Outer Hull, he had obtained it by exchanging with 10 beautiful virgins with some Evolver! To ordinary Evolvers, those diagrams are worthless."

This handsome blond man was one of the Divine Envoys of the Kingdom of God, a Level 62 Spirit Evolver, the Envoy of Ice, Julius.

A powerful-looking, beautiful woman with golden hair and an incredibly sexy figure in a silver combat suit appeared, as she spoke slowly: “Julius, the Shimazu Clan are just ants, they don’t deserve 2 Envoys to move. I’ll be enough to get them to hand the diagrams over obediently.”

Julius looked at this woman, Suzanne, contemptuously: “Suzanne! Shimazu Fuji is not an idiot. Even if you were to parade your huge ass like a dog for him to fuck, he won’t be so stupid as to hand it to you. However, if you were to crawl over here and let me do you, I can give you the chance.”

Suzanne was a mixed blood of Aryan and gypsy descent. She wasn’t a pure blood Aryan, and although she held a position as one of the Divine Envoys, she was the lowest rank. Her position and all the resources she received were the lowest. She was also looked down upon by the rest.

Gypsy women had the connotations of being prostitutes for a period of time in the western world. After the apocalypse had happened, due to the prevalent belief of race and superiority, the Kingdom of God was led by mainly Aryan people. Mixed blood people like Suzanne were often ostracized or looked down on.

(TN: I have no idea about Gypsy women being prostitutes. Doesn’t say anywhere on the web. So it could be have been misinterpreted in some form to the author. In fact, the proper term for the gypsy are the Romani people.)

Of course, not everyone was a nationalistic Aryan. Otherwise, Suzanne would definitely not have the chance to rise to an Envoy-status, and would only be treated as a lower caste member of society.

When Suzanne heard Julius’ words, she stared at him with a venomous hatred, and her hands flipped, causing 2 Desert Eagles

to appear: “Julius, are you hoping to anger me to the point that I shove these Desert Eagles up your worthless ass and turn it into a pile of minced meat? Before I slice that useless thing you call a dick and shove it into your mouth?”

Julius flung the wine glass in his hands to one side and stared back at her with a vile gaze and spat out his words: “Suzanne, you bitch. Don’t think that just because you got into the beds of those stinky old farts and you can prance in front of me. If you want your 4 limbs to be hacked off and become a sex toy for slaves, you can try pissing me off.”

When Suzanne heard that, a hint of shock flashed in her eyes, and she gritted her teeth, not replying. Julius was after all a pure blood Aryan, and had plenty of Envoys backing him up. Even if she was one of the Envoys, as long as Julius set his mind to it, she would definitely be tortured till death. Her looks and figure would definitely be more than a treat to those stinky and lowly slaves. While those Elders of the Kingdom of God who had enjoyed her body would definitely not step out to go against Julius.

Ashman then spoke: “Envoys, please maintain your calm and control. Please work together to complete this mission. We cannot fail, otherwise, we will all suffer the consequences.”

Julius snorted coldly: “Hmph! Bunch of ants, not worthy of any attention!”

Soon, 12 assault helicopters flew out from the Shimazu Clan to meet the 12 Thunder Fighters in the air. At the same time, the self-defence force of the Shimazu Clan hurried to fire their anti-air missiles towards the threat in the air.

The time came for the Thunder Fighters to showcase their prowess. They sent out a few missiles to intercept those from the assault helicopters. Fireworks bloomed in the skies, with resounding explosions, but not a single round managed to hit the Thunder Fighters.

On the ground, a number of large anti-air rounds shot towards the Thunder Fighters, but ricocheted off the exterior of those mighty mechanical beasts.

The 12 Thunder Fighters then fired their own retaliatory rounds, hitting every single one of the self-defence assault helicopters, causing them to explode in huge balls of flames.

The Japanese assault helicopters fell towards the ground, charred black, before exploding further when they crashed into the ground.

The moment the 12 assault helicopters were destroyed, the Thunder Fighters had not even moved from their positions, with only 5 of them suffering small holes in their hulls from the attacks of the troops on the ground.

After destroying the assault helicopters of the self defence force, the Thunder Fighters then fired a number of rockets at the various air defense systems, resulting in multiple explosions.

In that fearsome aerial attack, a number of anti-air cars and missile launchers were all turned into scraps of metal. A number of tanks and armored vehicles were also not spared from that volley of fire from the Thunder Fighters. Death rained down from the skies, causing them all to burst into flames.

The Shimazu Clan was instantly plunged into chaos, as many of the people scrambled around frantically. The Thunder Fighters remained in the air, while collecting the lives of the people like a death god, firing their cannons from time to time.

As Yue Zhong hid in the forest, he looked at the destruction and death brought by the Thunder Fighters and his heart was filled with shock: “What a terrifying weapon. This is the true strength of the Thunder Fighters! The Kingdom of God is truly a terrifying organization!!”

Yue Zhong had snatched some Thunder Fighters from the



Kingdom of God as well, and he knew the terrifying capabilities of these technologically advanced equipment. However, seeing it up close reminded him of the power that the Kingdom of God truly held.

With just 12 Thunder Fights, the Kingdom of God was totally suppressing the Shimazu Clan and its self-defence force, just like how the USA had kept Iraq in dire straits by using more advanced weapons.

Yue Zhong eyed the Thunder Fighters and thought silently: “The Kingdom of God wouldn’t just act randomly. The Shimazu Clan must have something they need. Is it me, or blueprints of advanced technology?”

He had killed a number of people from the Kingdom of God, including one of their Envoys. He had already been deemed an enemy of theirs, and it was likely that they had discovered his trace in Japan, and thus sent forces.

He activated his Stealth ability and quietly observed.

Under the fearsome might of the Thunder Fighters, Yama County finally could not withstand it anymore, and raised a huge white flag.

Ashman accepted a phone call, before speaking mildly to Julius: “It’s done!”

Julius laughed contemptuously: “These lowlife Japanese monkeys are truly useless. Here I thought they could last longer!”

Of the 12 Thunder Fighters that came, 5 descended.

A number of Adjudicators in silver uniform as well as Judges with golden lions and sword medals on their uniforms walked out from the 4 Thunder Fighters. They escorted Julius towards the Shimazu Clan.

As for Suzanne, she stayed where she was, guarding the Thunder Fighters.

The moment Julius saw Shimazu Fuji, he spoke threateningly: “You must be Shimazu Fuji! I’m Julius, one of the Divine Envoys of the Kingdom of God. Hand over the 2 diagrams of the Sky Fortress within your possession. Add on 20 beautiful virgins, and swear to join the Kingdom of God. You can then live. Otherwise, everyone in your Shimazu Clan will perish.”

“Kazuhiko, it was you?!” Shimazu Fuji saw a man beside Julius and his expression turned crestfallen. That man was called Yokota Kazuhiko, and he was the trusted aide of Shimazu Fuji. He would never have expected his right-hand man to betray him.

# Chapter 554: Instant Killing Julius!

---

Yokota Kazuhiko's complex gaze landed on Shimazu Fuji, before he spoke slowly: "Clan Lord-sama, the Chinese has a saying; The smart beasts would choose a good tree to perch. The future of this world lies in the hands of the mighty Kingdom of God. Only by believing in the one true God, there would be a chance to enter Heaven, and not Hell. I just want to enter Heaven after I die."

When the world had transformed, every single person on earth had heard the notification of the one that called himself God, and many who had chosen not to believe, were forced to accept otherwise.

Under such an environment, the might of a religious power could shake the hearts of people. With the Heaven Sect previously, as well as the Kingdom of God, such factions had the draw of faith.

Of course, compared to the Kingdom of God, the Heaven Sect was just a pile of mud. Be it the size of their faction, their influence, and the effort in their people, there was no comparison at all.

Yokota Kazuhiko spoke up: "Clan Lord-sama, it's impossible for you to resist the Divine Envoys of the Kingdom of God. If you continue to resist, Princess Mina, Young Lord Shinsei, Princess Yuika and Young Lord Chouji would be affected by your decision. Your life and death doesn't allow you to retain those diagrams."

When Shimazu Fuji heard those words, his face turned ashen, and his entire demeanor seemed as though he aged 20 years. He sighed helplessly and said: "I got it! I will give you the diagrams!"

Shimazu Fuji came to a small room, and tore open a tatami mat, revealing a safe requiring a fingerprint lock and password to unlock. He entered some numbers, pressed his finger, and the safe opened to reveal 2 blueprints.

"This should be fine, no? Divine Envoy?" Shimazu Fuji had

expended a huge amount of resources to lay his hands on those diagrams. He was clear, regardless of personal strength, or military might, he had no mean to contend with Julius and his troops. His Shimazu Clan would only face annihilation.

In this apocalypse, the weak had to maintain their the attitude of the weak.

Julius received those and an enormous amount of information flooded his brain. He smiled with satisfaction: “Not bad! These are the diagrams!”

Shimazu Fuji continued respectfully: “The 20 beautiful virgins will be arranged to be sent to you. Please wait patiently Divine Envoy.”

Shimazu Fuji had over 20,000 survivors under him. However, it was truly hard to find virgins, even if there were a few. As a form of enticement, he had kept a number of virgins to be traded or gifted. Finding 20 wasn't too much of a problem for him.

“There's no need!! You can go die now!” At this point, Yokota Kazuhiko's eyes flashed with a murderous gaze and he pulled out the Japanese katana by his waist and slashed downwards, slicing Shimazu Fuji in two.

Shimazu Fuji had been sliced in two. There was still a look of disbelief on his face, not expecting that blow from someone he had trusted.

Julius frowned: “You should have waited until he had given me those virgins.”

Yokota Kazuhiko turned and bowed at a 45 degree: “Divine Envoy, I can promise you 30 virgins. Furthermore, the 2 princesses are absolute beauties. They're the princesses of the Shimazu Clan, and definitely higher in quality.”

“Then I'll leave it to you!” Julius spoke arrogantly, before turning and walking away.

To Julius, it didn't matter it was Shimazu Fuji or Yokota Kazuhiko, as long as his demands were met, he would be satisfied. Compared to Shimazu Fuji who he wasn't as familiar with, he trusted Yokota Kazuhiko more.

When Julius stepped out of the villa, he suddenly felt a sense of extreme danger. An incredible killing intent billowed towards him. His heart was filled with shock, and he activated his ability at the first instant he could.

Unfortunately, the speed of the blade that came slashing down was as swift as a meteor, all Julius saw was that beam of light, when his head was instantly separated from his body. There was a look of disbelief on his face.

The assassin was naturally Yue Zhong, after disposing of Julius, he swiftly retrieved the 2 blueprints from the corpse, which were the parts of the Sky Fortress.

Julius was strong, there was no doubt about that. If it were a frontal assault, Yue Zhong would definitely take some time to kill him, as well as expend a huge amount of Spirit and Stamina. However, facing a sneak attack from Yue Zhong, it was a different story. Because Julius was a Spirit and Strength dual-attribute Evolver, while he was strong, his defence against assassination attempts were weak.

The moment Yokota Kazuhito witnessed Julius' unfortunate fate, his face fell, and he quickly tried to escape.

Yokota Kazuhito had just ran out the door when a cold light flashed out from a corner, and his head was likewise separated from his body, rolling onto the floor.

Yue Zhong saw Yamada Ichiuma stepping out suddenly from the corner, and he instantly went on full alert, emitting a strong killing intent: "Who are you?"

Yamada Ichiuma's strength was not a joke, and it was obvious

that he specialized in assassination. To Yue Zhong, if such a person was an enemy, it would be a nightmare to his subordinates. Other than himself, not a single person by his side could withstand a single hit.

Yamada Ichiuma bowed before retreating into the darkness: “Yue Zhong-sama, I’m not your enemy. I’m the guardian of the Shimazu Clan, Yamada Ichiuma. Since the Clan Lord had died, I will continue to protect the next Shimazu leader.”

Yue Zhong frowned slightly: “The guardian of the Shimazu Clan? It might be troublesome.”

“Otouto-sama! Outou-sama!” Shimazu Mina and the rest of the Shimazu children came rushing in, together with some of the essential members that had not yet fled. When they saw the 2 halves of Shimazu Fuji, they could not help but wail in sorrow.

The Shimazu Clan was a large clan prior to the apocalypse. Even after the apocalypse had happened, they made use of their prestige and strength to rescue a large number of people.

“It was you! You killed my father, didn’t you?!” The 22-year-old, ordinary-looking Shimazu Chouji screamed at Yue Zhong with a crazed look and bloodshot eyes: “Yue Zhong, you want to snatch all that our Shimazu Clan has, isn’t it?! Let me tell you, you can forget about it! All that the Shimazu Clan has belongs to it forever! You will definitely not take it away!”

Yue Zhong shot him a cold glare, and pulled out his Black Tooth Blade, intending to slash at him: “What a fool! Since you think that it’s the case, let me clear the Shimazu Clan then. The first to die shall be you!”

When he was glared at by Yue Zhong, Shimazu Chouji immediately felt fear. His legs gave way, and he crumpled to the floor.

“Yue Zhong-sama! Please be appeased!” A gust of wind blew by,

and Yamada Ichiuma appeared again, kneeling in front of Yue Zhong: “Chouji-sama, the one who killed Lord Clan Head was Yokota Kazuhito, not Yue Zhong-sama. That traitor had already thrown his weight in with the Kingdom of God, and betrayed the Shimazu Clan.”

Yamada Ichiuma knew the disparity of strength between the both of them, if Yue Zhong really set his heart on wiping them out, then the Shimazu Clan would truly cease to exist.

Shimazu Mina kneeled and also pleaded: “Otto-sama, please be appeased. Chouji-niichan was momentarily confused in his anger. He didn’t mean what he said.”

“Watch your stinky mouth!” Yue Zhong kept his weapon, and stared coldly at Shimazu Chouji.

The Shimazu Clan was the overlord of the Yama County. If Yue Zhong were to wipe them out, then the entire Yama County would be plunged into chaos. In a short period of time, it would be hard to gather strength to resist the Kingdom of God.

Yue Zhong shot the people present a glance and said: “I’m announcing for Shimazu Mina to be the leader from now on, does anyone have any objections?”

Everyone present immediately exchanged glances while keeping quiet. They weren’t willing to give up the claims to the Shimazu Clan, but in view of Yue Zhong on one side, and the Kingdom of God on the other, they could only keep their silence.”

Shimazu Mina was slightly alarmed as she tried to decline: “Otto-sama, it’s impossible for me!”

Although Shimazu Mina was capable, she had not been groomed to take over the reins. She was just a tool to be used as a bargaining chip in Shimazu Fuji’s plans. Hearing Yue Zhong’s sudden announcement, she was at a loss.

Yamada Ichiuma immediately kneeled in front of Shimazu Mina

and spoke seriously: “Princess Mina! I, Yamada Ichiuma, am willing to serve you! Please take over the reins of the Shimazu Clan!”

The Yamada family had been serving the Shimazu Clan for generations. He wasn't going to be loyal to Yue Zhong, and in order for the Shimazu Clan to flourish, handing the reins to Shimazu Mina was the best choice. After all, she was one of Yue Zhong's women, and he could rely on that bond to get Yue Zhong's help.

Yue Zhong patted Shimazu Mina's shoulder and encouraged: “Mina, you can do it! Now, your first task is to get people to suppress the chaos in Sakura Town. The rest, I'll handle for you.”

“Hai!” Shimazu Mina replied gently, and her eyes lit up, before she proceeded to give a flurry of orders.

Yue Zhong walked out, there were still 7 Thunder Fighters in the air, and 5 on the ground. He had to take care of these terrifying metal beasts. Otherwise, Sakura Town was really incapable of facing against such might.



# Chapter 555: Cluster Bomb!

---

Near the Thunder Fighters, Suzanne pulled out a cigarette and lit it up: “What is that idiot Julius doing? Why is it taking so long? Is he fooling around again?”

As the smoke rose, her beautiful features were covered in it. Suddenly, she felt her heart palpitate, as a dangerous premonition arose.

Suzanne was an expert that had undergone the baptism of countless battles. The moment she felt that sense of danger, she had already activated her Second Order Divine Speed, instantly reaching a speed 28 times of a normal person.

After she cast it, she twisted forcefully, leaping towards the side.

Had she been slower by a single second, her head would have exploded apart like a watermelon.

Suzanne looked towards the direction where the Stinger bullets came from, only to discover Yue Zhong’s icy gaze fixed on her. At the same time, he had waved his hands to take down 5 of the Adjudicators.

“Yue Zhong!! This is the guy who killed Halumanda!!” Suzanne looked at Yue Zhong and felt a chill over her body. She instantly lost all will to fight and leapt into the Thunder Fighter, shouting: “Go!! Fly!!”

The pilot responded in shock: “Esteemed Envoy, Envoy Julius has not yet returned!”

This small team of Thunder Fighter pilots were formed around Julius as the core, so while Suzanne was also a Divine Envoy, her position was lower. Many did not really view her with high regard.

Suzanne’s features were contorted in fury, as she pointed a Desert Eagle at his head and barked coldly: “Fly up immediately, otherwise, I’ll blow your fucking brains out.”

The pilot could feel the cold metal on his head, and his heart tightened, immediately controlling the Thunder Fighter to ascend.

“You want to escape? Not that easy!” Yue Zhong eyed the motors of the Thunder Fighters roaring to life and his eyes flashed. He activated his Shadow Steps, and burst out with a 700km/h speed. He immediately reached the midst of the clearing.

Yue Zhong then blasted out with his Art of Fear, causing a powerful Spirit shockwave to spread out. Under that oppressive force, the pilots of the Thunder Fighters were all frightened to death, blood flowing out of their orifices.

The ascending Thunder Fighters landed on the ground again having lost their pilots.

On the ground, there were still a dozen Adjudicators and Judges, who were currently pointing their weapons at Yue Zhong and firing insanely.

At the same time, a number of Wind Blades, Fireballs and Ice Shards were all cast towards Yue Zhong.

With his insane speed, other than Suzanne, not a single person could catch up to him. He became a flash of light that weaved in and out of the troops. Everywhere he went, there would a flash of his blade, and the numerous soldiers would be beheaded.

As Yue Zhong was engaged in his slaughter, a lithe figure leapt out from the cockpit of the Thunder Fighter, as a long and slender leg filled with explosive force aimed towards Yue Zhong’s head.

Yue Zhong had just killed an Adjudicator, and he had no time to defend himself, only able to raise his right hand to block.

That powerful kick sent Yue Zhong flying back by over 6 to 7 metres.

Suzanne, who was behind that kick, instantly pounced towards Yue Zhong like an enraged leopard, using her insane speed to launch multiple attacks on him.

The human's fist traveled faster than a person running. Having activated her Second Order Divine Speed, Suzanne's speed had reached 28 times that of a normal person. Without holding anything back, her kicks reached mach speed, and each blow of hers carried sonic booms with them.

Yue Zhong had to deal with the blows raining on him after being sent flying back a few metres. He didn't panic, instead, relying on his abundant combat experience to negate the effects of each strike by Suzanne.

With his Endurance reaching 194 points, and his passive skill Steel Body, his defences were not weak. Suzanne felt like she was kicking a metal board each time her blows landed. After lashing out over a dozen times, her legs were the ones that seemed to be bleeding.

She quickly leaped back, eyeing Yue Zhong in shock: "Damn it! His body is too tough! What a fearsome opponent! Other than those Divine Envoys ranked 1st to 10th, no one is a match for him!"

Suzanne instantly abandoned everything and her subordinates and sought to escape. In this short exchange, she had come to experience Yue Zhong's might for herself, and she wasn't willing to fall at his hands.

Seeing that Suzanne wanted to escape, Yue Zhong immediately launched an Art of Fear attack towards her. She was an Agility-based Evolver, and her Spirit wasn't high. She was instantly thrown into a hallucination, causing her to lose control of herself, and she crumpled to the ground.

"Quick, run!!"

The moment they saw Suzanne fall, the faces of the Adjudicators and Judges drained of colour, as they turned around to escape.

Yue Zhong stepped forwards once, when he suddenly felt something amiss, and swiftly retreated backwards.

The 7 Thunder Fighters in the air had flown over, as a number of rockets fired towards Yue Zhong's general position.

Hong!! Hong!! Hong!!

Terrifying explosions blasted all around Yue Zhong, and the shockwaves and resulting shrapnel bombarded his body, having to bear the brunt of the aftermath.

If Yue Zhong's Endurance wasn't enough, he would have been pulverized by that bout of attacks earlier. However, he still didn't underestimate the devastation of the attacks, choosing to dodge and evade whatever he could. As long as a rocket landed on him, he would still be blasted apart regardless of his Endurance.

In the skies, the 7 Thunder Fighters then switched to their 25mm gatling guns and began to spray at Yue Zhong.

"Fuck!" He had to run, in a few breaths, he reached one of the fallen Thunder Fighters, and leaped behind. Making use of the hull of the Thunder Fighters to block against the attacks from the gattling guns, he could finally take a breather.

After he managed to find cover, 8 guided missiles found their way towards that Thunder Fighter in a flash and caused it to explode in a ball of fire.

Yue Zhong had leaped to one side at the first moment, but the Thunder Fighters were filled with countless weaponry. The next instant, he felt the shockwaves from the explosion and was sent flying out a few metres. His left arm was broken, and his outer clothing had been ripped to pieces, revealing the pitch-black Type 3 Mutant Beast hide underneath. Even the terrifying defence of the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide was laced with a few scratches and cuts from the countless hits Yue Zhong had just experienced.

The Type 3 Mutant Beast hide was known to be impervious to knives and bullets. However, it could not block the impact of rockets. The powerful explosions were enough to tear the hide

apart.

Yue Zhong felt a stab of pain in his chest and he spat out a mouth of blood, his face pale: “Strong!! Too overwhelming. Such a weapon of war, amongst humankind, it’s still difficult to defend against.”

The Thunder Fighters were like tanks in the air. Even the Falcon Sniper had no means of penetrating the hull. As for anti-tank rocket rounds, it was hard to hit the Thunder Fighters in the air. In this apocalyptic world now, they were seemingly invincible.

The attacks of the Thunder Fighters caused layers of dust to cover the area, blocking the sight of the Thunder Fighters for a moment.

At that moment, Yue Zhong immediately conjured up 2 Devil Flame Spears in his hands, and sent them shooting straight for 2 of the Thunder Fighters. The fearsome flame instantly incinerated the pilots of the 2 Thunder Fighters, and combusted in the cockpits, destroying various vital functions.

With the loss of pilots, the soldiers within those 2 Thunder Fighters immediately deployed their parachutes, moments before the 2 Thunder Fighters crashed towards the ground, although they did not explode.

As a new-generation aircraft, the Thunder Fighter had the capability to withstand rockets. They would be able to land safely even after receiving a few rounds.

Having dealt with those 2 Thunder Fighters, the remaining 5 Thunder Fighters seemed to fire even more crazily at Yue Zhong. They continued to hover above his positions at all times as they sent cluster bombs down.

Hong!! Hong!! Hong!!

A number of cluster bombs exploded powerfully, and the scorching heatwave enveloped the entire area, as the resulting

shrapnel and flames obliterated everything in the blast radius.

Inside the blast radius, the Adjudicators, Judges and any other biological lifeforms unfortunate enough to be caught within it were annihilated totally. Even the unconscious Divine Envoy Suzanne had been blasted to pieces.

The cluster bomb had been internationally prohibited from use in war prior to the apocalypse due to its devastating nature. However, in this apocalypse, there was no United Nations, and hence no one would control the usage of such weapons.

The cluster bombs were one of the weapons the Kingdom of God had approved to use against high-level Evolvers, because the might of these weapons were truly strong, even the 12 Apostles might not necessarily be able to escape from the vicinity of these cluster bombs!

# Chapter 556: Destroy the Thunder Fighters!

---

The blast radius of the cluster bomb was extremely wide, even someone as strong as Yue Zhong had no means of escaping from it quickly. He had instantly activated his Shield of Light.

Amidst the explosions of the cluster bomb, the shield was only able to hold up for about 2 seconds before disintegrating. The moment it shattered, Yue Zhong had sent out another 2 Devil Flame Spears towards 2 other Thunder Fighters in the skies. His attacks pierced through the pilots' cockpit and immediately killed the pilots.

When the pilots of the 2 Thunder Fighters were killed, the metal killing machines also wobbled before crashing towards the ground.

After the shield crumbled, Yue Zhong activated another Shield of Light, forcefully withstanding the explosions of the lethal cluster bombs. He made use of the chance when he was protected to quickly conjured yet another 2 Devil Flame Spears, sending them shooting straight for 2 other Thunder Fighters. As the pilots were incinerated to death, the Thunder Fighters began to descend.

Having destroyed 4 Thunder Fighters in 5 seconds with 4 Devil Flame Spears, as well as the activation of the Shield of Light twice, Yue Zhong was nearly expended of all his Strength.

The pilot of the remaining Thunder Fighter saw his comrades shot down, and he finally felt a sense of fear and danger. He tried to manoeuvre the Thunder Fighter around in a bid to escape.

“Get the hell down!” Yue Zhong conjured one final Devil Flame Spear and threw it out with all his strength, as the Spear shot towards the rotating blades like a shooting star, melting them.

As the blades melted and started to deform, the Thunder Helicopter lost its stability, and began to plunge towards the ground.

Yue Zhong watched the last Thunder Fighter fall to the ground, and let out a long sigh of relief. The pressure emitted by the Thunder Fighters was truly suffocating. Fortunately it had been a small team of 12 of them. If it were a fleet of 36 of them, then even someone as strong as him would be decimated in a second.

Yue Zhong's might was steadily climbing. Even handguns and rifles posed no threat to him now. However, rockets, cannons, guided missiles or any other heavy artillery for that matter could still threaten him.

Seeing the Thunder Fighters crash down one by one, the survivors in Sakura Town also began to cheer in delight.

Those machines were like death reapers, with their powerful firearms. Under their attacks, the entire Sakura Town almost went into chaos, and various structures were in varying degrees of damage and destruction.

Over 2,000 survivors had died at the assault of those Thunder Fighters, mainly because of the might of the cluster bombs.

Even after the Thunder Fighters fleet had been brought down, Sakura Town was still burning, and the Japanese survivors were naturally enraged and hated those weapons of destruction.

Shimazu Mina demonstrated her capability and charm, swiftly organizing a team of Enhancers under the Shimazu Clan to quickly suppress the chaos and the soldiers from the Kingdom of God that had parachuted down.

One by one, the Adjudicators and Judges were either captured or killed.

At the same time, another elite troops entered Sakura Town to persecute those survivors that had tried to make use of the chaos to commit atrocities as well. These rioters were quickly killed.

As the situation came under control, this time, 4 Thunder Fighters appeared in the distance.



The warriors of the Shimazu Clan saw the Thunder Fighters and their faces fell. There were some people who even directly threw down their weapons and prepared to run.

The hearts of the people that had just settled down were quickly riled up again, as a number of survivors tried to run out of Sakura Town. The Thunder Fighters were death reapers, and 4 were enough to wipe out the town entirely. Although there were a few experts who were capable of destroying the metal behemoths, the ordinary survivors were still afraid.

Yue Zhong watched the approaching 4 Thunder Fighters and his expression turned ugly. The 2 Shield of Lights on his body had been expended, and he only had the Bronze Spiritual Bell left. In order to destroy those 4 Thunder Fighters, he would be in extreme danger.

“Wait, 4? Could it be Yao Yao and the rest?” Yue Zhong eyed those Thunder Fighters and swiftly made his way to the wall around Sakura Town and stood at a prominent spot. With the Bronze Spiritual Bell as his final protection treasure, he didn’t mind risking it to confirm the identity of those 4 Thunder Fighters.

A strong gust of wind blew past, as a green eagle with a wingspan of over 80m like something out of the legends flew out. With a single flap, it reached the city walls with a speed that broke the sound barrier.

This massive green eagle was precisely Greenie, under the supplements of those nuclei, it had already evolved to its Type 3 stage, reaching Level 80.

The moment Greenie reached the city wall, it used its head to rub against Yue Zhong affectionately. As Yue Zhong’s first tamed beast, it had grown from its hatchling stage to a Type 3 Mutant Beast, therefore, it felt a lot closer to Yue Zhong than the rest of his tamed Mutant Beasts.

“Where’s Sis Qing Wu?” The moment Yao Yao leaped down from Greenie’s back, she stepped forwards to question Yue Zhong.

“She’s heavily injured, and is currently recuperating here.” Yue Zhong pointed to the Biological Armor on his back, replying Yao Yao, before asking a question of his own: “What took you guys so long?”

Yue Zhong knew that they had set off from Guang Xi about 14 days ago, yet they had only reached now, which was unexpected.

“Let’s not talk about that! We met a whole bunch of aerial Mutant Beasts along the way. In order to route around them, we wasted so much time. Give me Sis Qing Wu, I’ll protect her.” Yao Yao just brushed off Yue Zhong’s question and stared fixedly on the Biological Armor on Yue Zhong’s back.

Truthfully, the journey in the air over the seas had been a lot more difficult than what Yao Yao described. The team had come across a few waves of aerial Mutant Beasts, and were assaulted by them. If it weren’t for the powerful defences of the Thunder Fighters, as well as Greenie protecting them as one of the tyrants in the skies, the team would have been wiped out.

Furthermore, the maximum distance that the Thunder Fighter could travel at one time was 2,000km. In order to reach Japan, they had to unload much of their equipment, instead filling the space with fuel. If they were attacked along the way, they could have exploded from the sheer amount of fuel. It was truly dangerous.

Yue Zhong hesitated a while, before handing the Biological Armor on his back over to Yao Yao.

The 4 Thunder Fighters came to a stop, and a number of experts above Level 40 stepped out. They were led by Bai Xiao Sheng.

When the armed militants saw the elite soldiers of the Special Forces stepping out from the Thunder Fighters, their eyes flashed

with awe. Every single soldier of the Special Forces were decked in the Raven Combat Uniform, and wore high-level Mutant Beast hide. They carried sniper rifles, assault rifles, hand grenades, and Tang Replica Swords hung at their waists. They were truly armed to the teeth. They emitted incredible killing intent, which was cultivated from their countless battles.

Bai Xiao Sheng came up to Yue Zhong with a grin on his face as he saluted: “Boss Yue! Bai Xiao Sheng, reporting for duty!”

After saluting Yue Zhong, he reverted to his thick-skinned nature: “Boss, I heard that these Japanese beauties are really submissive. Give me a few!! Haha!”

“Are you sure you can handle so many?” Yue Zhong eyed him and replied dryly.

Bai Xiao Sheng was not known for anything but his love for beautiful women. Following Yue Zhong, he had experienced countless combat, and his only requests had always been women, and only beautiful ones at that. Furthermore, he was a high-ranking subordinate of Yue Zhong, and had obtained many women, thus forming a huge harem.

When Bai Xiao Sheng heard that, he also sighed: “True, it’s troublesome to have too many women! My resources are always wiped out quickly.”

Bai Xiao Sheng had over 100 women in his harem, and the upkeep was truly staggering. If it wasn’t for the fact that he was a high-ranker under Yue Zhong, he could not keep up with their resources. Even then, it was quite a responsibility to be in charge of a hundred women.

Bai Xiao Sheng hesitated and with a pained expression, he spoke out: “Alright! This time, I’ll just want 5 Japanese beauties. I can’t handle any more already.”

“Then it will depend on your performance.” Yue Zhong didn’t

continue this line of small talk, as he resumed to business: “When you guys arrived, was the horde moving towards here?”

Bai Xiao Sheng’s expression also turned serious: “That’s right! Boss, when we came, the sea of zombies was currently making its way here. In another 4 hours, they would reach here. I reckon that we should replenish our food and fuel, and quickly get out of here. With the defences here, it won’t be enough to hold off the onslaught of the zombies.”

Sakura Town had just come out of an assault by the Kingdom of God. There were burning debris everywhere, and various fortifications and constructed defences had been destroyed. Over 2,000 survivors had also perished under the assault by the Kingdom of God, and another 3,000 had tried to escape the town.

Although there were about 15,000 survivors left in town, the true soldiers that could fight numbered only about 1,000 or so. These soldiers included the 100-over Chinese survivors as well as reinforcements from Bai Xiao Sheng’s forces.

A team of a thousand against a few hundred thousand zombies, without any fortifications or preparations and defences. It was basically impossible without sufficient firepower.

The most important thing was that, Yue Zhong has no reason to fight to the death. This was Japan and not China. Even if the place was overrun, he just had to bring his Chinese survivors away and leave.

Yue Zhong found Shimazu Mina and said: “The zombies of Yama County are currently moving here. Sakura Town is a lost cause. Follow me, Mina, come with me to China.”

Shimazu Mina immediately kneeled down and begged: “Otto-sama, I cannot just abandon the rest and come with you. These are the people who placed their trust and lives in the hands of our Shimazu Clan. If I were to go, half the survivors in Sakura Town would die. Please, please save them. I know that you’re a man of

miracles, you'll definitely have ways to save them."

# Chapter 557: Repelling the Zombie Horde!

---

Shimazu Mina was someone who had received exemplary upbringing. She was extremely clear that should Sakura Town fall, the survivors would either be killed by the zombies, starve to death or even killing amongst themselves.

Yue Zhong eyed Shimazu Mina and spoke softly: “Mina, I’m sorry. I really don’t have a reason to stay back and fight a losing battle.”

A look of despair flashed past Shimazu Mina’s eyes, as she gritted her teeth and mulled silently. She suddenly lifted her head to look at Yue Zhong, standing up and motioned to him: “Otto-sama, please come with me.”

Yue Zhong followed Shimazu Mina silently, as they headed out of the town. He knew his strength and wasn’t afraid of Shimazu Mina trying anything funny.

Under her lead, they came to a small hill behind Sakura Town.

There was a huge cave entrance in the side of the hill, with a dozen Enhancers of above Level 30 standing guard.

Shimazu Mina entered the cave, and keyed in a code to reveal a bright and futuristic tunnel.

They passed through an electronic gate, before Yue Zhong came to a platform. Peering below, what he saw gave him a huge shock.

Below the huge platform, there was a golden fortress in the midst of construction. It spanned over 20 meters, and its height was about the same. This was precisely the Sky Fortress that Yue Zhong had seen in the blueprints, however, compared to the original version, this golden one was lacking 4 of the main cannons, and 36 of the side cannons as well as other large caliber guns. It was also slightly smaller in size. It looked just like a flying saucer. There were over a thousand people working on it, and the

difficulty in constructing this was apparent.

Shimazu Mina pointed to that Sky Fortress and said: “This was commissioned by Otou-sama. He had the designs and thus he wanted to start work on what he could. This Sky Fortress can fly, but its combat ability is almost non-existent. We could only fit about a dozen 20mm calibre cannons. It is not finished yet, and would require roughly another 20 days. Once this is done, it would belong to you, Otto-sama. Please help me to defend Sakura Town!”

There were 7 parts to the Sky Fortress. Only by collecting all 7 blueprints would one be able to determine the proper procedures and materials to manufacture an actual Sky Fortress.

However, each blueprint held advanced technology within themselves. Any single one would be enough for research to commence. Shimazu Fuji had only obtained 2 parts of the diagram, and made leaps and bounds in his own research to begin construction of the Sky Fortress. In the end, he had died, and only managed to develop a half-completed product.

Yue Zhong looked at the spaceship-like structure, and a feverish excitement burned in his eyes: “Good! I’ll help you! However, you must hand the personnel working on this to me, and let me bring them to China.”

Shimazu Mina smiled gently at Yue Zhong: “Of course! Everything of mine belongs to Otto-sama!”

Shimazu Mina was an intelligent woman. She knew that the Sky Fortress had taken up a lot of resources to construct. There was no way the Shimazu Clan could build another one. Hence, by handing it all to Yue Zhong, not only would they be able to utilize it to escape, they could also further strengthen the alliance between Yue Zhong and themselves.

Of course, in the long run, while they might have lost a team of excellent workers, that might adversely affect the Shimazu Clan’s future, they had no choice. The other alternative was to face death

right now. Between the 2 choices, Shimazu Mina chose the survival of her clan and people, and the preservation of their power.

Yue Zhong came to a decision, and began directing the defensive works.

Under Yue Zhong's orders, a number of heavy machine guns were dismantled from the Thunder Fighters and fixed on top the city walls. Those heavy firearms could tear a person into shreds.

After making a number of arrangements, Yue Zhong sat on a refueled Thunder Fighter and under the defence of the other 3, they flew towards the direction of the zombie horde.

4 Thunder Fighters flew in the skies, and soon reached the skies above the zombies.

Yue Zhong looked down, and saw a vast horde that stretched for over dozens of kilometres. Yama County had a few hundred thousands of people before the apocalypse. After the apocalypse set in, most of them became zombies, and they had gathered, moving towards Sakura Town.

Yue Zhong ordered: "Search for the L4. Inform me when you've found the target."

The 4 Thunder Fighters responded in a resounding voice: "Roger!"

"Fly low!"

The 4 Thunder Fighters began to fly low, about a 100m away from the ground. It was a decent height to locate the L4.

After all, the L4 was about 5m tall, almost the size of a small house. It was a sight hard to miss among the ordinary zombies. Soon, Yue Zhong discovered 4 L4s and a number of L3s huddled together, very obviously the personal guards of the Z-type commander.

"Utilize the cluster bomb to assault them!" Yue Zhong pointed



towards the L4 and ordered out.

The 4 Thunder Fighters roared above the area where the L4s were, and dropped their cluster bombs.

Hong! Hong!! Hong!!

The moment the cluster bombs landed, they exploded wildly. The sounds of explosions continued to ring out incessantly. Everything within a few kilometres of the L4s as the centre was enveloped in the explosion.

The terrifying explosions instantly tore countless zombies apart. Other than the L4s, the rest of the zombies were all decimated in the explosion.

The defences of the L4s were after all, exceeding even that of tanks. Under that assault, they suffered a number of injuries, and were enveloped by the heat. After struggling for a long while, their brains were finally fried under the heat.

The cluster bomb displayed its maximum effectiveness against the zombies when they were all packed together. The moment one exploded, over ten thousand zombies were blasted into nothing.

The zombies seemed to have been shocked by the might of the cluster bombs, as at the next instant, the remaining hundred thousand zombies quickly fled in the direction they came from.

Yue Zhong watched them and frowned slightly: “We didn’t manage to wipe out the Z-type. Or in other words, the Z2 inside might still be alive.”

If the leader had been killed, the remaining zombie horde would definitely have split and fled in different directions. However, in this situation, they had fled orderly. It was obvious that the Z2 was still in command.

“Leader! Do we chase?” The pilot beside Yue Zhong asked excitedly.

Enemies that cluster together as foolishly as zombies were rare in the apocalypse, and it was the best target for the cluster bombs. That was why the pilot was eager to let the zombies have another round.

Yue Zhong thought for a while before ordering: “Chase, but only maintain the pressure. Use the machine guns to fire at them!”

The Z2 already possessed intelligence, this time, they didn’t manage to finish it off in one strike, to find it among the sea of zombies would be extremely hard. However, Yue Zhong knew that he could make use of its death-fearing nature.

If the Z2 was safe, it would definitely not bother about anything else and command the rest of the horde to attack. However, the moment it felt danger, it would abandon everything else to run. It would even activate a troop to protect its own safety. It was very like a human in that sense.

Under Yue Zhong’s orders, the 4 Thunder Fighters continued to fire volley after volley into the escaping horde. From time to time, there would a cluster bomb that dropped on the zombie horde, obliterating a large number at one go.

With their chase, the zombies continued to escape.

Until the Thunder Fighters were about to run out of fuel, Yue Zhong then led the Thunder Fighters back to Sakura Town.

“Long live! Long live!!”

“Long live!!”

When the news of Yue Zhong repelling the hundred thousand zombies from Yama County broke, the survivors of Sakura Town instantly went into a joyful uproar. All the soldiers and people came together to celebrate the victory.

At first, they had despaired and lost all hope. Hearing that the zombies have been sent back, they were once again filled with hope.

In the evening, within the Shimazu Clan, the upper echelons of the Shimazu Family gathered together, with all sorts of sumptuous dishes on the table.

These family members looked at Shimazu Mina and Yue Zhong sitting together with a complicated look on their faces. They had witnessed the fury and what this man was capable of. He was someone that had single-handedly dealt with 7 Thunder Fighters. He had also repel the advance of those zombies. The survivors were filled with awe and veneration towards him now. This god-like character was the head of their clan, how could not be amazed. However, while they relished the security, they abhorred the potential of Yue Zhong stealing the Shimazu Clan's power.

Of course, the Shimazu Clan didn't know that Yue Zhong had just repel the hundreds and thousands of zombies, and not truly kill the Z-Type. They didn't even kill all of the zombies. After some time, the zombies would still gather and come back.

After dinner, Shimazu Mina and a few other key members of the clan invited Yue Zhong and his subordinates into a room. Shimazu Mina's eyes sparkled as she smiled sweetly at Yue Zhong before dropping a bomb: "Otto-sama, are you interested in the Yokosuka base?"

(Yokosuka: Port and Navy Base in Tokyo bay)

## Chapter 558: Type 4 Nuclei!

---

“Yokosuka base?” Yue Zhong was stirred when he heard those words.

The Yokosuka base was located 50 kilometers southwest of Tokyo, Kanagawa Prefecture, and it was the largest base of the US Navy in the Western Pacific, and the only aircraft carrier maintenance base. Over there, there were countless warships docked, and prior to the apocalypse, there was even a carrier fleet stationed there.

Other than the American fleet, the Japanese self-defence force had also stationed a large fleet there as well. If Yue Zhong were to get his hands on those, his military might would instantly soar.

The Yokosuka base was the only place for maintenance of aircrafts after all. There were countless advanced tools, machinery and equipment. It was practically a treasure trove.

Yue Zhong stared at Shimazu Mina and his eyes twinkled: “Yokosuka Base is very near Tokyo, and there are over 30 million zombies there right now. How do you propose to head over there? The Kanagawa Prefecture alone would have at least 9 million zombies as well. What do you suggest?”

The Yokosuka base was truly a huge treasure vault left in this apocalyptic world. Almost all the Japanese factions knew about the allure of such a place, but no one dared to covet it.

This was because it was in a prefecture with high human traffic! There were at least 3,000 people per square kilometer. With over 9 million zombies there, regardless of the size of faction, it was a horde that no one dared to face.

Shimazu Mina’s eyes shone with a strange light as she explained: “The Kanagawa Prefecture might have over 9 million zombies, but the Yokosuka base would only have about 10 thousand people at

most. Once the Sky Fortress is finished, we can make use of it to fly over!”

Initially, Shimazu Fuji had spent much of his resources to procure the 2 diagrams, precisely because he wanted to be able to travel through the skies, and obtain that naval base.

If he had been successful and swallow all the ammunition and machinery, as long as Takama-ga-hara did not mind him, he would have become a huge overlord in Japan as well.

Shimazu Mina looked to Yue Zhong and explained her request: “However, there’s a slight problem. The Yokosuka Base might have anti-air defences. We need to send people to conduct reconnaissance. Otherwise, if the Sky Fortress were to meet hostile fire the moment we reach, it would be dangerous for us. Otto-sama, I hope that you can deploy some experts over there to find out what’s there first. We have to determine if there are any remnant US troops.”

It was of vital important that they made sure of the current situation over at Yokosuka Base. Otherwise, if the Sky Fortress were to be bombarded by anti-air missiles, Yue Zhong would lose his Sky Fortress.

This precious item had been manufactured at the cost of countless resources. If it were destroyed, the Shimazu Clan had no means of manufacturing another one.

Shimazu Mina continued: “Among my subordinates, there’s one who managed to escape from the Shizuoka Prefecture. He knows of a small road that leads through the prefecture. The mission is important, but the risks are there. I hope Otto-sama would consider sending his strongest elite soldier to accomplish this task.”

They could not rely on the Thunder Fighters to just barge in, because even if the Thunder Fighters were terrifying, if they were bombarded by anti-air missiles, they would likewise be destroyed.

After all, the weapons of the strongest army on earth were vastly superior to the goods of the Shimazu Clan.

Yue Zhong thought for a while and nodded: “I got it! I will personally head over there to check things out.”

When Shimazu Mina heard that, her face instantly turned to one of horror: “No!! That’s too dangerous!! Otto-sama, it’s too dangerous!! Please rethink your decision!!”

There were over 3 million zombies in the Shizuoka Prefecture, and over 9 million zombies in the Kanagawa Prefecture. Along the way, who knew how many more towns and zombies were lying in wait. Other than the zombies, as Japan had concentrated efforts on greening and environmental protection, within their lush and thick forests, there were sure to be powerful Mutant Beasts as well.

Even though Yue Zhong was almost a powerful god to Shimazu Mina, she felt that this mission might be beyond his capabilities. After all, a horde was not something a single person could face.

Although there was no love between them, her power was gained through him. Furthermore, he was one of the Shimazu Clan’s backers now, if he were to die, the Shimazu Clan would fall into dire straits.

Yue Zhong turned to Yao Yao as he said: “Save your words! I’ve made up my mind. Yao Yao, I’ll leave Ji Qing Wu’s protection to you. I’ll bring Bai Xiao Sheng, Ida Kyoko and a hundred of the men to conduct this mission. This place will be left to you to guard.”

Yao Yao was an Agility-based Evolver that awakened naturally. After consuming the Snake Birth Fruit, she had gained an additional attribute, Strength. As her Level was 60, she was also one of the strongest expert under Yue Zhong.

When she had faced the Type 4 Flame Bird, it wasn’t that she wasn’t strong, but the Flame Bird was simply too terrifying. This was why she was almost robbed of her life.

“En!” Yao Yao gripped the Biological Armor tightly, as she snorted once in reply.

Yue Zhong then spoke to Shimazu Mina: “I want all the Mutant Beast nuclei on your hands. They’re of use to me.”

“Hai!” She replied respectfully, and handed him a golden box: “These are all the nuclei that our Shimazu Clan had amassed.”

Although they didn’t know what the usage of the nuclei was, they had kept a large amount of them. Shimazu Fuji might have died at the hands of a person he wrongly trusted, but it was undeniable that he was a far-sighted and capable man.

Yue Zhong opened up the box, and noticed there were over a few hundred ordinary nuclei, at least 30 Type 2 nuclei, and only about 3 Type 3 nuclei.

Only one was through the sacrifice of countless experts to obtain. The other 2 was gifted by other survivors.

“Ah! That’s not right, this is a Type 4 nuclei!!” Yue Zhong caught sight of a black crystal-like nuclei, and he was astonished.

It was the size of a fist, and it was entirely black, as though light was sucked into it. Yue Zhong grabbed it tightly, and could feel the immense strength from within. This was a nuclei that was comparable to the terrifying Flame Bird that he had killed.

Not many people could kill a Type 4 Mutant Beast. Obviously, some lucky chap had come across it and sold it to the Shimazu Clan, before finally landing up in Yue Zhong’s hands.

“I’ve got myself a treasure!” Yue Zhong grinned in satisfaction, and kept them all.

Yue Zhong then handed 4 Evolving Liquid to Shimazu Mina: “This is for you. These are Evolving Liquids. Upon consuming them, you can become an Evolver. There are 4 of them, as an expression of my thanks for the nuclei.”

“What? You can become an Evolver?”

“Evolver!! This can allow someone to become an Evolver?!”

“Clan head-sama, please give me one. I’m willing to serve with all my life and strength!”

“Clan head-sama, Hakkaku Kimasa is willing to serve you loyally for all his life!”

The numerous subjects under Shimazu Mina began to plead with passionate voices, proclaiming their loyalty. They hoped that she would bestow the liquid upon them. They knew the meaning of becoming an Evolver, becoming stronger than others, learning more skills than others.

Shimazu Mina kept those 4 Evolving Liquids and smiled with satisfaction. With these 4 tools, she could pull a few more experts closer to the Shimazu’s side. Her gaze towards Yue Zhong was now filled with gratitude, veneration and respect.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong led Bai Xiao Sheng, Ida Kyoko, Muto Shin, and Yuan Tian Gang together with a hundred other subordinates as they left towards the direction of the Shizuoka Prefecture.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

As they moved through the forests, they suddenly heard dense gunshots.

Bai Xiao Sheng frowned, and in a flash, he disappeared from his position. Not long after, he reappeared beside Yue Zhong: “Boss, there are two factions engaged in a fierce battle in the northeast.”

The Japanese guide stepped up and spoke: “Sir, we’re near the Shizuoka Prefecture. There are many small factions around these parts. Before I left, the largest organization was the Yaro Group. They had over 30,000 survivors then, and 5,000 soldiers.”

Yue Zhong’s heart stirred and he passed the order: “Go take a



look.”

Under his orders, a hundred of them quickly made their way towards the sounds of fighting.

In a valley, there were 2 groups of people, with a total number of two to three hundred people engaged in slaughter. They were mostly wielding knives and baseball bats, and other melee weapons. Only a mere handful had guns.

Japan’s gun control was also strict, even more so than China. It was hard for the citizens to get their hands on guns. Hence, these people were fighting it out with melee weapons.

Among the chaos, there was a 2m-tall person, who wielded a huge mace of over a few hundred jins. He would flatten anyone in his way, and it was obvious that he was a Strength-based Evolver. As he slaughtered his way through the crowd, it was like he was invincible.

# Chapter 559: Chaotic Battle in the Night!

---

“Hai!” Ida Kyoko, Muto Shin immediately responded and led their 50 subordinates over.

The battle was entirely one-sided. Ida Kyoko and Muto Shin had already evolved to Evolvers after using the Evolving Liquid. Their 50 subordinates were all Enhancers of above Level 20 as well, together with their equipment, each and every one of them was strong.

The moment their team met the 2 groups fighting, they crumbled under the might. Even the mace-wielding giant fell to the ground with one kick from Ida Kyoko.

Muto Shin used his Level 2 Treasure Odachi to kill a few of the militants as he shouted: “Surrender, and you’ll keep your life!”

His subordinates also echoed his words, and soon, the few hundred militants began to kneel. They looked at the new group with fear in their eyes.

Yue Zhong had only mobilized Ida Kyoko and those Chinese survivors that he had recently drafted into his troops, and they were more than enough to defeat those militants. There was still Bai Xiao Sheng and his own team of elites that had not yet acted. This led the militants to be even more fearful.

The difference in strength between Enhancers and normal people was too vast. In this battle, 3 people on Yue Zhong’s side only suffered light injuries, and had killed 30, heavily injured 60, totally suppressing those militants.

There was only death for ordinary folk with no guns when facing Enhancers.

Yue Zhong walked over to the burly and tall giant, as he ordered: “Lead me to your base!”

The giant looked at Yue Zhong fearfully and quickly nodded his

reply: “Hai!”

Led by the giant, Yue Zhong and his team came to a small village. It was surrounded by mountains, and only one road led to the outside world. There was a total of about 500 survivors, and they all watched Yue Zhong nervously.

Japan was a country with a dense population. The majority of the citizens were in the cities though. The populations in the outskirts and villages were much lower.. Hence, the survival rate of those people were higher.

Within the most lavish mansion inside the village, Yue Zhong eyed the burly giant indifferently and asked: “What’s your name?”

The giant replied carefully: “My name is Fukui Honten.”

Yue Zhong asked: “Do you know the Yaro Gang?”

The moment the Yaro Gang was mentioned, Fukui Honten’s eyes lit up: “I know! They’re the strongest faction around the Shizuoka parts. They have over 40,000 survivors and 10,000 soldiers. No one is their match.”

Yue Zhong asked: “Do you know where their central base?”

“I know, it’s in the Demon Forest.” Fukui Honten was worried that Yue Zhong might not understand the meaning of the Demon Forest, and he continued: “The Demon Forest is about 20km north of here. It is the city of the Yaro Gang, and had been termed as the Demon Forest. Anyone who gets too close, other than the members of the Yaro Gang, would be caught and brought in slaves.”

Hearing Fukui Honten’s explanation, Yue Zhong was slightly clearer on the current situation.

The Yaro Gang had been an ordinary middle-tier Yakuza gang. Prior to the apocalypse, they weren’t anything worth mentioning. Even within the Shizuoka Prefecture, they were far from being the number one gang.

However, when the world changed, many of the upper echelons of the Yaro Gang had fortunately been on holiday, and thus, escaping the majority of the chaos. As the hierarchy and organization systems of the Yakuza were strict and efficient, they quickly arranged for a number of the survivors to escape and settled themselves. Following the passage of time, the Yaro Gang began to expand and grow into a society that made use of slaves.

Within the Demon Forest, only those in the Yaro Gang were the upper-class society, everyone else were deemed as slaves when captured.

Yue Zhong pondered for a while and ordered: “So it was like that. Fukui Honten, I’ll assign you as the envoy to go seek an audience with the Yaro Gang. Let them know that Yue Zhong requires a passage through.”

The moment Fukui Honten heard that, he hurriedly kneeled down and pleaded: “Sir! Please! Spare my dog life!! If you send me as an envoy, I’ll definitely be killed. All the envoys sent to their territories have never made it back alive. Any factions would that had done so were also captured and swallowed by them! Please, let me off!”

“That fierce?” Yue Zhong frowned, he never imagined them to be that vicious, to the extent of killing all envoys even before actually meeting or negotiations.

In most situations, other than a crazed slaughterer, most people would seldom kill the envoys. After all, any faction with the right mindset would seek to co-operate with other factions, even if there were no alliances. Any leader with the ability to think would definitely not just kill envoys.

“Alright, you may go.” Yue Zhong waved Fukui Honten away and continued to think.

As night fell, Yue Zhong left the town alone, and moved towards the direction of the Demon forest. He wanted to test the might of

the Yaro Gang himself.

In the dark of the night, Yue Zhong took to the darkness like fish to water. He didn't make a single sound as he moved, and his sight was further and wider than in the day. Even his hearing was enhanced.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As he came to the outskirts of the city inside the forest, he saw a number of Eurocopters currently firing multiple rockets at the cities, destroying a number of structures.

The city that the Yaro Gang had erected inside the forest was made largely out of wood. The houses were constructed with their bare hands, and as the 24 Eurocopters fired their weapons of destruction, the entire city was soon engulfed in flames.

Countless Japanese survivors screamed out from within the flames as they were swallowed and burned. Their screams of agony rang out through the night.

All of a sudden, a sniper bullet that had been enhanced by the Enhance Bullet skill pierced the fuel tank of one Eurocopter. The resulting explosion rang out furiously, as the unfortunate Eurocopter burst into flames, and turned into a flaming ball that crashed towards the ground.

Another sniper bullet pierced the pilot window of another Eurocopter, and turned the 2 pilots into corpses. The Eurocopter wobbled as it spiraled downwards, out of control.

Within the city, there were 2 high level Enhancers that had the Enhance Bullet skills. At the next moment, multiple rockets were fired on their location, blasting them to oblivion.

At the same time, a number of elite soldiers from the Kingdom of God leaped out from the numerous helicopters in the skies. They were equipped with night vision goggles, bulletproof armor, and were armed to the teeth. They charged towards the territory of the

Yaro Gang, and began their assault.

The sounds of gunfire and heavy artillery rang out through the night. The city that the Yaro Gang built up painstakingly was being razed to the ground. The Yaro Gang had only simple firearms and lacked other powerful weapons, hence they weren't a match for the Kingdom of God.

Outside the city, there was a simple moat. The elite soldiers of the Kingdom of God quickly constructed a steel bridge and crossed over, charging into the city.

Hong!!

Right as the elite soldiers were about to rush into the city, the Yaro Gang immediately detonated the entrance of the city. The terrifying explosion claimed the lives of the soldiers from the Kingdom of God.

"Fierce!" Yue Zhong witnessed all these and his heart trembled. If he had led his men to attack the Yaro Gang, he might have been the one to suffer such a devastating attack.

The explosions rocked the Kingdom of God for barely a moment, and the rest of the elites continued their assault, as the helicopters in the skies assisted in winning point after point.

The assault helicopters released flammable bombs often, lighting the whole city up, and causing countless Japanese survivors to scream as they burned alive.

Yue Zhong crawled up a huge tree and quietly observed the situation, not intending to make a move.

This was after all an elite force of the Kingdom of God. Even if he was strong, he had no way of facing the entire battalion on his own. The 22 Eurocopters in the skies were enough to blast him to pieces.

"The Yaro Gang is finished!" Yue Zhong eyed the burning city and thought to himself quietly.

The Yaro Gang might have 10,000 soldiers under them, but against 2,000 elites from the Kingdom of God, they were nothing. Both sides had a huge difference in equipment, fighting will, and combat strength.

Other than the Special Forces under Yue Zhong, the rest of his elites were also barely a match for these Kingdom of God soldiers. The main difference was that the equipment they had was superior. Yue Zhong also had lesser armed assault helicopters. After all, China was lacking in aerial vehicles even before the apocalypse.

By now, the soldiers of the Yaro Gang were thoroughly overcome, even if Yue Zhong were to join in the battle, he could at most dispose of a hundred of the Kingdom of God's elites. If he wasn't careful, he might even be killed.

At this time, there was a sudden change in the situation. From a hill, 12 Cobra attack helicopters and 24 Ninja helicopters flew out, joining in the fray against the Kingdom of God's Eurocopters.

(Cobra: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bell\\_AH-1\\_Cobra](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bell_AH-1_Cobra)

Ninja: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Kawasaki\\_OH-1](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Kawasaki_OH-1))

At the same time, 8 holes appeared in the side of the hill, and 5,000 soldiers burst out with self-defence uniforms, flanking the Kingdom of God forces from behind.

At this time, the command centre only had 500 Adjudicators and Judges that form an elite Enhancer team. They quickly occupied important channels as they launched their counterattack towards the sudden attack from the Japanese armed forces.

# Chapter 560: Takama-ga-hara's 4 Demons!

---

A number of flares lit up the surroundings. These Kingdom of God soldiers were after all elites who had undergone rigorous training. Although they had lesser numbers, their fighting strength was not to be underestimated. Each and every one of them had the Gun Specialization skill. Even in the dark, they could take a scary amount of lives.

The 5,000 Japanese self-defense soldiers had ten times the number of elites of the Kingdom of God, however, the tides were in the favour of the Kingdom of God. The moment they clashed, almost 300 people had died instantly. The rest were being suppressed, and every second, there would be an additional death of a Japanese soldier.

Yue Zhong eyed those 500 Kingdom of God members and his heart shook: "Strong!! How did they train to get to this stage? Oh right, they must have changed jobs, definitely through the Novice Villages. That means that the Kingdom of God has already controlled a Novice Village in Europe."

Those Japanese soldiers in the self-defense uniform could not compare to the frontline elites of Yue Zhong's, but he could not deny that they were still strong in their own right. They were at least comparable with the elites of Wuyan Hong. However, even with 10 times the number, they were still being held back by the Kingdom of God elites. This opened Yue Zhong's eyes to how strong the Kingdom of God's forces truly were.

In the skies, the sudden attack of the Cobra and Ninja helicopters managed to destroy 5 Eurocopters.

The remaining 17 turned to face those new enemies, and begun to engage in an all-out clash.

Those 17 Eurocopters were less than half of the fleet that had suddenly appeared, however, the pilots controlling the



Eurocopters displayed their expertise, complementing each other in formation, and begun to take the enemy's aircraft.

In the skies, there would be explosions from time to time, as the helicopters blow up one by one under the ferocious attacks of the Eurocopters.

A large number of the crashing helicopters were the Japanese helicopters, although a few Eurocopters also fell at the retaliation of the Japanese's side.

The Kingdom of God was the one that suffered a sudden sneak attack, and had suffered a huge loss at the start. However, they managed to reclaim their advantage through their experience and superb control, once more turning the tide to their favour.

The elite soldiers that were in the midst of assaulting the Yaro Gang were also beginning to retreat. The moment those soldiers returned to their site, they would definitely overcome the sudden attackers.

Yue Zhong watched as the soldiers from the Kingdom of God relied on their strength and tactics to hang on and turn the situation around, and he felt a chill: "They're truly terrifying! Novice Village. I must definitely obtain one!"

Based on his knowledge, he knew that Jiang Lei City only had one, and from the captives from the Kingdom of God, he knew that there was also one under the control of the Kingdom of God over at Europe. They had just obtained it not long ago, in fact.

It was because they managed to gain the Novice Village that those Adjudicators and Judges managed to obtain such strength. With just 500 people, they were able to overcome and suppress over 5,000 enemies.

On a hill that was shrouded by darkness, there were 3 men and 1 woman standing quietly. These 4 emitted a strong aura, and behind them, there were 36 other men in ancient god gowns, and

12 women in witch clothes. They were all standing respectfully.

One of the forefront males was 2m, built like a bear. He had short hair, and multiple scars all over his face and hands. His gaze was fiery and excited as he looked down at the battle, proclaiming passionately: “Strong! They truly deserve to be called Europe’s strongest, Kingdom of God! They could actually resist our 5,000-strong troops with only 500 of them!”

This burly man was one of the 6 Demons in Takama-ga-hara, the Tyrant Demon Yokoshima Fuwa. He was a triple-attribute Evolver of Strength, Agility and Endurance, and was at Level 69. He had the Second Order skill: Dragoon Transformation. He had single-handedly destroyed a survivor base with over 3,000 survivors, and done in 2 companies of self-defence troops. His combat strength was truly frightening.

One young man of ordinary built and looks, but with blond hair, hugged a Falcon Sniper and eyed the Eurocopters in the skies with a hungry look. He licked his lips and said: “The Kingdom of God is truly strong. If we’re just talking about the might of our factions, our Takama-ga-hara is definitely not a match for them. However, this is Japan. Regardless of how strong they are, there’s a limit to the amount of troops they can place here. Today, let’s teach them a lesson. Let them have a taste of the true might of Japan. Hideo, do it! Kill them all! Let them witness the strength of the Takama-ga-hara!”

This young man with the Falcon Rifle was also one of the 6 Demons of Takama-ga-hara, the Gun Demon Kanagawa Soma. He was a dual-attribute Evolver of Spirit and Agility. His level was 64, and he had the Second Order Sniper Specialization, as well as the Second Order Strengthen Bullet. He was the strongest sniper in Takama-ga-hara, and with the assistance of the Falcon Sniper, he could easily destroy a tank from a 3 km distance. Many enemies of the Takama-ga-hara had fallen at his hands.

A bespectacled, handsome young man with blond hair and

wearing a suit nodded slightly, and turned to order: “Move out! As per the plan, wipe them out.”

This bespectacled man was the Air Demon of the 6 Demons, Kanzaki Hideo. He was a Spirit, Agility and Vitality triple-attribute Evolver, of Level 67 and had the Second Order Air Manipulation.

The moment he gave the order, the 4 Demons led their 12 subordinates downwards.

Kanagawa Soma quickly came to a high ground and aimed at one of the Eurocopters in the skies. He laughed coldly and pulled his trigger, activating his Second Order Strengthen Bullets as he muttered: “Die! Scum!”

A shooting-star like projectile immediately shot through the Eurocopter, and exploded in an earth-shaking manner, turning the helicopter into nothing by pieces of scrap metal.

This wasn't a bullet that hit the fuel tank that caused the explosion, but rather, a bullet that went straight through the body and exploded. If it was a discussion about power, the bullet that Kanagawa Soma fired was already more lethal than a rocket.

After destroying one, he quickly disappeared from his position.

At the next moment, countless rockets blasted this entire area, but Kanagawa Soma was already nowhere to be seen.

The Tyrant Demon Yokoshima Fuwa had activated his Dragoon Transformation, turning into a powerful Dragoon covered entirely in black scales and wielding a dragon's tail in his hands that had turned into sharp claws.

Yokoshima Fuwa became like a spectre that charged right into the midst of the Kingdom of God elites. His speed reached a terrifying 24 times that of a normal person upon transforming, exceeding even that of a Type 2 Lightning.

However, even with his insane speed, the 400-over Kingdom of God soldiers did not break formation, and bombarded him with

bullets. As a result, he suffered some hits, although the bullets only ricochet off him, not injuring him in the slightest.

In a few breaths, Yokoshima Fuwa had already reached the main command site, and his claws were slashing left and right, directly decapitating an unfortunate soldier.

In less than 10 seconds, the frontline Adjudicators had been annihilated by Yokoshima Fuwa alone.

Hong ! Hong!

All of a sudden, numerous heavy fire bombarded the area Yokoshima Fuwa was in, as over a hundred Kingdom of God soldiers gave up on the Japanese soldiers and turned their attention to this monster. The grenades and heavy fire enveloped the entire area, swallowing Yokoshima Fuwa.

The dust had not yet settled, when Yokoshima Fuwa shot out like an arrow, and leaped into the midst of the elite soldiers from the Kingdom of God. He slapped his massive hands around, and the heads of the soldiers would be separated from their bodies. It was as though he wasn't affected by the explosion at all.

Yokoshima Fuwa had truly been enveloped by that explosion, and a grenade had actually blown apart at his left hand. However, his Endurance was truly high, furthermore, after his Dragoon Transformation, his defence was abnormally high. Even when he was riddled with bullets, he just felt an itch, and a slight pain when the grenade exploded. They weren't enough to harm him.

Under his frenzied assault, the soldiers of the Kingdom of God began to crumble, and their defensive line was being torn apart.

12 Deities followed behind Yokoshima Fuwa as they began their assault on the rest of the troops. Under their skills, the soldiers of the Kingdom of God began to fall.

“Long live Takama-ga-hara!”

“Long live Japan!”

“Love live Takama-ga-hara!”

The Japanese soldiers began to chant and holler with excitement as they attacked the Kingdom of God soldiers.

Yokoshima Fuwa was the main attack force, while the Air Demon Kanzaki Hideo took out the experts of the Kingdom of God silently with his troops and their abilities.

Many of the Judges would feel a crushing feeling in their hearts the moment they activated their abilities, or were struck by poison arrows. No one had the chance to exhibit their prowess.

This time, the last Demon that had come along for the mission had surrounded the elite soldiers from the Kingdom of God with her Dieties. She was the Shinobu Demon, Tenpyo Saka.

# Chapter 561: Beheading Gun Demon!

---

Tenpyo Saka was a beautiful young woman dressed entirely in black, with her hair in a single ponytail. Her exquisite features were expressionless, and her figure was captivating, with a pair of huge and perky breasts that threatened to burst out of the clothes.

She was a Spirit and Agility dual-attribute Evolver, reaching a level of 66. Her main skill was the Second Order Stealth, as well as 5 different shinobi-related skills. The Second Order Stealth caused her to be virtually undetectable in the dark. At the same time, she could twist the perception of others while she was moving. As long as she didn't attack, it was hard for anyone to realize what had hit them. If she stayed still and didn't move, even Yue Zhong who was a Spirit-based Evolver would not be able to determine her existence.

She was like a ghost in the dark, watching and waiting silently. From time to time, any unfortunate Kingdom of God soldiers that crossed her path would find their hearts pierced by a sudden sword, or their heads decapitated.

Although she was not as overbearing as Yokoshima Fuwa, the number of experts fallen at Tenpyo Saka's hands were not little.

The 4 Demons of Takama-ga-hara were all apex existences among Evolvers. The moment they joined in the fray, the Kingdom of God was basically suffering casualties one after another. The tides were once again turned, except this time, it was at the hands of these 4.

Of course, if it were just them against the 24 assault helicopters and 3,000 elite soldiers of the Kingdom of God, they would also just be charging to their deaths. However, with the 5,000 Japanese soldiers behind them, as well as the 30 assault helicopters on their side, they absolutely possessed the means to win the battle.

"These guys are strong! These Japanese Demons..." Yue Zhong watched as the 4 Demons slaughtered their way through their

enemies, and his eyes were filled with shock. They were similar to him in terms of strength, and each one of them was more than enough to deal with a small troop.

The world was vast, and experts were plenty. Every corner of the world boasted their own talents and pride. These 4 Demons were the geniuses of geniuses in Japan.

He eyed them and a killing intent flashed past his eyes: “They must be killed!”

The battle strength of these 4 Japanese Demons were too strong, if they were allowed to live, they could become an obstacle to Yue Zhong in the future. After all, a mountain cannot hold two tigers, Yue Zhong still wanted more resources out of Japan. Hence, he could only snatch it from the hands of others.

“The most threatening one would be that sniper!” Yue Zhong saw another assault helicopter in the skies being destroyed by a single bullet, and a killing intent arose in his heart.

Gun Demon Kanagawa Soma’s destructive abilities were too terrifying. Yue Zhong might die in one hit if he wasn’t careful. He looked towards the direction where the bullet came from, and quickly flitted through the darkness.

Yue Zhong had done his fair share of sniping, and he could tell the possible direction which Kanagawa Soma might flee in. He settled on a position and summoned a clone, sending the clone towards the other direction.

With the clone, he would see what the clone sees, just that he would not feel any pain suffered by the clone.

As he ran towards the location, he continued to observe the skies, watching out for the next shot.

After 5 minutes, another beam of light shot out from another side of the hill, causing an Eurocopter to burst into flames and crashing into the ground.

“It’s there!” Yue Zhong eyed the part of the hill, and activated his Shadow Steps. His speed was pushed to his maximum limit, and he charged over.

Yue Zhong’s clone also made its way towards that direction.

Very soon, the location where the shot came from was bombarded by countless projectiles. The hill was shaken, and bits of earth blew up all around.

“Got him!” With his enhanced night vision, Yue Zhong saw the Gun Demon Kanagawa Soma leading a team of 12 subordinates towards a location. His eyes flashed with joy and he quickly shot after him.

“Enemy! Kill him!” As one of the 6 Demons of Takama-ga-hara, Kanagawa Soma was strong and he had the Night Vision ability as well. Discovering Yue Zhong, he barked out an order, and prepared his Falcon Sniper to aim at Yue Zhong.

The moment he took aim, Yue Zhong felt an incredible sense of danger. He could tell that if he were hit, then even with his Endurance of over 194 points, plus the Type 3 Beast Hide, Level 4 Defensive Vest as well as his passive Steel Body, he would not be able to block it fully.

He immediately evaded to one side, hiding behind a tree, making use of the surrounding fauna to get closer to Kanagawa Soma.

“He’s damn fast! He’s actually faster than an Agility-based Evolver like me!” Kanagawa Soma felt a chill creep up his back at the sight of Yue Zhong’s speed.

The 12 subordinates following Kanagawa Soma were his personal guards, every one of them possessed a Level 3 ability, their Enhancement levels at least 40 and above.

One of them quickly slapped the ground, and activated his Plant Manipulation activity, causing a long vine to shoot out towards Yue Zhong.



The rest of the 11 soldiers quickly fired their rifles. They knew that sweeping fire was a more effective method against a speedy existence like Yue Zhong. After all, they had no way of locking on his position, and could only rely on a rain of bullets to hit him.

Kanagawa Soma wielding his Falcon Sniper and took a deep breath to calm himself down, his eyes cold and his focus pushed to its maximum. He could tell that Yue Zhong was a peak-level expert like him, and he might only have one chance to fire a bullet.

“Powerful!” Kanagawa Soma had not fired yet, but the pressure he emitted caused Yue Zhong to feel the danger. He had to maintain his own focus, otherwise if he was hit, he would definitely suffer. He forced himself to keep moving at a high speed.

Yue Zhong was testing the waters, trying to get close to Kanagawa Soma. After all, snipers were weak in close combat. Most top snipers would allocate their precious skill points into their sniping abilities. That was why they would lose out in close combat.

Yue Zhong had just gotten closer when he suddenly felt an intense danger. His heart turned cold, and he twisted towards another tree and leaped back.

A beam of light shot past where Yue Zhong was just a millisecond and caused the tree behind to explode into pieces. Had Yue Zhong been slightly slower, he would have been pierced by that bullet, and his fate would have been sealed.

Dodging that life-threatening shot, he pulled out his own assault rifle, and fired a few bursts towards the general direction Kanagawa Soma was at.

2 Level 40 Enhancers with the Telekinesis ability quickly conjured up psychic barriers to block the bullets.

Since Kanagawa Soma was adept at far-range combat, his subordinates would cover his weaknesses. Should an enemy get

close to their Gun Demon, any high level expert could easily kill him. However, if he and his team could pull the distance apart again, even the Tyrant Demon would not be a match for the Gun Demon.

“Strong! Too bad, you have to die!” Yue Zhong leaped behind, and his hands shone with the glow of the Second Order Devil Flame, as 2 mighty Devil Flame Spears appeared and shot towards Kanagawa Soma like shooting stars.

“Be careful!!” Kanagawa Soma’s expression turned to one of horror as he rolled backwards, dodging behind a huge rock.

The 2 Devil Flame Spears collided with the psychic barrier erected by those 2 Enhancers and instantly incinerated them, enveloping the 2 Enhancers in flames.

As they began to burn, they screamed out in spine-chilling agony, and were soon turned to ash.

Seeing this, everyone’s face fell and they quickly dove for cover.

Kanagawa Soma shouted loudly from behind the rock: “Friend! I’m the Gun Demon Kanagawa Soma from Takama-ga-hara. Why are you attacking me? You shouldn’t be someone from the Kingdom of God. Most of the Envoys and Apostles should be in Europe, Africa, India and The Middle East. As long as you join us, we’re willing to confer you the title of a Demon as well. Food and women will be yours. Whatever you want, the Takama-ga-hara would provide. You’ll get the best treatment in the world.”

With such an insane speed and a terrifying Second Order flame ability, Kanagawa Soma immediately came to the conclusion that he wasn’t Yue Zhong’s match. He had tried to switch tactics to try coax him. After all, an expert like him would be welcome everywhere.

Yue Zhong remained silent and quickly sent out a roaring tornado of flames towards where Kanagawa Soma was.

Kanagawa Soma also had the Danger Perception skill, and he could instantly feel an intense sense of crisis. He immediately leaped to another location.

The fearsome fiery tornado consumed the location that Kanagawa Soma was just at, burning even that huge rock, causing it to split. The 4 other elites of the Takama-ga-hara were incinerated.

Kanagawa Soma was an Agility-based Evolver after all, and even after expending all his strength to dodge, he was still hit in the shoulder by the Devil Flame. The patch began to burn, spreading to his head, and caused his hair to burn.

“Ah!! Save me!!! Save me!!” His face turned to horror, and he started using his right hand to slap at his head and shoulder, as he began to wail in fright and pain.

“Go to hell!” Yue Zhong appeared in a flash, and pulled out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade to slice at the frantic Kanagawa Soma. With the flash of his blade, the head of the Gun Demon was removed from his body, and the strong Japanese Demon of the Takama-ga-hara fell at Yue Zhong’s hands.

## Chapter 562: Battling Tenpyo Saka!

---

After chopping off Kanagawa Soma's head, Yue Zhong pointed to another of his personal guards, and a Devil Flame fireball shot out, instantly turning the unfortunate expert to ash.

“Quick, run!!” The remaining 7 Takama-ga-hara experts shouted out to one another and darted into the forests, escaping for their lives.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Stinger and fired 4 times, causing the brains of 4 of the Agility-based experts. After that, he used his terrifying speed to chase up to the remaining 3, killing them one by one.

Having wiped out the entire team, Yue Zhong quickly retrieved all their equipment and items, before using his Devil Flame to burn the rest of the bodies.

With a Demon status in Takama-ga-hara, Kanagawa Soma had a number of decent equipment. There were at least 6 pieces of Level 4 Treasures on him. Other than those, there was a valuable Level 3 Defense Vest, which possessed +10 to all attributes. It was a truly precious item.

Yue Zhong swiftly headed back to the battlefield, which had reached an intense level.

The elite soldiers of the Kingdom of God were continuously pouring out from within the city to deal with the soldiers of the Takama-ga-hara. All sorts of weapons and explosives were utilized in the clash.

Tyrant Demon Yokoshima Fuwa had brought his team of 12 elite soldiers of above Level 40 to fight, but they had been wiped out. He personally had been injured barely, and fortunately for his Endurance, he had only suffered injuries and wasn't wiped out yet. He continued to slaughter his way through the troops, killing any

Kingdom of God soldiers he laid his hands on.

The 5,000 elite soldiers of the Yaro Gang had been thoroughly defeated by the Kingdom of God elites, and they could only retaliate from time to time.

Since the Gun Demon Kanagawa Soma had been killed by Yue Zhong, the assault helicopters in the air had begun their fierce retaliation, and a number of the Japanese assault aircraft began to be destroyed.

On the ground, the 3 Demons of Takama-ga-hara were holding the advantage over the battlefield, but in the skies, the Kingdom of God's assault helicopters were basically overpowering the other aircrafts. The battle was in a stalemate.

"Dogs biting dogs!" Yue Zhong watched the intense battle and pressed a button. It was a radio wave transmission device. The moment he pressed the button, his subordinates over at Yama County over 150 km away would receive his location.

"Which side should I help? Both the Kingdom of God and Takama-ga-hara are my enemies. Letting them wear each other down would be the best for me. Since the Takama-ga-hara is gaining the advantage, I shall dispose of some of their men then."

Yue Zhong glanced at his surroundings and came to a high vantage point of about 2km away from the battlefield. He then whisked out his Falcon Sniper, and took aim at one of the Takama-ga-hara elite soldiers, before pulling the trigger.

Following the loud gunshot, the plant-manipulating Takama-ga-hara soldier, that was over Level 40 and had just torn a Kingdom of God soldier into two, had his head blasted apart.

Yue Zhong's sight in the dark was extremely vast, and could encompass an area of over 2 km away. A single bullet of his could take down a Level 40 elite of the Takama-ga-hara, this immediately caused the higher-ups present to be wary.

The Air Demon Kanzaki Hideo discovered something amiss when the Level 40 elite was sniped, and he hollered with an ugly expression: “Sniper!! He’s a powerful one! He’s at least 2 km away, does the Kingdom of God still have someone like that hidden?!”

A single powerful sniper was enough to turn the tides of a battle. Gun Demon Kanagawa Soma and Yue Zhong were prime examples of such snipers.

Kanzaki Hideo made use of an earpiece microphone to pass an order: “Saka! Go take care of that sniper!”

From time to time, the powerful shots of the sniper rifle rang out through the air, and each time, the head of an elite Takama-ga-hara soldier would burst open. This was affecting the morale of the soldiers from the Takama-ga-hara. Kanzaki Hideo came to the judgment that this sniper had to be dealt with, otherwise, they would suffer terrible losses.

By this time, over a dozen people from Takama-ga-hara had been sniped by Yue Zhong. Their rate of advance was slowing down. The Kingdom of God soldiers were still engaging in their assault on Yokoshima Fuwa, causing the Tyrant Demon to have no choice but to dodge. His killing speed also decreased drastically.

Each bullet carried a force that could not be underestimated. Yokoshima Fuwa could easily defend against a few hundred shots, but as they piled on, reaching thousands and even tens of thousands, it was still enough to injured him. Other than the bullets, there were explosives and rocket launchers as well. Even in his Dragoon state, he could not just blindly take on a hit from a rocket.

Tenpy Saka immediately disappeared into the night and brought her remaining 7 witches towards Yue Zhong’s location.

“Enemy? Witches?” Yue Zhong’s choice of location allowed him a good view of the battle field, and he knew that sniping the elites of Takama-ga-hara would invoke some response. Therefore, as he

continually observed the surroundings, he noticed 7 female Enhancers above Level 30 decked in witches' clothings closing in on him.

These women were all ordinary looking, and had even statures even more burly than men. In fact, other than those female Evolvers that had naturally awakened, most high level Enhancers had buff bodies.

The 7 of them flickered with killing intent, launching their individual abilities towards Yue Zhong. Each of them had speeds surpassing an S2, and could easily take down the special forces of pre-apocalypse times. When they joined hands, they were more than enough to take down most snipers.

"Too weak!" Yue Zhong watched as they drew closer with a cold light in his eyes, pulling out his Black Tooth Blade and waved it in front of him, instantly slicing 2 of the witches in two.

The remaining 5 were unfazed by the tragic fate of their comrade, instead, they became enraged and launched their attacks more fiercely.

Yue Zhong's blade slightly quivered, and 5 blade beams shot out towards the 5 witches. Their bodies were instantly sliced into many parts, fresh blood splattering everywhere.

Just as Yue Zhong slaughtered the remaining 5 witches, a sense of danger arose in his heart. He hurriedly activated his Shadow Steps, and leaped to one side. He abandoned his blade, while shooting for a wide area like a cannonball.

Without a sound, or even the slightest sign, a dagger appeared as it slashed towards Yue Zhong, turning in a mysterious trajectory that sliced through his right shoulder.

The sharp dagger immediately released some brilliant light, tearing apart the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide and his Level 4 Defense Vest, until it hit Yue Zhong's skin with a crisp sound, not able to

proceed further.

Yue Zhong's Endurance was extremely high, reaching 194 points. Coupled with his Steel Body, even normal bullets could not penetrate his skin. That sharp dagger had sliced through his Type 3 Mutant Beast hide and his Level 4 Defense Vest, and had lost much of its power by the time it reached his skin.

Yue Zhong saw the assassin clearly, it was precisely that beautiful and petite woman, with that incredibly sexy body. She was the Shinobi Demon Tenpyo Saka.

Yue Zhong's pupils constricted as he cast his Art of Fear, sending an oppressive Spirit attack towards her. Against Agility and Strength-type opponents, the Art of Fear was extremely useful.

Tenpyo Saka was, however, an Agility and Spirit based Evolver, and Yue Zhong's Art of Fear didn't affect her much.

As her attack had failed, Tenpyo Saka immediately flashed, intending to disappear into the forest. Retreating the moment an attempt failed, this was the assassin way for Tenpyo Saka. She had assassinated many enemies stronger than her even prior to becoming one of the 6 Demons of Takama-ga-hara. She could survive and killed so many, because she was that prudent.

"You want to leave! Not so easy!" Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, as he activated his Shadow Steps and dashed towards her.

When he activated that skill, Yue Zhong's speed was pushed to the maximum, even 30% faster than an Agility-based Evolver like Tenpyo Saka.

In a few breaths, Yue Zhong had caught up to her, and he wielded his weapon, slicing through the air.

A cloud of smoke suddenly burst out from her body, enveloping her entirely. This was one of the skills that she had, Ninjutsu: Smoke Release.

The dense smoke blocked Yue Zhong's sight, and his blade landed



on thin air. He held his breath, and activated his Devil Flame Armor, instantly preventing the smoke from touching him. He was worried that the smoke might contain poison.

Under the cover of the Second Order Stealth skill, Tenpyo Saka disappeared amidst the smoke.

Yue Zhong looked around, noting that her presence had disappeared entirely. Even someone as strong as him could not detect the user of a Second Order Stealth skill.

“Strong! This woman truly deserves to be one of the Demons of the Takama-ga-hara.” Yue Zhong glanced left and right, while feeling a chill in his heart. His perception was strong, and in the dark, it was enhanced further. Nothing could escape his senses. Yet this Tenpyo Saka had managed to escape his detection. She was truly a terrifying shinobi.

He thought silently: “She must still be somewhere near. If she left quickly, there would be the sound of wind. Since I can’t hear anything, she must be staying still, or moving slowly.”

# Chapter 563: Capturing Tenpyo Saka!

---

“Since you won’t come out, I’ll force you out!” Yue Zhong swept his gaze around, and immediately activated his Devil Flame. With his right hand, he sent out a long burning tornado outwards, and the woods started burning.

Since Yue Zhong had no means of detecting the Shinobi Demon in her Stealth, he had to resort to extreme measures. Lighting the entire forest would force her to reveal herself at some point.

Yue Zhong’s sense were unable to pick up any trace of Tenpyo Saka was because she was moving slowly and could distort his perception. The moment she made any abrupt movements, Yue Zhong would discover her.

The moment the blazing tornado swept past a certain patch of the forest, there was a silhouette that suddenly burst towards the distance.

“Found you!” The moment the silhouette appeared, Yue Zhong flashed, and charged towards the direction.

In a span of 10 breaths, Yue Zhong had caught up to Tenpyo Saka and without mercy, he launched an assault towards her.

From her body, a cloud of smoke billowed out, blocking his sense of sight.

“The same trick won’t work twice!” Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and cast his Devil Flame, causing 10 fireballs to burst out through the smoke, aiming for Tenpyo Saka.

Tenpyo Saka relied on the Ninjutsu: Smoke Escape and coupled with her Second Order Stealth to confuse Yue Zhong’s sense. This would allow her to escape. Without the defensive cover of the smoke, it caused her to be unable to employ her escaping arts.

Facing the 10 fireballs, Tenpyo Saka had no choice but to raise her hands to block her face. She twisted her body and managed to

evade most of them.

Unfortunately, 3 of them still managed to hit her squarely, and began to burn her Shinobi clothes.

She quickly grabbed her clothes and tore it off, revealing a silver layer of a Type 3 Mutant Beast hide.

The black Shinobi clothes were incinerated into ashes.

In the dark, the silver Mutant Beast hide accentuated Tenpyo Saka's incredible body, giving her an even more alluring charm, like a demoness in the night.

Tenpyo Saka stared fixedly at Yue Zhong, speaking in a clear and melodious voice: "You're not from the Kingdom of God!"

Although the Kingdom of God was currently the leading organization in the world, their roots were in the west. Their core members were all Europeans, there would be very few Asians that were as powerful in their upper echelons.

Yue Zhong stared back and said: "Surrender! You're not my match."

Tenpyo Saka nodded without expression: "En! You're strong. To deal with you, it would take the leader of Takama-ga-hara Tetsuo Nendori-sama to handle you personally."

There were 5 Demons as well as the Lord Demon of Takama-ga-hara, a total of 6 Demon-class experts.

This time, in order to catch the Kingdom of God off guard, Takama-ga-hara had deployed 4 of their Demons. If they had launched a joint effort against Yue Zhong, he would have at most a 30% chance of surviving. However, alone, Yue Zhong had confidence in dealing with any of them.

Tenpyo Saka asked: "Why are you helping the Kingdom of God? They're an organization over at Europe. They came to Japan to seize our space and resources. They're our common enemy!"

“Wait till you surrender, or become a corpse, I’ll tell you then!” Yue Zhong’s eyes flashed coldly, and activated his Gravity Manipulation. A two-fold gravitational force pressed down on Tenpyo Saka’s body, as Yue Zhong’s Black Tooth Blade swung towards her.

She continued to face him without any expressions, instead, she raised a dagger to block, before her entire frame was sent flying back a few meters. She then tapped the ground lightly and changed directions to flee.

Her assassination skills were terrifying. If comparing techniques, even Yue Zhong could not compare to this born-and-bred assassin. However, in a frontal clash, she wasn’t Yue Zhong’s match. She knew this clearly.

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and his body flashed, chasing right after Tenpyo Saka like a lightning bolt.

Just as Yue Zhong was about to reach her, she reached behind with her hands, and 10 kunai shot towards him.

Yue Zhong used the huge Black Tooth Blade to deflect the kunai, and they were sent tumbling away. He appeared in front of Tenpyo Saka, and his left hand shot out like a cannon towards her.

At such a close distance, Yue Zhong’s fist surpassed the sound barrier and caused a powerful sonic boom as it came crashing into Tenpyo Saka’s back. She was sent flying into a tree, before she spat out a mouthful of blood and crumpled to the ground. Evidently, even with the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide and Level 3 Defense Vest, she had been gravely injured by that single fist from Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong’s hands flipped, and a collar made of bombs appeared in his hands. He then fixed it onto Tenpyo Saka’s neck.

The collar bomb was a means of shackling Enhancers and Evolvers. To these high level experts, ordinary cuffs were of no use. Only with these advanced products would the experts be

obedient.

The ingenuity behind the creation came from a Japanese film <Battle Royale>. The moment one wore such a collar, other than those with the Metal Manipulation or Electricity Manipulation abilities, or insane body tempering abilities, most other Enhancers and Evolvers had no means of fending against it.

Yue Zhong eyed Tenpyo Saka and barked coldly: “Get up! I know you’re awake. Don’t think of killing me. If I die, after 3 days, that collar bomb will automatically go off. No one can save you.”

She opened her eyes and stared at Yue Zhong coldly: “What do you want?”

Yue Zhong waved his right hand and a transparent silk shot out to wrap around her body, at the same time, sucking her Stamina: “You can stay here obediently.”

After capturing Tenpyo Saka, Yue Zhong whisked out his Falcon Sniper, returning to his vantage point and resumed sniping the elites of the Takama-ga-hara.

As for Tenpyo Saka, she was tied to the tree and watched Yue Zhong kill the elites of her faction, maintaining her calm and silence.

In the battlefield, one Deity had charged out in madness, dodging countless bullets and killed 3 Adjudicators one after another. He even destroyed one defense point. Under his relentless assault, the Kingdom of God soldiers were slowly forced back.

Behind him, a large number of Japanese troops hollered out in triumph, and rushed forwards to conquer the lines.

Peng! Just as the Deity was about to kill another soldier of the Kingdom of God, his brains were blasted apart, and the red and white brain matter splattered onto the floor.

Witnessing such a horrifying scene, the Japanese soldiers immediately lost their composure, and began to hide behind cover,

not daring to advance.

Kanzaki Hideo heard the gunshot and his expression fell: “Did Saka fail? Shit, we miscalculated. Seems like there’s a Demon-level expert behind the scenes. What do we do now?”

At that time, both sides were already embroiled in their final charge, should one side fall, then it was the final result.

The Takama-ga-hara Demons were strong but they weren’t military tacticians. They had not much preparations in terms of strategic warfare. He had already deployed all his troops, and even the Demon experts had rushed out to suppress the Kingdom of God soldiers. If they were to retreat now, their entire troop would fall.

Yue Zhong continued to snipe a few more Takama-ga-hara elites before he stopped. He required both sides to be at an equilibrium. Only then he would come in at the last possible moment to sweep them both up.

Half an hour later, 4 Thunder Fighters flew under the cover of night and landed near Yue Zhong’s position. Yao Yao and 23 other elite soldiers stepped out.

Tenpyo Saka saw the 4 Thunder Fighters and her cold expression finally showed some hint of agitation: “Thunder Fighters! You guys are from the Kingdom of God?!”

The Thunder Fighters were the products of the Kingdom of God, and were the worst nightmares of their enemies. Takama-ga-hara had also tried to devise ways to deal with the Thunder Fighters, however, other than the Gun Demon Kanagawa Soma, not even 3 could deal with them. Of which, one happened to be the leader Tetsuo Nendori.

When the elites came down, they shot Tenpyo Saka a glance, before looking back at Yue Zhong. Their eyes flashed with a strange glint, but they were intelligent enough not to say anything.

“Boss! I’m here!” After another half an hour, Bai Xiao Sheng led

the group of elites, combined with the Japanese and Chinese survivors, and the newly subjugated armed forces of 600 over.

While there were 600 members of the armed forces, over 500 of them were a motley bunch. They were just barely fitter and burlier than the rest. The true Enhancers amongst them were only 20, and they were pathetically weak.

However, like this, there looked to be over 700 people under Yue Zhong.

He ordered the pilot: “Good! Wei He! I order you to launch an assault on that group over there. Make use of the cluster bomb to annihilate them!”

“Yes! Sir!” Wei He saluted Yue ZHong and quickly piloted the Thunder Fighters over.

Under Yue Zhong’s orders, the 4 Thunder Fighters immediately joined in the fray.

At that time, after an intense clash, only 2 Eurocopters were left, as the 4 Thunder Fighters approached, all the Kingdom of God soldiers cheered, while the forces of the Takama-ga-hara felt the blood drain from their faces, their eyes full of despair.

## Chapter 564: Defeating the 2 armies!

---

The moment the Thunder Fighters entered the fray, they begun to release their cluster bombs and incendiary bombs. In an instant, the entire region rang out with explosions, as dust rose in the air, and flames blazed outwards. The entire battlefield shook from the impact, and numerous Japanese troops were either blasted apart or swallowed by the flames.

The soldiers of the Takama-ga-hara had fought for over 2 hours, and they were getting exhausted. Having reached their limits, and facing the brunt of such destruction, they collapsed entirely, and began to run for their lives.

Kanzaki Hideo saw it and he sighed and quickly ordered: “Everyone!! It’s our loss!! Fuwa, retreat!!”

At this time, the Takama-ga-hara had no means to deal with aerial attacks, plus the 6 aircrafts were more than capable of suppressing all the troops of Takama-ga-hara. Even if Kanzaki Hideo and Yokoshima Fuwa were strong, they could not turn the tides around with just them.

At the same time, Yokoshima Fuwa’s Dragoon Transformation had ended, and he had almost expended all his strength. If he continued to battle on, he would definitely face some danger.

Those transformation abilities would grant a huge boost in strength for a short period of time. However, when it ended, the Enhancers would be weakened for a period of time. During this period, they would be reduced to less than half of their fighting capabilities.

After receiving that order, Yokoshima Fuwa immediately turned around and escaped into the darkness.

Yokoshima Fuwa, such a Demon-level expert, actually abandoning his subordinates to run. This led the Takama-ga-hara’s



already collapsing mentality to crumble even further. All the Japanese soldiers lost their will, and began to escape in various directions.

“Attack!! Attack!! Eradicate them!!”

The astute commander from the Kingdom of God saw the retreating Japanese and swiftly brought his troops to give chase. If they didn't annihilate these Takama-ga-hara soldiers, in the future, this faction would definitely become an obstacle to the Kingdom of God. Hence they had to go all out to wipe them out with this chance.

As the soldiers from the Kingdom of God gave chase, a large number of the Japanese soldiers fell and died.

“Do it!” At that moment, Yue Zhong ordered coldly.

Under his orders, the 4 Thunder Fighters suddenly switched targets and gunned down the remaining 2 Eurocopters.

“Why?!”

They had no chance to react, and were destroyed completely, becoming 2 flaming balls as they crashed to the ground.

“What's going on?” Seeing the 2 Eurocopters being destroyed, all the soldiers from the Kingdom of God felt bewildered.

At the next moment, the Thunder Fighters that were assumed to be the trump card of the Kingdom of God began to fire upon the ground without caring for sides, bombing the soldiers and blasting them.

On the battlefield, the sounds of explosions rang out constantly, as many elites from both the Kingdom of God and Takama-ga-hara were blasted to pieces. Many soldiers from both sides fell under the relentless assault of the 4 Thunder Fighters.

Jonas, the commander of the Kingdom of God's Japanese Arm , screamed out in anguish: “How did it become like this? How did it

become like this?! Aren't they our comrades?!"

The elites of the Kingdom of God had charged out from behind their cover to chase after the Japanese troops. Who knew, all of a sudden, the Thunder Fighters had suddenly unleashed carnage and rained destruction down upon everyone on the ground. The entire battlefield turned into a sea of flames, as countless soldiers screamed and wailed out, before being burnt to death. It was practically a scene from hell.

Under that horrifying assault, the Kingdom of God troops were also blasted and they lost all sense of order, each and every soldier dispersing and escaping in various directions.

At this time, Yue Zhong came charging forward with his 700 subordinates, launching a frenzied assault on the retreating Japanese and escaping Kingdom of God soldiers.

By now, both sides were already exhausted, and their morale low. Out of nowhere, Yue Zhong's forces might be a motley bunch, but they came charging out with high spirits and ferocious intent.

The intense battle continued for another 2 hours, before finally settling down. Yue Zhong had captured 2,000 Kingdom of God and Japanese troops. Many others had escaped into the woods, disappearing entirely.

Having defeated both armies, Yue Zhong continued his assault towards the city built by the Yaro Gang.

By now, there were many places burning within the city. Mobs and riots had broken out, and it was chaos everywhere. A large portion of the Yaro Gang's forces had been wiped out by the Kingdom of God. However, a small faction still held out in the inner parts of the city.

Within a villa, numerous soldiers of the Yaro Gang were currently fortifying their defences. If any power without enough firearms or heavy power, they would have to pay a steep price to

attack this final stand.

Yue Zhong gazed at the villa and gave an order: “Fukui Honten, go now and advise the Yaro Gang to surrender to me. If you succeed, I will bestow rewards upon you.”

Fukui Honten’s face fell and he immediately got on his knees to beg: “Sir! Please, spare my life! Spare my life! The Yaro Gang kill without batting eyelids, they will definitely take my life!”

Yue Zhong eyed him with a strong killing intent: “Do you think only the Yaro Gang know how to kill? Am I so merciful? This is an order, and orders are absolute! Those who disobey will be executed!”

Fukui Honten helplessly mustered his courage: “Yes! I understand. What are your conditions, Sir?”

“Tell them to surrender unconditionally, I will guarantee that their daily lives would not be affected.”

With the Thunder Fighters, he could easily destroy the villa. Having such a trump card, Yue Zhong was obviously confident of his chances.

“Yes! I understand!”

Fukui Honten then gritted his teeth and raised a white flag as he walked towards the territory of the Yaro Gang.

2 soldiers quickly walked out and escorted him in front of a high-ranking officer, Kazuki Nobuhiko.

The Yaro Gang member wielded a sharp knife and emitted a strong killing intent as he spat out: “Who the fuck are you?”

Fukui Honten felt the killing intent and his face turned pale as he stammered: “I’m Fukui Honten, I was sent here as an envoy by the leader of the army outside, Yue Zhong.”

Although Fukui Honten was huge and burly, able to kill zombies easily, he was actually a timid coward. He was currently

intimidated by Kazuki Nobuhiko's aura, and felt that he might be killed if he wasn't careful.

Kazuki Nobuhiko frowned: "Yue Zhong? He's Chinese?"

Under the threat of death, Fukui Honten immediately bragged about Yue Zhong's power: "Yes! He's Chinese, however, he has over 3,000 elites under him, and 20 assault helicopters. The Kingdom of God and Takama-ga-hara were defeated by him earlier. He even killed 2 out of the 6 Demons of the Takama-ga-hara and captured one. The Shinobi Demon Tenpyo Saka is currently his captive."

"You see the helicopters in the skies? Those are his. They're called Thunder Fighters, and they're the more advanced aircraft weapons you will find. Each of them possess the power to raze a city to the ground. There're countless bombs, incendiary bombs, and even cluster bombs. Should you guys resist, then he would order the decimation of the entire region. By that time, you guys will only die without even knowing what hit you. On account that we're all Japanese, I tried to advise Yue Zhong-sama to spare you guys. I even volunteered myself as envoy to come and contact you guys." On one hand, Fukui Honten continued to brag about Yue Zhong's power, while earning some face for himself. He hoped that he could get out of Kazuki Nobuhiko's hands with this.

The stronger they understood Yue Zhong to be, the safer Fukui Honten would be. He knew this, that was why he spared no effort in blowing Yue Zhong's trumpet.

Hearing those words, Kazuki Nobuhiko's expression did not change, but his heart was shocked beyond belief: "So the Takama-ga-hara was really defeated by them! Even the Shinobi Demon was captured!"

Kazuki Nobuhiko wasn't some ordinary riff raff of the Yaro Gang. He was the second-in-command, and wielded great authority. He knew plenty of information that ordinary members

wouldn't know. He knew the plan of the Takama-ga-hara to ambush the Kingdom of God. Since Yue Zhong's army could crash so easily, he knew that Yue Zhong must be more powerful than he could imagine.

The 4 Thunder Fighters were manufactured by the Kingdom of God as the latest in line for weapons, under their might, even a town as established as the Yaro Gang's would be turned into tofu.

Kazuki Nobuhiko grabbed onto Fukui Honten's clothes and asked softly: "What did Yue Zhong offer?"

Fukui Honten knew that this Yaro Gang member was already faltering on surrendering. He quickly advised softly: "Yue Zhong wants you guys to surrender unconditionally, he would personally guarantee the safety of all of you."

"Just that? No other sweeteners?" Kazuki Nobuhiko frowned slightly as he asked. Although he knew Yue Zhong truly meant for them to surrender with such terms, he had hoped that he could get something out of it.

Fukui Honten quickly advised: "Nobuhiko-sir, Yue Zhong is a man that dishes out his rewards and punishments accordingly. As long as you truly submit and work hard for him, he would reward you."

# Chapter 565: Jasper Green Lotus!

---

Fukui Honten did not know the background of Kazuki Nobuhiko, and could only use such words to try and coax him into surrendering.

Kazuki Nobuhiko hesitated a while, before suddenly asking: “That’s true! Once I contribute to his cause, I will naturally receive some rewards. Oh yes, does Yue Zhong-sama like beautiful girls?”

Fukui Honten pondered as he thought back to Ida Kyoko and the little loli Yao Yao beside Yue Zhong, before nodding and replying: “Yea, Yue Zhong-sama only likes top beauties.”

Most men like beauties, and Fukui Honten was just using a common stereotype to support his conjecture.

Kazuki Nobuhiko heaved a long sigh of relief, and relaxed his frown: “Alright!”

Fukui Honten brazenly continued: “Kazuki-sama, the most important thing now is to complete what Yue Zhong-sama has ordered me to do. He’s not a patient man, and I fear if we delay too long, he might rush in with his troops.”

Kazuki Nobuhiko immediately wore a warm expression and said: “Sure! Come with me!”

On the way, many of the guards from the Yaro Gang looked towards Fukui Honten beside Kazuki Nobuhiko and sighed in their hearts. After all, no one wanted to rush to their deaths blindly. In fact, many were in favour of surrendering.

As led by Kazuki Nobuhiko, Fukui Honten came to a lavish place within the city.

“Who the hell are you?” A 1.6m middle-aged man in kimono with a ferocious aura stared at Fukui Honten and barked coldly.

This man was the leader of the Yaro Gang, Hajime Moto. He was

a Level 15 Enhancer. As the leader of a faction, he could order his subordinates to capture all sorts of zombies, and he will kill them easily. This allowed him to raise his level to 15, although his fighting strength was really negligible.

Even in the apocalypse, many leaders weren't actually strong experts, instead, they held power over a large number of ordinary survivors.

Fukui Honten was intimidated by the aura of Hajime Moto that he trembled slightly, before gritting his teeth to say: "I'm Fukui Honten. Leader Hajime, I'm the envoy sent by Yue Zhong-sama. He wants me to advise you guys to surrender unconditionally. He can promise that the lives of you and your subordinates will be intact. Otherwise, he will immediately charge in with his army, and level the entire place, not leaving even a single chicken or dog alive."

Hajime Moto frowned and asked coldly: "Yue Zhong, he's a Chinese?"

Fukui Honten had a bad feeling as he replied: "Yes!"

A savage look flashed in Hajime Moto's eyes as he bellowed out: "You want me to submit to a damn Chinese pig? Is your brain damaged? Are you still part of our mighty race? You're actually willing to lower yourself to work for a pig?! You're a disgrace! Our Yaro Gang would definitely not submit to a Chinese! Our Yaro Gang is above the rest, and we will fight till the end with that Chinese dog!! Kazuki, go take this traitor out and chop off his head, hang it outside!"

The right-wing movement had gained explosive traction in recent years, and they had managed to prevail even in the modernizing world. This Hajime Moto was an extreme nationalist, and even he would rather die in battle than submit.

Fukui Honten fell to the floor in fright, his entire 2m frame trembling as he pleaded: "Sir, spare me!! Hajime-sama, spare me!!

I'm just an envoy!! Don't kill me, don't kill me!!”

Kazuki Nobuhiko was stunned as he stayed where he was. He thought of having to face the forces of Yue Zhong if he killed Fukui Honten, and his hands became cold.

The Yaro Gang had no aerial defences, and the strongest weapon they had were just a few rifles. There was no way they stood a chance against those Thunder Fighters.

Hajime Moto's eyes flashed fiercely and he barked: “Kazuki, you're still not acting? You want to surrender to that Chinese dog?!”

Kazuki Nobuhiko felt his heart turn cold, as a look of resolution gleamed in his eyes and he replied: “Hai! I understand!”

After that, he pulled out the kodachi at his waist and swung it high, before swinging it down, slashing through Hajime Moto's neck and right shoulder.

The headless corpse of the Yaro Gang's leader slumped to the floor, the decapitated head still wearing a look of disbelief.

Kazuki Nobuhiko eyed the corpse and a complicated gaze appeared in his eyes: “Leader! I don't want to die, I still want to live! Since you're intending to stand in my way, you'll have to die!!”

Fukui Honten glanced at Kazuki Nobuhiko and he felt a tremor of shock: “What a ruthless man.”

After Hajime Moto was disposed of by Kazuki Nobuhiko, he swiftly ordered the rest to put down their weapons with his authority as second-in-command and brought them to surrender.

A total of 400 Yaro Gang members came forward to submit to Yue Zhong, many of which were Level 30 or 40 Enhancers.

Kazuki Nobuhiko came up to Yue Zhong and raised the head of Hajime Moto, saying: “Sir, this is the head of our ex-leader, Hajime



Moto! He wanted to go against your orders, and I've decided to kill him, and offer his head as a pledge of allegiance, Sir!"

Yue Zhong eyed the head and commented mildly: "Well done!"

"Thank you for your compliments, Sir!" Kazuki Nobuhiko's heart leaped in joy, as he carefully eyed the Shinobi Demon Tenpyo Saka behind Yue Zhong, her neck wrapped in the collar bomb.

"He's truly strong, to have actually subdued a Demon from Takama-ga-hara. He's too scary." Having seen what Yue Zhong was capable of with his own eyes, his fear and respect towards Yue Zhong grew.

After all, the 6 Demons were the geniuses amongst geniuses over at Japan. Every one of them was at least a dual-attribute Evolver, their combat strength the apex of the crop, and not a single person in the Yaro Gang was their match.

Yue Zhong pointed to a small hill and asked: "I saw the Takama-ga-hara troops suddenly rushing out from there, what was going on?"

The sudden ambush by the Takama-ga-hara resulted in some severe losses by the Kingdom of God. If it weren't for their elite Adjudicators and Judges, who had all transitioned in their jobs, they would have long been defeated by the Japanese troops.

Kazuki Nobuhito replied with respect: "Sir, our Yaro Gang has built this city on top of a large underground refuge. There's a tunnel leading to that mountain. The Takama-ga-hara had made use of that tunnel to flank the Kingdom of God soldiers."

In order to deal with potential nuclear war, Japan had constructed various underground refuges. The Yaro Gang had established their base on top of one such refuge.

Yue Zhong fixed his gaze on Kazuki Nobuhiko: "Why did the Kingdom of God attack you guys?"

He explained: "We had obtained a Mutant Plant called the Jasper

Green Lotus. The jasper fruits it bear can allow Enhancers above Level 50 to evolve a skill to a Second Order stage. Any Enhancer whose level was below 50, swallowing a jasper fruit would cause the 6 attributes to gain a 4 point boost. However, it is only effective once, consuming more than one would have no effect. The Kingdom of God had come specially for this Jasper Green Lotus.”

When Yue Zhong heard it, he immediately ordered: “Bring me to it.”

“Yes! Sir, please come with me.”

Under Kazuki Nobuhiko’s lead, Yue Zhong came to an area outside of the lodgings.

Within a pool of not even 20cm deep, there was a 4-petal jade green plant, with a green flower blooming right in the middle. Within the flowers, there were a few jade-like fruits. It really looked like a mysterious lotus.

Kazuki Nobuhiko pointed to the plant and said: “That’s the Jasper Green Lotus!”

There were 8 Enhancers of above level 30 guarding the place, obviously viewing the plant with great importance as well.

Yue Zhong patted Kazuki Nobuhiko in satisfaction and praised: “Well done! You did well. As long as those Yaro Gang members whose hands have not been dyed with Chinese blood, I will return them to you, and you will be reinstated as the vice-commander of the Yaro Gang. Your direct superior is Fukui Honten. However, since the Yaro Gang sounds so vulgar, let’s rename it to be the Wild Wolf Company. You’re currently the Vice-commander and your rank is Major.”

If it wasn’t for Kazuki Nobuhiko’s decisive and swift handling of the situation, the Jasper Green Lotus might have been destroyed in the chaos. Gaining such a treasure, Yue Zhong’s view of Kazuki Nobuhiko also rose.

Having been approved of Yue Zhong, Kazuki Nobuhiko felt extremely pleased and he voiced his allegiance once more: “Thank you Yue Zhong-sama! Kazuki will definitely serve you with my life!!”

Yue ZHong walked into the pool and took 3 of the fruits, before arranging for 8 Evolvers to protect the pool.

By now, Yue Zhong had given a number of the Evolving Liquid to those elite soldiers that had followed Yao Yao to Japan, causing them to evolve. He had immediately gained over a 100 Level 40 Evolvers. Because of this troop, he could easily vanquish the 2 armies from the Kingdom of God and Takama-ga-hara.

Yue Zhong then eyed Kazuki Nobuhiko before giving him a task: “Kazuki, I need people of talents in the following fields: Optoelectronic engineering, mechanical engineering, electronic engineering and biological sciences. Find these people and bring them to me.”

Being adjacent to Tokyo, the Shizuoka Prefecture was also a developed county, there should be a number of researchers, scientists and talents in those areas. Yue Zhong needed them to work for him.

When America and the Soviet Union had teamed up to defeat Berlin, while the Soviet Union was snatching up resources, America snatched up talents. After World War II, America’s technology had surpassed the Soviet Union. Yue Zhong was severely lacking in talents in the science field right now. Before gaining the capitals back in China, he could only rely on the geniuses of Japan to help him.

# Chapter 566: Concentration Camp!

---

Kazuki Nobuhiko understood Yue Zhong's intentions, but he still replied with respect: "Yes! Yue Zhong-sama!"

He then proceeded to pass the order to look for those talents as per Yue Zhong's instructions.

After he left, Yue Zhong turned to Tenpyo Saka behind him who had been following behind, with the collar bomb still on her neck. He directly offered: "Tenpyo Saka, how about working for me?"

As one of the 6 Demons, her combat strength was truly astonishing. If Yue Zhong could successfully win her over, he would gain another peak expert amongst his ranks.

Tenpyo Saka looked at Yue Zhong with a clear gaze, without any expression yet her tone was cold: "I'm Japanese, my strength is only for Japan."

Yue Zhong's pupils constricted and his killing intent billowed: "You're not afraid that I'll kill you?"

Tenpyo Saka continued eyeing Yue Zhong without a shred of fear: "That's your freedom."

He gazed at her, his killing intent becoming thicker. With such a high level expert as an Assassin, not many could defend against her. If he couldn't subdue her, then he would rather see her dead.

She could feel the murderous aura radiating from Yue Zhong and knew he was for real, and a chill passed her heart: "Yue Zhong. You can't dominate Japan. If you allow the Takama-ga-hara to ransom for my release, I'm willing to convince Tetsuo Nendori-sama to enter an alliance with you. Both sides can exist together in Japan. Our current enemies are not each other, but the zombies. We're already outnumbered, if we continued to slaughter amongst ourselves, we would fall prey to the zombies."

Yue Zhong was reminded of the big picture, and he nodded

slowly: “Alright, I’m willing to negotiate with Takama-ga-hara.”

Yue Zhong wasn’t Japanese, if he insisted on establishing a Japan force, it would be incredibly difficult. Furthermore, he didn’t even intend to in the first place. He had just wanted to obtain some of the benefits before heading back to consolidating his strength in China.

Bai Xiao Sheng came up to Yue Zhong at this point, his expression steely: “Sir. We’ve discovered a Chinese concentration camp. Do you want to come take a look?”

“Concentration camp?” Yue Zhong hissed and his expression turned extremely ugly the moment he heard those words. This was a notorious institution used during the World War II, and countless people have suffered and died in them.

During the second World War, all the countries involved had some form of such a place. Who knew that it would resurface during these apocalyptic times.

In an area where dirty waters flowed, and there were steel fences and wooden stakes embedded all around, there were dozens of tents and simple wooden cartons. This was the concentration camp set up by the Yaro Gang.

Within this camp, gender didn’t matter, everyone was naked and gathered together for warmth. Around the camp, corpses could be seen strewn around. There were many female corpses, each of them bearing the evidence of countless abuse and torture.

Near the entrance of the camp, there were rows and rows of dead Chinese people lined up neatly. There were men and women, old and young. It was practically hell.

In this post apocalypse, many Japanese were cruel to their own people, not to mention the Chinese and other nationalities.

If even ordinary Japanese became the slaves of other Japanese, then the Chinese, Americans, English and Africans were treated

worse than humans.

The moment Yue Zhong neared the camp, he could smell a thick stench of excrement and rotting, causing him to feel his bile rushing up his throat. He almost wanted to turn around to walk away.

There were many Chinese like Jin Li who revered the Japanese. Over the course of years, many of these Chinese had assimilated entirely into the Japanese culture. Yue Zhong loathed to see such people.

A person whose frame had been reduced to skin and bones ran out of the camp, pleading: “Help me!! Help me!! Please save me!! Please, I’m begging you!!”

The rest of the people in the camp ignored him, instead, just staring at him coldly.

Behind the person, a number of blond Caucasians were rushing towards him.

The moment Yue Zhong heard the words of the fleeing man, his brows arched and he ordered: “Chinese? Go save him!”

One of the personal guards by Yue Zhong’s side immediately shot forward and used a Tang Replica Sword to point at the man: “Kneel!”

The moment those 3 Caucasians saw the Tang Replica Sword, their eyes flashed with fear and they turned tail and ran.

The bag of bones immediately smiled at Yue Zhong: “Thank you! I’m Miao Xi Gui. Thank you for saving my life.”

Yue Zhong asked: “Why were they chasing you?”

Miao Xi Gui’s eyes flashed with bitterness: “They want to eat my flesh.”

He continued: “This is a concentration camp, those Japanese didn’t provide us with food. They only watched and laughed as we

killed amongst ourselves. We were then forced to cannibalism to live on. I had been captured here, and had gone 7 days and 7 nights without food.”

Standing beside Yue Zhong, Tenpyo Saka’s face fell: “Impossible! Our Japanese people would never be so cruel!”

Although Tenpyo Saka wasn’t some nationalistic person, she was still proud of her country and people. In her mind, most Japanese were decent people, and would not do such deranged things.

Yue Zhong ordered coldly: “Convey my orders! Go round up the warden and all the prison guards of this camp, and bring them out of the city to behead them! Their family members will all become slaves, and await to be given to those who perform well!”

One of the personal guards swiftly dismissed himself: “Yes!”

Tears welled up in Miao Xi Gui’s eyes, as he thought back on the all the sufferings, and he immediately knelt on the floor, kowtowing profusely: “Thank you kind sir!! Thank you for seeking redress for our people!!”

The Chinese had been humiliated by the Japanese, and most of them had lost hope for the future. Although they were all filled with hate for the Japanese, they lacked the strength to do anything. Hence, they could only live on like pigs and dogs. However, they bore the grudge, and now that they had Yue Zhong to aid them, Miao Xi Gui could not help but sob emotionally.

Yue Zhong then turned to Bai Xiao Sheng;” Go get some men to sweep them all. Those who had participated in the killing of any Chinese, execute them. If any Chinese inside are willing to join us, absorb them into our ranks. I only want Chinese who can speak our language, not those Chinese Japanese that had already forgotten their mother tongue.”

In order to integrate into the local community, there were many Chinese whose later generations had developed and assimilated

into the Japanese culture. Many of them forgot their Chinese language, and had totally become Japanese. Yue Zhong did not want these people within his ranks as well.

“Yes!” Bai Xiao Sheng then took 10 experts and entered the camp.

That single order from Yue Zhong caused a bloodbath to be shed. A 100-over Yaro Gang members were all dragged out to be executed, and their families were branded as slaves to be given as gifts to victorious people.

Within the concentration camp, Yue Zhong discovered over a 160 Chinese survivors. They were all excited about joining Yue Zhong, and becoming part of his troops.

As for the other foreigners within the camp, Yue Zhong directly executed those who had eaten Chinese people, whereas the rest were released.

The Yaro Gang's city had a total of 50,000 Japanese survivors, and many were talents in their own fields of research and development. Many were sent back towards Sakura Town in preparation to be brought back to China.

There were also various top-of-the-line machinery and manufacturing equipment, which were commissioned to be brought back to Sakura Town as well.

Being in the Shizuoka Prefecture, the Yaro Gang's city was like a bucket in a body of water. The moment the 3 million zombies launched an assault over here, the city was absolutely incapable of withstanding the onslaught.

In Yue Zhong's hands, there were over 2,000 Kingdom of God and Takama-ga-hara captives. The ordinary Kingdom of God soldiers numbered about 700 Japanese. They were just normal people who fought to survive, and didn't particularly swore by any allegiance. Yue Zhong thus incorporated them into the troops belong to Ida Kyoko, Muto Shin and Yuan Tian Gang, bolstering



their strength.

As for the 1,400 Japanese soldiers of the Takama-ga-hara, over 200 of them had weak wills and decided to switch loyalties, and were immediately sent to his 3 subordinates. The remaining 1,200 of the soldiers were unwilling.

Working together with Kazuki Nobuhiko, Yue Zhong soon gained control over the Yaro Gang's city, and it regained its peace.

Inside a particular master bedroom within a mansion, Yue Zhong pulled out one of the Jasper Green Fruits and swallowed it. He only had the time now to consume this treasure.

The moment it was absorbed into his abdomen, it transformed into a warm energy flow that spread throughout his limbs, and nourished his body. The energy continued to travel along Yue Zhong's meridians, before finally settling in his mind, and landed on the bronze rune representing the Stealth ability, carving out additional engravings.

“Second Order Stealth: Greatly enhances Stealth ability, distorting and confusing enemies' senses even when moving slowly.”

Yue Zhong opened his eyes as he savoured the enhancing effect: “Second Order Stealth! Why was it this skill?! Ugh, if only it had been the Steel Body skill...”

The Steel Body skill directly impacted Yue Zhong's survivability in combat, whereas the Stealth ability was related to his assassination skills.

## Chapter 567: Envoy from Takama-ga-hara!

---

Inside a meeting room, a fierce light flashed past Bai Xiao Sheng's eyes. He spoke: "Leader! Since those 1,200 Takama-ga-hara soldiers aren't willing to work for us, let's just kill them and be done with it!"

"En!" Yue Zhong frowned slightly as he lowered his head in thoughts. He was also of a mind to do away with those soldiers that weren't willing to submit. They were all elites, if they were released to the Takama-ga-hara, they would add to the numbers.

The stoic expression of Tenpyo Saka finally had a change, as she could not help but exclaim: "No! Yue Zhong, you can't do that! They're all humans, not some dog or chicken! Please Yue Zhong, don't kill them! They've already surrendered, you shouldn't kill them."

Muto Shin had a fierce glint in his eyes as well: "I, too, am for killing them! They're the elites of the Takama-ga-hara, the moment they're killed, Takama-ga-hara would suffer a huge loss!"

Since the past, traitors had always been harshest to their own people. Muto Shin was already a traitor of the Takama-ga-hara, and he was exceptionally ruthless to his ex-comrades. Only then would he be able to prove his loyalty to Yue Zhong.

An elite team was after all the core strength of any power. If too many were wiped out, it would be tough for the faction to regain its strength. Yue Zhong had over a million survivors in China right now, but his true elite troops only numbered about 20,000. If they were somehow annihilated, his military might would plunge for a period of time.

Killing these 1,200 soldiers would mean dealing a huge blow to the Takama-ga-hara.

A intelligence officer came up to Yue Zhong and reported:

“Leader! The Takama-ga-hara had sent an envoy requesting your audience!”

“Let him in!” Yue Zhong’s brows arched, “He has truly come!”

A handsome man of about 35 or 36 wearing a suit came walking into the hall, before bowing to Yue Zhong: “Yue Zhong-sama, I’m Fuji Saburo, an envoy from Takama-ga-hara. I’m pleased to make your acquaintance.”

Yue Zhong eyed him and spoke coldly: “Fuji Saburo, speak your mind.”

Fuji Saburo immediately tried to come from the moral angle: “Yue Zhong-sama, why would you attack our Takama-ga-hara? We have no grudge with you...”

Yue Zhong’s brows furrowed as he cut him off loudly: “Cut the crap! If you’re here to spew nonsense, then just make yourself scarce. I don’t have the time to waste on your bullshit. Say something worthwhile.”

Fuji Saburo was obviously eloquent, if he continued to speak, he would definitely argue from the moral angle for a few hours. Yue Zhong could not be bothered to deal with it.

He decided to get to the crux of the matter: “Yue Zhong-sama, our Takama-ga-hara hopes that you can return Tenpyo Saka-sama as well as the soldiers to us.”

Yue Zhong’s gaze was still chilly, as he spoke slowly: “If you want to get them back, what are you prepared to pay for them?”

Fuji Saburo immediately offered a high price: “10,000 tons of rations, 500 tons fuel, a 1,000 rifles, 20,000 rounds of ammunition, 200 beautiful virgins. What do you think of the price?”

“10,000 tons of rations, 500 tons fuel. They’re freaking rich. This Takama-ga-hara must have obtained help from the Japanese government?” When Yue Zhong heard those numbers, he felt a chill. He roughly guess how they must have such a backing.

Although a faction could recruit survivors as troops with enough resources, 1,200 elite soldiers and a powerful Evolver was far more valuable than those amounts.

Yue Zhong shook his head and counter-offered: “I want experts from the following fields: Optoelectronics, 20. Engineering, 30. Electronic engineering, 40. Medical, 20.... On top of that, I want 20 aerial transport vehicles, 24 assault helicopters. The moment these are delivered to my doorstep, I will immediately release the elites of the Takama-ga-hara.”

When Fuji Saburo heard Yue Zhong’s counter offer, his back broke out in cold sweat. Those people were all highly sought-after experts in Japan, and if it were just one or two, they would close one eyes. However, Yue Zhong had actually asked for over a thousand people from different fields. The moment Takama-ga-hara handed them over, their development would slow down by a lot.

At the start of the apocalypse, those experts in those fields could not even compare to an ordinary farmer. However, now that the situation was stabilizing in many regions, factions were seeking these experts to aid their development.

The Kingdom of God had been able to advance so quickly because they had managed to secure a large number of talents right from the get go, and obtained a number of blueprints. Thus, their rapid development.

Other than the issue of talents, aerial transport vehicles and assault helicopters were all precious equipment, no one would give them up willingly.

Fuji Saburo stared at Yue Zhong and directly rejected him: “Yue Zhong-sama, your appetite is too big. We can’t bring out so many people nor that number of equipment.”

Yue Zhong stared back, as a huge pressure emitted from him, causing Fuji Saburo to feel suffocated.

He then pointed to Tenpyo Saka and coldly replied: “Fine. We can slowly exchange. As for Tenpyo Saka, she is your Shinobi Demon, I know that you have about 15 assault helicopters and 30 aerial transport vehicles. I want 12 assault helicopters and 15 aerial carriers in exchange for her! You guys won’t say no to this right? I don’t have the time to bargain with you, there’s only yes or no.”

Tenpyo Saka was a powerful Evolver, and her combat ability was high. However, in terms of the battlefield, the destructive might of 12 assault helicopters was more potent than her. Yue Zhong had no plans to stay long in Japan, and exchanging her for some practical weaponry was much more beneficial. After all, she wasn’t willing to work for him.

Tenpyo Saka’s gaze also fell on Fuji Saburo silently, her eyes flashing with anticipation. She wasn’t willing to stay by Yue Zhong’s side as his captive. She wanted to leave, and return to Takama-ga-hara.

Fuji Saburo began to perspire profusely, as he finally bowed to Tenpyo Saka: “My apologies, Shinobi Demon-sama.”

He then turned to Yue Zhong: “Yue Zhong-sama, your terms are too harsh, I can’t promise those.”

Those assault helicopters and transport vehicles were the treasures of the Takama-ga-hara, and although Tenpyo Saka was important to Tetsuo Nendori, her worth could not be compared to those advanced weaponry.

Without those armored machines, the development of Takama-ga-hara would be adversely affected.

“So it seems that I’m not as important as a bunch of machines.” Tenpyo Saka’s eyes flashed with disappointment and lowered her head silently, full of bitterness.

Tenpyo Saka had helped contribute so much to the cause of Takama-ga-hara, and had assassinated countless experts. However,

in the end, Tetsuo Nendori was not willing to exchange any machines for her, and she was filled with disappointment and bitterness.

Yue Zhong took a final look and ordered coolly: “The rest of the soldiers can be exchanged with those talents that i need, every person in exchange for a soldier. Get the hell out!”

“Yue Zhong-sama, we can still discuss this!! Yue Zhong-sama....” Fuji Saburo called out as he was dragged by men under Yue Zhong’s orders.

“Seems like you’re not as important as those machines!” Yue Zhong eyed Tenpyo Saka and mocked.

Tenpyo Saka looked at him, and lowered her head without any comeback.

Bai Xiao Sheng asked: “Boss, what do we do with those soldiers then?”

Yue Zhong replied: “Arrange for them to work on those fortifications at Sakura Town, their wages will be issued as per the lowest.”

Those soldiers were all fit men, and were perfect for fortification works. In this apocalypse, manpower was never enough.

As the meeting ended, Yue Zhong brought Tenpyo Saka and Bai Xiao Sheng, as well as 16 other Evolvers and sat in a Hummer as they made their way towards the sea side, leaving the Yaro Gang’s city.

Tenpyo Saka’s strength was truly fearsome, if it wasn’t for Yue Zhong’s control, she could easily assassinate many important people. He had to bring her along.

About 10km away from the Yaro Gang’s city, there was a seaside town, where the residential population was about a few thousand prior to the apocalypse. The Yaro Gang had cleared the entire place out after the apocalypse had set in.

The entire place was desolate, every room and building empty. Any item that could be used had already been transported away, and the entire place looked like a dead town.

At the coast, there were 2 luxury boats docked, as well as 12 other small fishing boats. About 20 men stood near the coast, they used to be fishing folk before the apocalypse, and knew how to navigate the boats. They were found by Fukui Honten.

He fawned over Yue Zhong and said: “Yue Zhong-sama, these are the boats that we have.”

Kazuki Nobuhiko had also brought along 2 beautiful and sexy Japanese girls in bikinis, as he came up to Yue Zhong, with a fawning smile: “Yue Zhong-sama, these sisters are Miya Aiko and Miya Yuka. They have long admired your skills and strength, and have offered to become your maidservants.”

Both of them walked up to Yue Zhong and bowed, before speaking in unison: “Aiko (Yuka) greets Master!”

Fukui Honten and Kazuki Nobuhiko had just recently joined Yue Zhong, and knew that their future was still not yet cemented. They could only rely on such measures to slowly gain his favour. After all, the fate of those hundreds of Yaro Gang members outside the gate had shocked everyone to the core.

“En!” Yue Zhong swept them a look, before asking Kazuki Nobuhiko: “What’s the rank and level of the strongest Mutant Beast in the seas around here?”

# Chapter 568: Attack of the Sea Mutant Beasts!

---

The seas had become even more terrifying after the apocalypse, after all, all sorts of marine creatures resided within more than 70% of what constituted earth. Even a Type 2 Mutant Beast would be humongous, but compared to the rest of the creatures, it might just be some measly prawn. The real terror were those Type 5 and higher Overlords.

Even if Yue Zhong mustered all his strength, it was impossible for him to kill a Type 5 Mutant Beast at this juncture. That sort of creature was simply too terrifying, even deploying an entire battalion might not work.

If such a Type 5 Mutant Beast were active in the seas, Yue Zhong dared not move out into the Yokosuka Base.

Kazuki Nobuhiko spoke up: “Sir, there are usually a lot of Type 2 Mutant Beasts in the seas, and they’re ferocious, sometimes even coming up to shore to attack people. We had tried establishing a base here once, but due to losing many men to those Type 2 Mutant Beasts, we gave up on the town. The main active forces around here are those Type 2 Mutant Beasts, but we did catch sight of a Type 3 before.”

When Yue Zhong heard it, he went to the shore silently and summoned the Type 2 Sharkie. After taming a beast, as long as he was within a certain radius of the beast, he could establish a mental link with his tamed beasts. The higher the skill level, the larger the radius.

Right now, Yue Zhong’s Tamer Technique had already reached Level 4, within a distance of 200km, all the beasts that had been tamed could be connected with his mind, and rush to him the moment he called for them.



A Type 2 Mutant Shark the length of 40m was tearing into the flesh of a Mutant Swordfish out in the sea. Suddenly, it twisted its head and emitted a sound of delight as it rushed towards the source of the call.

The moment the Type 2 Mutant Shark left, countless smaller sea beasts swam over and began to tear into the Mutant Swordfish.

After the apocalypse, the sea had truly become a hundred times more dangerous. If a normal person was to enter the waters, regardless of how good he is with swimming, within 10 minutes, he would be torn to pieces. Unless he was a powerful Evolver.

Kazuki Nobuhiko continued carefully: “Sir, please pardon my words. With these boats, if they were to go out to sea, they will definitely be destroyed by the Mutant Beasts. It’s too dangerous.”

By this time, Yue Zhong was like Kazuki Nobuhiko’s boss, if he were to die, then Kazuki Nobuhiko’s group would be swallowed by other people. He didn’t want to become a trophy to be collected time after time, hence he wasn’t willing to see Yue Zhong die. It had nothing to do with loyalty, just self-interest.

Yue Zhong replied mildly: “I know. I have my ways to go out to sea safely.”

Kazuki Nobuhiko glance at the straight back of Yue Zhong and kept silent.

All of a sudden, the calm sea began to churn, and the sand on the beach began to stir. Numerous Mutant Sandworms of about 3 to 4 meters burrowed out with sharp teeth, their bodies encased in a white color scale-like covering, and made towards Yue Zhong’s group in a frenzy.

“Level 17 Strange Beast: Mutant Sandworms. They like to swallow flesh and blood.”

The scary thing about them was their numbers, and as they made their way towards Yue Zhong and his group, it looked like a sea of

white.

“Disperse into town!” Yue Zhong looked at the numbers and also felt his scalp tingle. He could easily slaughter a few with a single swing, but there seemed to be over tens of thousands of them. Even someone as powerful as he would be helpless against numbers.

Hearing Yue Zhong’s orders, everyone fought to escape into town.

There were countless buildings still standing in the town, and by making use of those buildings, they could establish a defence.

The Mutant Sandworms had speed twice of normal humans, although they couldn’t chase up to the Evolvers under Yue Zhong, it was more than enough to catch up to the Japanese people under Fukui Honten.

An unfortunate Japanese survivor was slightly slow and he was instantly surrounded by those worms. They opened their jaws and chomped down on his body, drawing fresh blood and meat. In mere seconds, the Japanese survivor were torn to shreds amidst his pitiful screams.

“Save me!! Save me!! Master!!” Miya Yuka was running when she suddenly tripped on a stone and tumbled to the ground. She was so frightened that her tears and snot were streaming down her face, as she cried out miserably.

As she was crying, a number of the Mutant Sandworms had jumped onto her body, and was preparing to take a huge bite out of her.

As she was about to die, a flash of light shot past her, and those Mutant Sandworms were immediately sliced into pieces. Their juices splattered all over her, and if it weren’t for the peril that everyone was in, the posture and circumstance that she was in would be incredibly sexual.

Yue Zhong grabbed her and threw her to Tenpyo Saka: “Protect them properly!”

Tenpyo Saka shook slightly, and received Yuka silently, before rushing towards Aiko’s side. She wasn’t a Strength-based Evolver, but with her equipment, she had 4 times the strength of a normal person. It was barely any effort to carry Yuka.

“Block them!” Yue Zhong waved his hands and activated his Devil Flame, as the terrifying might of fire condensed in his hands. He swept outwards and caused a huge fiery tornado to blow towards those sandworms, enveloping them.

When the flames went out, over hundreds of those Mutant Beasts had been incinerated. The rest stopped slightly, evidently afraid of fire.

Tenpyo Saka and the rest made use of the chance to hurry further into town.

The waves of the sea were churning, and not long after, a huge beast of about 36m and a height of 4m appeared. Its shell broke out of the water first, and soon the entire frame of a Type 2 Mutant Lobster appeared. There were over ten thousand of its little brothers of varying levels that were beside it.

A Type 2 Mutant Beast might not count for much out deep in the ocean, but near the shores, it was still a little Overlord. Other than the Type 2 Mutant Lobster, there was also a huge Mutant Sandworm King beside it, its body over 15m long and 1m tall. This Mutant Sandworm King was the commander of those little sandworms.

Not all leader-type creatures were Type 2 Mutant Beasts, some might be weak but were naturally of a higher-level variant to command their fellow creatures.

“Level 65 Strange Beast: “Type 2 Mutant Lobster. Possess an incredibly tough carapace, and immense strength.”

“Whew, it’s just a Type 2 Mutant Beast!” After seeing the notification that popped out in his mind when his gaze fell on the beasts, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief.

For Type 2 Mutant Beasts, as long as Yue Zhong was careful, he could deal with them on a one-to-one basis. As for Type 3 Mutant Beasts or even Type 4 ones, they could cause him serious damage, even to a life-threatening extent.

Yue Zhong twisted around, and activated his Shadow Steps as he charged towards the Type 2 Mutant Lobster like a tank.

A number of Mutant Sandworms immediately charged towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong then activated his Devil Flame, causing a covering of the powerful flame to encase his body. All around him, the moment those Mutant Sandworms got into contact with the Devil Flame, they were instantly incinerated.

Yue Zhong continued towards the Mutant Sandworm King in a straight line, in that short span of time, his Devil Flame had burned over hundred Mutant Sandworms. He had reached the Mutant Sandworm King and immediately slashed out, causing it to be sliced in two, its juices splattering everywhere.

The moment it died, all the sandworms quickly burrowed away.

The Type 2 Lobster stared at Yue Zhong, emitting a shrill screech.

Under that scream, a huge number of Mutant Lobsters immediately lunged towards Yue Zhong. They had speed that were about 3 or 4 times of a normal person, and they were all large in size. It was like multiple cars charging straight for Yue Zhong.

As Yue Zhong’s blade lashed out, it hit the carapace of one Mutant Lobster and the sound of metal hitting metal resounded. He then applied his Strength of 10 times a normal person, and with difficulty, he sliced apart the Mutant Lobster.

“So hard! These Mutant Lobsters’ carapaces are already comparable to steel.” Yue Zhong frowned after he disposed of one, before retreating backwards explosively.

The Mutant Lobsters were like vehicles and blocked the entire path to the Type 2 Mutant Lobster. If Yue Zhong wanted to make his way towards the Type 2 Mutant Lobster, he would have to clear a path through them.

The claws of the countless Mutant Lobsters waved and slammed towards Yue Zhong. If he was caught in between those metal-like pincers, he was bound to get hurt.

Yue Zhong was like a gust of wind, quickly pulling apart the distance between himself and the mutant beasts. He then waved his hands, and a terrifying bout of Devil Flame shot towards the Type 2 Mutant Lobster, and started to burn profusely.

The Type 2 Mutant Lobster began to struggle when it came in contact with the Devil Flame. However, after merely thrashing about for a few seconds, it crumpled to the floor, evidently, its brain had been roasted.

Yue Zhong’s Second Order Devil Flame had increased in might and destructive potential. The moment an enemy was hit, even if it was a Type 2 Mutant Beast, it would definitely burn to death.

With the death of their commander, the tens of thousands of Mutant Lobsters began to swarm back into the sea, although a few were stubborn enough to chase Yue Zhong.

The flesh and meat of high-level Mutant Beasts were nourishing to humans, just like high level Evolvers or Enhancers were nourishment to the Mutant Beasts.

“Kill them!” Yue Zhong eyed those incoming beasts, and with a thought, a nether hole appeared in the sky, as White Bones stepped out menacingly, immediately pouncing onto the nearest Mutant Lobster, and pierced its hard carapace and brain with a single bone

spike, before grinding the contents to mash.

# Chapter 569: Aircraft Mothership!

---

White Bones could freely manipulate its bones, and even in the midst of those Mutant Lobsters, its sharp bone spikes could reach up to insane lengths, piercing the shells and brains of those monsters.

Yue Zhong leaped back from the swarm, and a number of Devil Flame fireballs rained down on the Mutant Lobsters, frying their brains.

Very quickly, the swarm of elite Mutant Lobsters were slaughtered cleanly, and the remaining ones decided to retreat and turned towards the sea.

At this time, the waves churned, and a huge Type 2 Mutant Shark appeared. It opened its jaws to suck in deeply, and a number of the escaping Mutant Lobsters were sucked into its mouth, before being crushed into pieces.

The hard carapaces of those Mutant Lobsters could not even compare to this Type 2 Mutant Shark's teeth.

All the Mutant Lobsters were immediately frightened of the presence and aura of Sharkie, and quickly escaped.

Little Sharkie got on shore and using its flippers like a human's feet, it waddled over towards Yue Zhong in joy. Although it was a Type 2 Beast, it was still a sea-based creature, and its speed could only reach 3 times that of a person on shore. As for its size, that speed was already considered slowly.

Yue Zhong looked at Sharkie and his face revealed a rare smile, as he quickly reach into his ring and pulled out the bag full of Type 2 and Type 3 Nuclei. He threw it to Sharkie: "Haha! Sharkie, this is yours!"

Sharkie could tell the bag was filled with high level Nuclei and it became excited, immediately swallowing them all.

Such precious nuclei were important and vital to boosting Mutant Beasts.

Not long after it swallowed the entire bag, Sharkie curled up into a ball, and a huge amount of natural energy began to enter its body, transforming it. It was beginning its next evolution.

With the amount of nuclei Yue Zhong got from the Shimazu Clan and the Yaro Gang, it was enough to groom up a Type 3 Mutant Beast.

As to a Type 4 Mutant Beast, it was truly difficult. Yue Zhong already had the Type 3 Greenie, and Type 3 Lightning. Based on the connection he had with the 2 beasts, he already surmised that for a Type 3 Mutant Beast to evolve into a Type 4 one, it would require at least over 200 Type 3 Nuclei or 10 Type 4 Nuclei.

Regardless, it was hard to acquire either methods, and currently, Yue Zhong only had 2 Type 4 Nuclei. Of them, one was being used in the Biological Armor, the other in his arms. It was not enough to raise a Type 4 Beast.

The natural energy continued to swirl and enter Sharkie's body, constantly molding it, and with every breath it took, it seemed to grow larger.

Mutant Beasts had different paths of evolution. Some Type 3 Beasts were as small as a normal person, while some were even smaller. The sea-based Mutant Creatures on the other hand, tend to gravitate towards larger sizes, after all, there was an advantage there.

After one day, Sharkie had reached 80m in length, and 6m in height. There was a long single horn on its forehead, and there were 8 fish limbs at its side, as well as 4 long limbs with sharp claws. Its entire body was covered in green-colored scale. It was truly a peculiar sight.

“Level 80 Strange Beast: Type 3 Mutant Green-clawed Shark.



Having swallowed a large number of nuclei, it is an evolved form of the Mutant Shark. Possesses the innate ability to command water.”

The next day, Yue Zhong brought his party to the shore.

When Kazuki Nobuhiko and the rest saw the huge Sharkie, their faces were filled with shock: “Is this your pet?!”

Miya Yuka and the rest were also filled with shock and fear. In front of such a terrifying beast, they were practically ants.

“En!” Yue Zhong replied indifferently, before stepping into one of the luxury boats: “Let’s go! We shall set off for Yokosuka Base!”

Tenpyo Saka looked at the Type 3 Mutant Green-clawed Shark and her heart was filled with shock: “Powerful! He actually could tame a Type 3 Mutant Beast as his pet!”

Even amongst the top echelon of the Takama-ga-hara, they have killed a few Type 3 Mutant Beasts. They knew how terrifying each single existence was, many Divine Deities and Servants had fallen at the claws and jaws of such beasts. She had even witness a Demon-level person having his head crushed in a single punch from a Type 3 Metal Ape. If it wasn’t for her ability to fade into the background, she might have been slaughtered then as well.

If the Type 3 Mutant Beasts on earth were terrifying to deal with, the Type 3 Mutant Beasts in the seas were a whole different story. Almost no one could single-handedly deal with one yet. After all, man was land-based, no matter how strong an expert, the moment he entered the sea, their power would be decreased by at least 5%. Under such circumstances, even if it were Tetsuo Nendori, he would be torn apart by a Type 3 Mutant Beast.

The fact that Yue Zhong could command a Type 3 Mutant Beast caused Tenpyo Saka to be filled with shock. It was more than enough to be considered a Devil-level existence.

When those Japanese fishing folk were brought over, they begun

to pray to the Type 3 Mutant Green-clawed Shark, after all, they were glad that it was on their side.

Under the escort of Sharkie, the boats began to set off towards the direction of Yokosuka Base.

Yue Zhong and the rest went along the coastline towards the Yokosuka base. Along the way, countless Mutant Beasts of lower levels and Types were turned away from the pressure of Sharkie.

If it were further out in the deep sea, then a Type 3 Mutant Beast wouldn't count for much. Any Type 4 Beast could simply swallow it. However, near the shores, a Type 3 Mutant Beast was definitely and infinitely more dangerous than the rest, and the pressure they emitted was enough to quell the lesser beings.

After a few hours, the majestic outline of the Yokosuka Base appeared in the eyes of Yue Zhong and his party.

“Mothership!! That's an aircraft carrier mothership!!”

As they neared the base, they caught sight of the gigantic mothership docked at the harbor, and seeing it, even Yue Zhong's eyes turned red with excitement.

A mothership!! An aircraft carrier mothership! This was the true overlord of the seas, every single one was a huge and powerful weapon in itself. Before the apocalypse, even China only had one such mothership that had just entered the waters. Right now, there was one perfect and undamaged U.S. Navy mothership in front of his eyes.

It was absolutely one of the most precious treasures left behind during the apocalypse.

Bai Xiao Sheng also exclaimed excitedly: “Mothership! This is great! If we can get that, we can obtain a huge fleet of air and navy weapons!”

If they could really obtain the mothership, then the waters of Southeast Asia will practically be Yue Zhong's backyard. With a

mothership as the centre of operations for a fleet, there would be destroyers, frigates and many other ships. Such cruisers were all powerful combat weapons out in the sea.

“Mothership!! Aircraft carrier mothership!” Tenpyo Saka saw the looming view and her eyes were filled with wonder. Under the suppression of the U.S, Japan had never been allowed to possess an aircraft carrier mothership, and this was a huge source of dissatisfaction for many Japanese.

After all, without one, it meant that there was no authority of the seas. To an island like Japan, it was disadvantageous.

Yue Zhong gave an order: “Get closer to the mothership!!”

Yue Zhong had brought 8 Evolvers with the abilities to manipulate machineries. With them, they could quickly control all sorts of equipment on board, even if it was the mothership.

To fully exhibit and utilize the combat might of a mothership, they would require at least hundreds and thousands of people. However, to drive it, it didn't require that much manpower.

The boats began to get closer.

All of a sudden, a few torpedoes were fired out from the Yokosuka Base, heading straight for Yue Zhong's party.

“Not good! There are still live people in there!” Yue Zhong felt danger at the first moment, and his expression fell. He quickly activated his Shadow Steps and started flinging people overboard, after throwing 6 out, he jumped into the sea as well.

Tenpyo Saka and Bai Xiao Sheng were quick in their reactions as well, immediately grabbing a few people each as they leapt into the sea.

Following loud roar, the boats that they were on were blasted into pieces by the torpedoes.

Sharkie was swimming about, rescuing the different individuals

onto its back. They were all drenched, and their appearance wretched. Even Yue Zhong was not spared.

Bai Xiao Sheng laughed savagely as he looked at the base: “Boss, seems like they’re not particularly friendly.”

Yue Zhong dived back into the water: “It’s understandable. I’ll go see how many of them are there, and I’ll try to negotiate. You guys wait here.”

Yue Zhong had undergone all sorts of special forces training, and swimming was one the core basics as well. With his enhancement, he could already surpass the world’s fastest swimmer prior to the apocalypse.

After 20 minutes, Yue Zhong managed to climb on board the base.

He looked around, discovering that his current position was at a massive dock, and there were all sorts of cruisers and ships docked. The largest was the aircraft carrier mothership.

As he neared it, he saw that there were many zombies shambling around aimlessly at various parts of the mothership. It was obvious that most of the American troops on board had turned.

# Chapter 570: Into the Yokosuka Base!

---

Yue Zhong's gaze swept past the deeper parts of the mothership and thought silently: "Those survivors must be inside the U.S military base... They're the largest obstacle to me right now."

Those survivors had not even said a word and had launched an attack on Yue Zhong's party. They were apparently in a fearful state. They would destroy any stranger they saw, and these kinds of people were the hardest to deal with.

This time, fortunately, Yue Zhong had just brought a small team to check out the situation. If he had been in the Sky Fortress, those survivors might have already fired some form of missile at them.

The U.S was recognized to be the strongest military in the world prior to the apocalypse. Their weapons and technology were advanced, even if an actual Sky Fortress was to be constructed, it would not be able to stand up against the U.S. anti-air missiles,, not to mention an incomplete one.

Yue Zhong thought deeply for a while, before whisking out his Black Tooth Blade and walked towards the inner parts of the mothership.

Along the way, Yue Zhong didn't discover any zombies, nor any live persons.

"Ai! These are human bones!" Yue Zhong swiftly came across a clearing where he saw numerous splintered human bones.

There were huge claw marks all around, each print larger than a human, highlighting the size and might of the owner of those claws.

Yue Zhong surmised: "Mutant Beast, those sea-based creatures would usually come up to shore, no wonder there're not many zombies around. Most must have already been eaten by the sea Mutant Beasts."

Mutant Beasts had already overcome their limits through evolution, and many sea-based aquatic life already possessed the strength to come on shore. While their might is definitely lower on land, it was still not something ordinary humans or zombies could withstand.

The entire Yokosuka Base was empty and desolate, not a person to be seen. This caused Yue Zhong to feel helpless. There wasn't even a chance to engage in intel or exchange of info.

It was apparent that all the survivors in the base had already hidden themselves in some deep recess of the base, and since Yue Zhong wasn't part of the base, he naturally would not know where to go.

Yue Zhong pondered for a while, then decided to walk towards a security camera. He wrote some English on a piece of paper and held it up: "I would like to speak to your commander!!"

After waiting a while, and noting that there was no movement from the security camera, a sense of disappointment arose in his heart. Yue Zhong then sliced the camera apart, and pulled out his Swift Shadow Bike.

The moment the Swift Shadow Bike appeared, Yue Zhong rode it and charged all the way through into Yokosuka Base.

Within the entire base, there were malls, schools, post offices, theatres, gyms and all sorts of other entertainment venues. However, the current state of these buildings were dilapidated, and the numerous vehicles had been abandoned at the sides of the roads, blood stains smeared all over.

Yue Zhong rode all the way and only then, he caught sight of zombies again. However, they were at the edge and were just shambling around aimlessly.

Prior to the apocalypse, this base was a powerful center of operations with over 10,000 American soldiers. When the

apocalypse set in, many had turned into zombies, and people of the Kanagawa Prefecture had escaped to this place, hoping for rescue.

Hearing the sounds of Yue Zhong's motorbike, the zombies began to swarm towards him.

Right at this time, a middle-aged Caucasian appeared at the 3rd level of the cinema and hollered: "What the fuck are you doing?! You still dare to cause such a ruckus! Throw your motorbike aside and hurry over here! Don't lure them over!!"

"Humans!" Yue Zhong saw the guy and his eyes lit up with joy. He immediately kept his Swift Shadow Bike into his storage ring, and hurried over to the theatre.

"Don't move!!" Yue Zhong had just entered the theatre when 2 handguns pointed at his back, at the same time, a cold order rang out.

"Haha!! Japanese lamb for the slaughter, seems like we'll get to enjoy some meat tonight! Haha!"

"He doesn't look dirty or smelly, what luck! The other time, that Japanese lamb was too sour, I felt like vomiting when I ate him."

Yue Zhong maintained his silence, looking at the interior of the cinema. He noticed that there were 9 burly men, each of them fierce-looking, with savage auras. There was a huge pot in the corner, and multiple human bones beside. Evidently, these 9 men had committed cannibalism.

Another Caucasian whose face was covered in brittles opened his mouth, and Yue Zhong immediately smell his bad breath. The stink-mouth laughed savagely: "Raise your hands!! Japanese pig, if you don't want your brains to be blown to pieces, you better do as we say."

One of them, whose arms were basically trunks for muscles, had a lustful look in his eyes as he licked his lips and walked over to Yue Zhong: "This little Japanese pig is not too bad-looking. Before

we kill him, let me play with him! I want to split his ass so bad!! Hahaha!”

The Europeans weren't particularly judgemental towards homosexuality, in fact, there were many homosexuals in the army as well. Having been cooped up in this place, and burdened by the state of the world, they had long been driven to the point of insanity.

Another male laughed savagely: “Jet! Just don't dirty him with your semen, it's too gross to eat.”

“Are you fuckers done? If you are, time to die.” Yue Zhong swept them a look of disgust, and he sent a fist blasting towards the gun-wielding militant beside him with 10 times the Strength of a normal person. The man was sent flying into a wall, and died instantly.

After dealing with one, he then pulled out a dagger from another militant's waist, piercing the chest of that militant before the poor sod had the time to react.

“Oh my god, he killed Jet and Myers!!” Seeing how Yue Zhong had just killed 2 people, the expressions of the rest of the 7 survivors turned to horror. They quickly pulled out their weapons and charged at him.

“Trash! Kneel!!” Yue Zhong eyes them and barked out coldly, his Art of Fear spreading out with him as the centre. The powerful Spirit attack enveloped them.

The 7 survivors were instantly stunned silly by the Art of Fear, their faces contorted in fear and shock. They crumpled to their knees, their bodies shivering,

Yue Zhong eyed them and spoke coldly like an emperor admonishing his subjects: “Other than you, where are the rest of the survivors?”

“We know!”



With his high Spirit of 246, the survivors basically could not withstand his pressure. Under the different hallucinations, the survivors could only answer helplessly as their minds reeled.

Yue Zhong pressed on: “Where are they holed up in?”

One of the survivors responded with an expression of fear: “The military members are mainly in the 3rd and 4th shelter bunkers. They had brought a large number of Japanese citizens with them. On top of that, there are many Japanese survivors in the 5th and 7th bunkers. If you follow this path, past the group of zombies outside, you can see the 7th bunker.”

“En! You guys can go to hell now.” After obtaining the info he needed, Yue Zhong mercilessly slashed out, and the 7 survivors crumpled to the ground.

After all, they had crossed his threshold, and he definitely would not allow them to live on.

Yue Zhong took out a radio device: “You guys can swim over now! There isn’t much danger on land at this moment.”

Sharkie could possibly suffer under the torpedo attacks, hence Yue Zhong chose for Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest to swim over.

Upon receiving his orders, the rest of the team swam towards Yokosuka Base.

Near the shore, there weren’t many zombies, nor any signs of Mutant Beasts. However, all the food and usable items within the various constructions had been swept clean.

Yue Zhong and his team went towards a small room and rested. After all, most of them had been out at sea for the past few hours and were feeling tired.

Bai Xiao Sheng sat at a window and played with his Dark Magic Blade: “The situation now isn’t too good! The opponents are trapped in the midst of the zombies, and are hostile towards us. Boss, what do you intend to do?”

Yue Zhong replied: “I’ll take a look later on.”

Bai Xiao Sheng stared at Yue Zhong incredulously: “Boss, you crazy? There’s at least hundreds of thousands of zombies out there, even if you’re strong, you can’t kill them all by yourself!”

Yue Zhong looked towards Tenpyo Saka: “I have my ways. Tenpyo Saka, you will go with me.”

A look of understanding flashed past her eyes and she nodded.

With both of them possessing the Second Order Stealth skill, as long as they were careful, they would definitely be able to get past the zombies. Of course, it was a risky operation, as the moment they were detected by any high level zombies, they would be surrounded in an instant.

After Tenpyo Saka came to possess the Second Order Stealth skill, she had been able to weave in and out of hordes as well. However, it was not often that one would choose to do that. After all, she had been one of the Demons of the Takama-ga-hara, and she had all sorts of treatment and entitlements, there was no need for her to risk her life to go through zombies.

As night fell, Yue Zhong and Tenpyo Saka began to move under the cover of the night.

Yue Zhong and Tenpyo Saka soon came to the sea of zombies, and noted that they had gathered in such a bunch that they had basically blocked the entire way. Under these circumstances, they wouldn’t be able to get past them even if they used their Stealth.

# Chapter 571: Zombie Horde's Odd Movements!

---

Tenpyo Saka looked quietly at Yue Zhong, waiting to see his response. The Second Order Stealth was only good to distort the enemy's perception of the user, and it was not full invisibility. Furthermore, while the ordinary zombies used their sense of smell and sound to discover the existence of people, and would be affected by the skill, if they were touched or came into contact, they would still react. At the same time, if the user was attacked by accident while in Stealth, the distorted perception would be dispelled.

There were many zombies on the road, and they were squeezed tightly together. No one could pass this sea of zombies, and even Tenpyo Saka wouldn't dare barge in with her Second Order Stealth.

Yue Zhong pointed to a particular building and a long thing web shot out towards it. He then grabbed Tenpyo Saka by the waist, and started to pull himself towards the roof of the building.

"She smells good... and she's so soft!" Yue Zhong could detect a slight fragrance from Tenpyo Saka's body and his heart stirred slightly.

In his embrace, Tenpyo Saka's body tightened slightly, only relaxing after a while. She had always grown up in a largely females-only environment, and had not come in contact with many men. After the apocalypse, when she had evolved, her strength and her emotionless expression had caused men to steer clear. Yue Zhong's action caused her to be slightly uncomfortable.

With the spider silk, Yue Zhong got both of them up to the roof, before he pulled out a grappling hook from another box and fired a line over to another building. He then climbed the rope over to the next building.

Using these methods, Yue Zhong carefully got through the zombie horde, and from time to time, they would use their Second Order Stealth to get past some of the zombies by sticking close to the walls.

“The 7th Bunker!” Near an opening similar to a subway entrance, a huge sign hung above the building, revealing the position of the 7th Bunker in both English and Japanese.

“Ah!!”

“Help!!”

“Save me!!”

Yue Zhong and Tenpyo Saka had just gotten close to the 7th Bunker, when they discovered that the originally sealed entrance of the bunker was torn open, as a number of Devourers climbed out with live Japanese survivors in between their jaws. These Japanese survivors were struggling and crying pitifully.

There was a particular Japanese who struggled hard, and enraged the Devourer. It tore the Japanese survivor apart, as fresh blood and organs splattered all over the floor. The Devourer lowered its head and swallowed up the parts of the Japanese before climbing back into the 7th Bunker.

Soon after, another Japanese survivor was dragged out by that Devourer. After having pulled out dozens of survivors, the Devourers quickly disappeared into the night.

2 L4s then stood by the entrance and sealed up the entrance.

Numerous ordinary zombies all gathered around, and let out roars at the entrance.

When Yue Zhong saw all these, his heart turned cold: “What the fuck is going on?”

The evolution of the zombies had already gone beyond what Yue Zhong had expected. According to their past movements, as long as

the zombie could breach an area, they would swarm in to devour every living thing within. The 7th Bunker was obviously broken into, but the Japanese survivors inside were not annihilated. This caused him to be taken aback.

As Yue Zhong looked at the bunker, his eyes gleamed: “There should still be many Japanese survivors within.”

Tenpyo Saka came up to Yue Zhong and stared fixedly at the 7th Bunker and spoke: “There’re many Japanese survivors in there. Please lend them a hand.”

Yue Zhong replied coldly: “No way! I have no way of getting them through this zombie horde safely. Plus, I’m not obligated to.”

With his current strength, he could kill those 2 L4s, but no matter what, he could not rescue everyone from the sea of zombies waiting outside the 7th Bunker.

Tenpyo Saka’s gaze darkened when she heard it, and she bit her lower lip, not saying anything else.

Yue Zhong glanced at the 7th Bunker before he made his way towards the other bunkers.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

All of a sudden, a number of explosions occurred from the center of the zombie horde, and broke the peace of the night.

With a thought, Yue Zhong swiftly changed directions and made his way towards the source of commotion.

He came to the entrance of the 3rd Bunker, which by now had been destroyed by the tank-like L4s. In response, countless bullets and projectiles were being fired at those L4s, causing explosions to ring out one after another.

The L4s suffered numerous injuries, it was just that, at their evolution stage, their defenses were really at a sick level. Even after that bombardment, they were not dead, and their wounds

quickly coagulated, forming new scales.

Under the rain of fire, the L4s managed to breach the 3rd Bunker with difficulty.

At this time, 4 Devourers appeared, firing poisonous fog into the entrance of the 3rd Bunker.

The moment that poisonous fog entered the 3rd Bunker, miserable screams and wails rang out from within, and the heavy firepower seemingly stopped, before gunshots from within rang out.

The Devourers then entered the 3rd Bunker as though having done this countless of times, and the moment they charged in, machine gun sounds rattled out.

Hong! Hong!

Following some intense explosions, the charred corpses of the Devourers flew out from the 3rd Bunker. The entire entrance of the 3rd Bunker was also blasted and collapsed.

Yue Zhong saw this and frowned: “Damn, isn’t it impossible to go in like this?”

He then made a guess: “No, it can’t be. There has to be another entrance somewhere, they would not have blasted this so decisively otherwise.”

At this moment, a patch of area about 500m away suddenly opened up to reveal a huge hole. From within the hole, 5 helicopters flew out towards the distance.

“The higher-ups have escaped!” Yue Zhong watched the escaping helicopters and guessed what must have happened.

Regardless of country, any government official had special treatment. While there were brave ones, there were likewise cowardly ones, and those who feared death.

Not long after the helicopters ascended, a few H1s hidden among

the zombies opened their jaws and shot out a number of fireballs out towards the sky.

As the fireballs blast upwards, one helicopter was directly hit, and it exploded in a ball of flames, before plunging towards the ground. Another helicopter suffered a hit to the tail rotors, and it lost its balance, landing on a nearby roof. The rest of the helicopters managed to fly off into the night.

The moment the huge hole appeared, countless zombies and evolved zombies leaped into the hole. Immediately, gunfire and screams of despair sounded.

“Chance!” Yue Zhong watched the helicopter that landed on a building and his eyes flashed with a hint of delight, and he immediately made his way there.

The helicopter had landed on the 12th storey of the building but it did not blow up. Yue Zhong and Tenpyo Saka quickly arrived at the location.

Yue Zhong had just pushed the doors open to the 12th level when a bullet shot towards him.

He slapped it away casually, causing a sound of metal hitting metal to sound out.

Yue Zhong walked towards the middle of the room and saw a smartly-dressed military officer and 4 elite American soldiers. They were protecting a pair of women, one roughly 36 or 37 with silver hair and a voluptuous body, the other about 14 or 15, with a similar head of hair, and cute features.

Everyone shot Yue Zhong a look of alarm, someone who could slap a bullet away was basically Superman already. They had only seen such existences in the movies.

After the apocalypse, Yokosuka Base was filled with firearms and naturally, no one would use the items like the Novice Staff or Bat. After all, the might of those weapons could not compare to guns.

Because of that, there were little Enhancers, and even then, they weren't strong.

Yue Zhong stared at the officer and asked: "I'm Yue Zhong! Who are you people?"

Graham, the officer, stood up and replied with flair: "How do you do! I'm Colonel Graham of the 7th Fleet of the Yokosuka Base. I am pleased to make your acquaintance. This is my wife Juliana and my daughter Alice."

From the surface, it was hard to tell that such a charismatic leader could abandon his subordinates and run.

Yue Zhong's gaze was filled with killing intent as he asked: "Colonel! Very good! I want the location of the following: all the ammunition in the Yokosuka base, central computer for the air defense and missile control, as well as all the passwords to gain access into the various parts of the base. Give these to me and I can take your wife and daughter to leave here safely. Otherwise, I'll throw you all to the zombies."

Juliana and Alice looked at Yue Zhong with a look of fear.

Graham hesitated before making a decision to comply: "Good! I'm willing to give them to you."

Graham had already abandoned his comrades and was termed a traitor. He was obviously the coward-type that feared death. Under Yue Zhong's threat, he chose to co-operate, because he wanted to live on. Yokosuka Base also could not contact America, under such conditions, many of the military men in the base had deteriorated, and were no longer the elites of the American troops.



# Chapter 572: Army of Sea Mutant Beasts!

---

After making that decision, Graham readily provided all the information that Yue Zhong required. He was clear and detailed about the position of the armories, the weapons storage facilities, the defense systems, at the same time, he also updated Yue Zhong about the situation within the base.

At the onset of the apocalypse, a huge number of Japanese survivors had swarmed in from the Kanagawa Prefecture. Due to their arrival, the base was also filled with zombies as a result. A number of the American troops had been infected as well, turning into zombies. However, due to the guns and firearms within the base, after a short period of commotion, they barely managed to bring things under control.

Before the world had really turned and society had yet to crumble, humanity was still going strong. Most were still moral and not heartless, and the American troops helped to save a number of Japanese survivors.

Very soon, the American troops discovered that things weren't going well. More Japanese swarmed towards the base, and when they arrived, the entire base became like hell. There were zombies mixed everywhere. A huge number of American troops also got affected, leaving only 700 American troops surviving. As for these 700 soldiers, they were scattered throughout the base, and those who had really gathered together only numbered about 400.

The number of Japanese survivors that had approached Yokosuka Base for help was over a few hundred thousand. Without any mental preparation for what had come, the American troops had then decided to retreat further into the shelters and bunkers to avoid further casualties.

However, it was a move that would spell no way out, as once they entered the bunkers, the zombies surrounded all the exits.

At the same time, the zombies were evolving, but the survivors could only stay trapped within their safe haven, pushed to their limits.

In the epicentre of the hundred thousands of zombies, the survivors had no chance to expand. Within the various bunkers, there was enough food as well as water. There was no need to worry about food shortage at that time. But as they were trapped in their own refuge, with no hope for the future, many began to lose their minds.

The American troops were divided as a result. One half emphasized on maintenance of society and morals, as they protected the Japanese survivors. The other half had given into their inner demons, lording over the Japanese and humiliating them in various ways.

Graham's 3rd Bunker had belonged to the 2nd category, where the Americans had completely ruled over the Japanese. They subjected the Japanese survivors to various demented activities. Rape, murder, suicide became common and this caused unease and Graham and a few other officials. They had already begun to lose control over their soldiers.

This time, when the zombies managed to breach the bunker, Graham and the rest chose to escape. If they continued to remain there, they were afraid that the soldiers who were going insane might turn on them and their families.

There were 8 bunkers constructed within the Yokosuka Base and each bunker could accommodate up to 10,000 people. That was to say, even with the cases of suicide or torment to death, there were still at least over 70,000 survivors within the base.

The central command was designated in the 3rd Bunker, and it was in there where the anti-air defences and torpedoes were controlled from.

As Yue Zhong took in the information, he was filled with

excitement. With the 3rd Bunker in disarray, it meant that the self defence functions of the base was down.

As long as the zombies around the mothership and on it were disposed of, Yue Zhong could directly steer the mothership away, without fear of retaliation from the base.

Furthermore, there were armories and other military facilities not yet opened within the base. It was reasonable to expect that the resources within would be abundant, enough to stock a faction for war.

If they could transfer everything, Yue Zhong would really have struck it rich. He might already possess the 3 manufacturing lines in Guangxi, Vietnam and Hunan, but even with an entire year of production, they could not match the amount of resources that Yokosuka Base already had.

Yue Zhong got the information that he wanted and quickly came to a decision: “Good! Let’s go now!”

Tenpyo Saka could not help but speak up: “Yue Zhong, there are still many survivors inside, please lend a hand to rescue them!”

In the various bunkers, there were tens of thousands of Japanese survivors. Other than Yue Zhong, no one had the capability to save them currently.

Yue Zhong declined coolly: “No, I have no reason to risk myself.”

There were over 70,000 Japanese survivors in the 8 bunkers. If they were Chinese, Yue Zhong would rack his brains to rescue. However, they were Japanese. Even if he saved them out, he would not obtain their support nor become their leader.

Yue Zhong, born a Chinese, would be detested by the Japanese. Even when he captured Tenpyo Saka, she wasn’t willing to serve him. He could not be bothered to save a bunch of ungrateful people.

Tenpyo Saka gritted her teeth and said: “If you go and save them,

I'll be willing to serve you, and become your woman."

Yue Zhong turned to eye this beautiful woman, and his heart stirred. He pondered for a while but still shook his head: "It's impossible to rescue them safely from this sea of zombies. Unless we have a Sky Fortress."

The full Sky Fortress would be like an entire mechanized city in the skies, with powerful firearms and advanced weapons.

Only with such a mighty piece of equipment would Yue Zhong have the confidence to rescue the 70,000 survivors. There was no other way currently.

Tenpyo Saka became silent and her eyes downcast. She knew it was an unreasonable even for the strong. Even she herself would not throw herself into the mouths of the zombies on this suicide mission.

The walkie-talkie in Yue Zhong's pockets lit up and he immediately pressed the button to communicate with Bai Xiao Sheng, whose voice sounded urgent. "Boss!! There's trouble!! Many Mutant sea creatures are making their way to shore!!"

"Mutant sea creatures!! They're coming ashore?" Yue Zhong was jolted when he heard it, and he immediately told everyone present: "Come with me!"

The American troops followed Yue Zhong as they ran towards the roof. There were a few scattered zombies that they met along the way, but they were taken out quickly before they even had the chance to react.

As they reached the roof, Yue Zhong immediately howled once towards the skies. Not long after, a huge gust of wind blew, and a gigantic divine-looking Type 3 Greenie appeared, its wingspan over 80m.

Seeing the Type 3 Greenie, Graham and the rest of his subordinates were all dumbfounded as they stammered: "Oh

God!!”

Greenie at its current size was something vastly beyond the comprehension of the people present, as a single swipe from its wing could rip them into shreds.

Graham guessed that not even bullets could harm such a terrifying existence.

Greenie descended from the skies, and lowered its proud head affectionately for Yue Zhong to pat.

Graham and the rest were against shocked, and he asked carefully: “Mr. Yue Zhong, this is...?”

“It’s called Greenie, my pet. Come on, everyone get on. If we want to leave from here, we can only sit on it.” Yue Zhong leaped up agilely and threw down a rope.

This was in the centre of the horde, and while Yue Zhong and Tenpyo Saka could make use of the Second Order Stealth to escape, the rest didn’t have that ability.

With Yue Zhong’s help, Graham and the rest quickly got onto Greenie’s back and grabbed onto its feathers fearfully.

With a single flap, Greenie rose quickly, and strong gusts of wind blew all around, and it shot towards the skies like an arrow.

High up above, Yue Zhong could see the shore, and he saw that the situation at coastal line was as Bai Xiao Sheng’s report, countless Mutant Beasts were crawling out from the sea, forming a swarm of creatures making their way further inland.

There were many Type 2 and Type 3 Mutant Beasts as well that were as large as houses, and the scene was truly hair-raising.

Sharkie was already a Type 3 Mutant Beast and could be considered an Overlord, but amongst this army of beasts, it was just an ordinary creature.

Other than the Type 3 Mutant Beasts, Yue Zhong caught sight of 8 Type 4 Mutant Beasts. One of them was a gigantic turtle over 200m-long, and it had a long, dinosaur-like neck with a huge shell. Another was like a deformed fish, with a long slender neck and powerful fins for limbs. It was covered in scales. Another reached 40m-tall in height, and it had a pair of powerful claws. It was a carb with a green-color hue throughout its body. The 4th beast was a enormous Mutant Lobster over 150m long with spikes all over its body. The 5th was a huge transparent jellyfish with countless tentacles. The 6th was a huge water snake of over 200m in length, with a single black horn on its forehead. Its body was covered in thick scales. The 7th was a dragon-like whale beast, over 300m in length, 8 limbs that possessed sharp claws. The final was a strange beast that seemed a mix of a shark and some reptile, as it possessed a shark's head with powerful jaws, and fins as well as shark's tail. The rest of its powerful body was covered in thick shells, and it had powerful limbs with claws instead of fins.

Type 4 Mutant Beasts represented almost the top of the food chain, each and everyone one of them a terrifying existence. This time, having 8 appear, it was truly a devastating sight.

# Chapter 573: Appearance of the Entire Marine Biology!

---

All sorts of Mutant Sea Lions, Seals, Sea Centipedes, Sea Lice, Sandworms and various other Mutant Beasts with the 8 colossal Type 4 in the centre made their way towards shore.

“That’s terrifying!” Yue Zhong looked at them and his heart shook. Mutant Beasts possessed crazy armor, and their life force was strong. A Type 2 Mutant Beast was more than enough to decimate a company of soldiers that lacked heavy weapons.

By now, the Type 2 Mutant Beasts were barely above the rest of the ordinary Mutant Beasts, as they marched on in their swarms. There were over thousands of them. This was a number that was more than enough to annihilate an army of more than 100,000.

Greenie flapped its wings and caused a great gust of wind to rise, as it landed gracefully on the building Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest were on. At this time, the building was being surrounded by the Mutant Beasts.

Yue Zhong immediately leaped towards Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest.

Currently, the entire place looked right out of hell, there were the dismembered corpses of Mutant Beasts lying everywhere as Bai Xiao Sheng and his team fought off the Mutant Beasts with all their might.

Yue Zhong had just arrived by their side when 8 Mutant Beasts with bass heads, bodies full of scales, with fins, gills and claws opened their jaws and fired numerous bubbles. This pressurized bubbles blasted towards 2 Evolvers, sending them flying against a wall. The 2 unfortunate Evolvers spat out a mouthful of blood and it was evident that they had suffered grievous injuries.

Yue Zhong shot through his troops and waved his Crocodile

Tooth Saw Blade 8 times quickly, chopping those 8 beasts into 2.

“Boss, you’ve finally made it!”

Bai Xiao Sheng grinned at Yue Zhong and shot out from beside Miya Aiko, waving his Dark Magic Blade as he weaved in about the swarm of Mutant Beasts, slicing numerous beasts in 2.

Yue Zhong eyed the surroundings and noted that Fukui Honten, Kazuki Nobuhiko and the Miya sisters had not yet died. The rest of the fishing folk and survivors had lost about 7 or 8 of their people.

Had Yue Zhong been slightly later, other than Bai Xiao Sheng, the rest would likely have perished.

Yue Zhong ordered deeply: “Retreat to the roof!”

“Yes!” 6 Evolvers replied and swiftly brought their injured comrades in the direction of the roof.

All of a sudden, there was the sound of glass breaking. A huge snakehead broke through a window, and opened its jaws to snap at Yue Zhong.

“Level 65 Strange Beast: Type 2 Mutant Sea Snake. Ferocious and violent creature.”

Yue Zhong’s gaze turned cold and he activated his Devil Flame, causing a fireball to shoot towards the mouth of the Type 2 Mutant Sea Snake.

With a huge explosion, the head of the Mutant Sea Snake was instantly blasted into pieces. Bits and pieces of brain and flesh rained from the skies, at the same time a skill book burst out.

Yue Zhong picked up the dropped skill book and quickly shot back. Although the entire body of the Type 2 Mutant Sea Snake was a treasure, he could not spare the time to slowly take it apart.

Kuang lang, kuang lang.

Following the sounds of glass breaking, a number of strange beasts with the heads, scales and fins of fish but standing upright



on their legs that had evolved, climbed in from the windows.

“Level 23 Strange Beasts: Low-intelligence warriors of the sea. Possess a constitution 5 times that of normal humans. Their natures are bloodthirsty and violent.”

Yue Zhong looked at the sea warriors and a look of shock flashed past his eyes: “Marine Clan!! Marine Clan lifeforms. Shit, even the Mutant Beasts have evolved to an intelligent stage? If they continued like this, will humans even have a chance?!”

Since the world changed, there were zombies and Mutant Beasts everywhere, and humanity was slowly forced to seek refuge in various corners. They could hold their own mainly because of the treasures and legacies left behind before the apocalypse, at the same time, the zombies and Mutant Beasts were driven by their bestial instincts, rather than intelligence.

The moment zombies and Mutant Beasts developed intelligence, then with their advantage in numbers and constitution, humanity would most likely lose out.

Especially for those of the sea, earth had twice as much water as land. Furthermore, there were over 100 more times the diversity of life. Should the terrifying Type 5 Overlords of the sea get on land, only nuclear and guided missiles might have the possibility of destroying them. Beyond those, all tanks and armored vehicles were likely to be toyed around with.

A fierce glint appeared in the beady eyes of those sea warriors as they pounced towards Yue Zhong.

“Trash! Fucking beasts, you won’t stand a chance!” Yue Zhong shot towards them and with a single blade beam, he took out 6 sea warriors instantly.

Having disposed of them, Yue Zhong retreated back towards the roof.

Kuang lang, kuang lang. The sounds of glass shattering travelled

throughout the building.

One sea warrior managed to charge towards a fisherman, and its claws pierce his back, before it ripped him violently. A huge chunk of flesh was torn from the fisherman's back and fresh blood splattered.

“Ah!! Save me!! Save me!!” The Japanese fisherman screamed out in agony. He had just shouted twice when another sea warrior had jumped in front of him and chomped down on his throat.

3 others surrounded the poor fisherman and used their sharp claws to rip his body apart.

Seeing this bloody scene, the rest of the fishing folk felt their hearts turn cold and they quickly rushed towards the roof.

Yue Zhong swiftly rushed back with Bai Xiao Sheng as they cleared the various sea warriors from the back.

With the protection of the 2 experts, the rest managed to climb onto Greenie's back.

Greenie flapped its mighty wings and soared to the skies amidst roaring winds.

In the sky, Yue Zhong looked down and saw the Mutant Sea Warriors swarming all over the building like ants. Compared to those numbers, the ones that they had just killed seemed like a single hair of 9 oxens.

While these Mutant Sea Warriors did not possess similar combat strength compared to the Mutant Beasts, their numbers were simply uncountable. From the skies, it just seemed like the entire place had been overrun by those Sea Warriors.

They were strange in appearance, some had swordfish heads, others had octopus heads. Their bodies were scales, some had shark heads and their bodies were all burly.

The numerous sea warriors and the ferocious Mutant Beasts did

not get in each other way, nor did they engage in any conflict. This caused Yue Zhong's heart to sink.

He patted Greenie lightly, and it began to fly towards the mothership.

Since the defences of the base had been resolved, Yue Zhong planned to obtain the mothership and leave the place quickly. The zombies and Mutant Beasts horde wasn't something their small party could handle at this point, after all, their numbers were really too huge.

Greenie landed on the mothership and the party leaped down from its back.

On the deck, the wandering zombies began to shuffle towards Yue Zhong and his party.

Seeing the state of the bodies of those American troops, the Miya sisters as well as Alice felt fearful and backed a few steps towards Yue Zhong.

In this world, there were people who constantly fought on the frontlines against zombies, while others hid behind for safety. The Miya sisters had survived like that for so long, and hence, their price was like that of goods, traded around as gifts.

Yue Zhong eyed the incoming zombies and ordered Tenpyo Saka: "Eliminate them!"

She was after all a Demon-level existence within Takama-gahara, her battle strength high. In a flash, she shot towards the zombies and decapitated all of them.

In 20 seconds, all the zombies had been wiped out by her.

After dealing with that minor disturbance, Yue Zhong and his party continued further into the mothership.

Yue Zhong turned on his flashlight and under the guidance of Graham, they began to walk towards the control room.

Along the way, many zombies would appear and try to attack them, however, before they got too close, Yue Zhong had taken them out easily. They managed to proceed smoothly into the control room of the mothership.

The 8 Evolvers that had followed Yue Zhong immediately stepped forwards to get accustomed to the controls. They had the Vehicle Operational Specialization and with that, even without any prior experience in controlling, they soon caused the mothership to move.

One of them came up to Yue Zhong and spoke excitedly: “Leader, we have already gained control of the mothership, we’re awaiting your next orders.”

Mothership!! It was something that many Chinese longed for. It was the pinnacle of power on the seas, without it, a country was of no threat.

Since the beginning of the apocalypse, China only owned one, and the one they had could not compare to the current U.S Navy’s.

Yue Zhong frowned slightly, looking at the distance, before saying: “Go, bring the mothership towards Shizuoka Prefecture.”

# Chapter 574: Escape the Base!

---

The Evolver immediately replied: “Roger! Leader!”

The 8 Evolvers immediately got into action, and they begun to operate the controls as though they had been part of the crew for years. Under their deft control, the ship began to light up, and following the sounds of whirring, the huge carrier left its port and started to move.

Yue Zhong looked at Tenpyo Saka: “Tenpyo Saka, I’ll leave the zombies on the ship to you.”

She was after all an assassin that walked in the dark, and with the Night Vision ability as well, she was more than enough to handle the zombies within the mothership.

She glanced at Yue Zhong before turning around to go hunt down the zombies.

A single aircraft carrier mothership was the product of human ingenuity prior to the apocalypse, and its size was even larger than most Type 4 Mutant Beasts. Its movements caused waves to ripple out.

Many of the sea warriors and Mutant Beasts were attracted by the movement and begun to swim over.

The powerful defense systems of the mothership were activated and began firing at the surrounding Mutant Beasts and sea warriors. The resulting blasts tore the enemies apart. Blood dyed the sea red, and the corpses of numerous Mutant Beasts and sea warriors floated on the water.

Yue Zhong stood on the deck and brought out a single 12.7mm heavy machine gun, and begun to fire it at the sea warriors that survived.

On the other side, Sharkie drew close, and opened its jaws to suck in all the sea warriors. Its sharp jaws then closed tight, tearing the

sea warriors into bits and their blood splattered everywhere. The speed at which Sharkie was slaughtering the sea warriors was even faster than Yue Zhong.

All of a sudden, a large tentacle rose up from the sea, and made to grab at Yue Zhong.

His face fell slightly as he dodged to the side, pulling out his Black Tooth Blade as he slashed out. The tentacle was sliced in two, and the owner retracted the remainder of its tentacle in pain.

As the water churned, a huge Type 3 Mutant Octopus of over a 100m in length appeared, and it stretched out all its tentacles to grab at Sharkie.

A monstrous Type 3 Sea Snake swam over hurriedly, accompanied by a Type 3 Mutant Swordfish with a sharp spike of 10m as they prepared to attack Sharkie.

The spike of the Type 3 Mutant Swordfish was really sharp, if Sharkie was really pierced by it, even if it escaped death, it would be at the very least heavily injured.

From the skies, Greenie shot down and grabbed at the Type 3 Mutant Sea Snake, and brought it out of the water.

The Green Eagles were natural fishing birds, and they perfectly countered snakes as well. Their speed was fast, and in a single swoop, Greenie easily pierced the body of the similar-level Mutant Sea Snake.

With a single move, Greenie had disposed of one enemy. The Type 3 Mutant Swordfish rammed into Sharkie, its sharp spike piercing the defensive layer of Sharkie, injuring it greatly.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a chill as he immediately conjured a Devil Flame Spear expending 20 points of Spirit, and fired it at the Type 3 Mutant Swordfish.

The Devil Flame entered the water and caused steam to billow upwards, however, by the time it reached the body of the Mutant

Swordfish, it had lost much of its power, not injuring it in the slightest.

The Devil Flame was terrifying on land, even able to cook an L4 that a rocket could not possibly damage. However, the moment it met water, it was basically useless.

In truth, most abilities were less effective in the water. Only body constitutions would not be affected.

The Type 4 Mutant Swordfish shot Yue Zhong a cold glare, and twisted its body, causing the sharp spike to gouge a huge wound out of Sharkie, fresh blood dyeing the sea red.

Sharkie bore its pain and reached out with one of its evolved claws to tear the tentacles restricting it, before it turned around to chomp down on the body of the Type 3 Mutant Swordfish. Its violent attack also caused the Type 3 Mutant Swordfish to suffer greatly.

The mothership continued to traverse forward, as the Mutant Beasts and sea warriors continued to pursue. The moment they caught up, the swarm would become a huge nightmare for Yue Zhong and his party.

Sharkie and the Type 3 Mutant Swordfish continued to engage each other, tearing and ripping into each other.

Right at this time, Greenie suddenly swooped down again, and pecked once violently at the head of the Mutant Swordfish, causing a huge gaping hole. The Type 3 Mutant Swordfish was killed instantly.

Sharkie swam forwards and bit down on the head of the dead Type 3 Mutant Swordfish ferociously, gobbling up the brain together with the nuclei.

After Sharkie absorbed the nuclei and brain into its body, it quickly swam for the depths of the sea. Many Type 2 Mutant Beasts swam over, attracted by the scent of fresh blood.

The flesh and blood as well as the nuclei of Type 3 Mutant Beasts were enticing to most ordinary and Type 2 Mutant Beasts. Since Sharkie was heavily injured, many of these beasts were naturally unwilling to let go of such a big piece of meat.

With Sharkie leaving, it naturally helped divert the attention of a huge number of the Mutant Beasts, decreasing the pressure on the human party.

Yue Zhong raised his 12.7mm machine gun and continued to fire it at the heads of the sea warriors. His body continued to flash about on the deck of the mothership, causing any member of the sea warriors that got too close to be killed immediately.

After 20 minutes, the sea warriors were left behind by the speed of the mothership.

The sea warriors were 5 times stronger than most ordinary humans. In a short span of time, it was possible for them to burst with speed exceeding that of the mothership. However, it was a short acceleration. Over time, it was impossible for them to maintain that speed. After all, they were biological lifeforms, and not machines.

After being on the sea for 30 minutes, there was a strange movement amongst the pursuing beasts. The Type 3 and Type 2 Mutant Beasts began to attack the weaker Mutant Beasts, killing many of them.

Numerous weaker life forms were consumed by the larger ones, while others escaped, and in a short span of time, the entire Mutant Beast army seemed to fall apart.

“We’re safe for now!” Yue Zhong saw the sudden collapse of the Mutant Beast army and he heaved a sigh of relief.

In the seas, the law of the jungle always ruled, the strong preyed on the weak, and they would often kill each other. This time, the organization of such forces was definitely due to some beast



possessing the strength.

However, even absolute strength would have a limit, and in this case, it was the radius at which the control was present. It seemed that the moment those Mutant Beasts got out of range, they immediately fell apart.

Watching the fall of the Mutant Beast horde, everyone on the mothership heaved a sigh of relief.

The pressure from those Mutant Beasts and sea warriors had been too exhausting, not even the self-defence systems on the mothership could fully keep them at bay.

Furthermore, while the might of the weapons were terrifying, the expenditure of ammo was likewise as shocking. Yue Zhong had not yet obtained the resources from the base itself.

He directly asked an Evolver: “Xian Yu Ming! How many people is needed to run this mothership?”

Xian Yu Ming was one of Chinese that had followed Yue Zhong and was already a Level 44 Strength-based Evolver. He was also one of the pilots of the Thunder Fighters, possessing the Vehicle Manoeuvre Specialization ability, and he was the captain of the small elite group of the 8 Evolvers that had come on this operation.

Xian Yu Ming thought for a while before replying: “4. It will require 4 to navigate it and control the defence systems.”

This was mainly thanks to the advanced development of the US, allowing for much of the ship to be automated. Due to this, the ship just required 4 well-versed crew members.

Yue Zhong gazed at them and said: “Good! I need just 3 of you to go command it. Who amongst you are willing to follow me to go get the flagship of the 7th fleet?”

“Leader!! I’m willing!!”

“Leader! I’m willing!! Chen Yi Fei is injured, let him rest. I’ll

follow you!!”

Hearing his order, the subordinates clamoured with excitement. They had already obtained the awe-inspiring mothership, if they could even obtain the 7th fleet’s flagship, then it would be an honourable matter.

Together with the mothership, the flagship was also a terrifying war-machine. With these 2, they would be near invincible in the waters of China. As long as they didn’t encounter any Type 4 or Type 5 Mutant Beasts, they were practically invincible.

Xian Yu Ming shot them a glare and barked: “Pipe down!”

The moment he opened his mouth, the rest kept quiet and looked at him in anticipation. Xian Yu Ming’s position in the army was high, and since Yue Zhong enforced military rule, the lower ranked soldiers adhered vehemently to authority.

Xian Yu Ming then issued the order: “Zhao Tian Gang, Qiao Xing, Li Shu. The 3 of you shall accompany Leader.”

Although Xian Yu Ming himself wanted very badly to go, he knows that the mothership was even more important to Yue Zhong. As the captain of this small unit, he had to stay on board to guard and command the ship.

# Chapter 575: Merpeople!

---

The 3 of them cheered when they were selected as they went to get on Greenie's back.

The rest of them who weren't selected had envious expressions as they watched Greenie fly off with Yue Zhong and his team.

Greenie's speed could exceed the sound barrier, reaching Mach 1.2 which was even quicker than the Type 3 Lightning. Zhao Tian Gang and the rest were all Evolvers, but Greenie held back, in order not to injure them. Even so, it was still fast, and they reached the skies above Yokosuka Base in a matter of minutes.

Yue Zhong looked down from his position, and saw the zombies and Mutant Beasts already engaged in an all out slaughter.

Ordinary zombies were not a match for the Mutant Beasts and sea warriors. They were torn and ripped into pieces when they clashed, and the zombies were at a disadvantage.

The 8 Type 4 behemoths were like mystical beasts right out of myths and legends, squashing large number of zombies in their path. With every casual step, they would stomp at least a few dozens of zombies. It was even more gruesome than the Godzilla of Japanese film fame.

Yue Zhong looked at the 8 monstrous Type 4 Mutant Beasts and felt a headache. They had incredibly tough flesh and immense strength, coupled with gigantic bodies. This made their bodies practically impervious to even rockets.

If there were a barrage of rockets and missiles launched at the same time, then there was a possibility of blasting them to oblivion. However, even Type 2 Mutant Beasts had their own innate abilities, it would be wishful thinking to hope that the Type 4 Mutants Beasts would lack any, or not employ their abilities. If they did use their abilities, Yue Zhong guessed that not even

rockets could damage them.

If there were any weak points of the Type 4 Mutant Beasts, it would be that their speed wasn't fast enough. Compared to the Flame Bird that had a speed of Mach 2, the speed of these 8 Type 4 Mutant Beasts was pathetic. Even Yue Zhong's movement was many times faster.

After all, they belonged to the sea. On land, their speed would suffer.

As the countless Mutant Beasts and sea warriors slaughtered the zombies, a number of Evolved S-Types suddenly launched an assault.

One tank-like L4 smashed out with a powerful fist, shattering the skull of a Type 2 Mutant Beast. The might of an L4 was not to be taken lightly, as it was comparable to the peak of Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

The speed of the S4s also exceeded that of a Type 2 Lightning. They became fast shadows that weaved in and out of the battlefield, slashing the throats of the sea warriors.

In the chaos, there were still the Devourers, whose strength far surpassed the S4s, and their speed surpassing the L4s. They could easily crush a sea warrior in their jaws, dismembering the bodies with their claws.

With 6 L4s leading the charge, countless sea warriors and weaker Mutant Beasts were ripped apart. 7 to 8 huge Type 2 Mutant Beasts had their skulls utterly crushed by the L4s. As the sea warriors and Mutant Beasts were taken out, the zombie horde surged forwards again, consuming all that was on the ground.

Swallowing the meat of those sea warriors and Mutant Beasts, many ordinary zombies began to evolve, their bones strengthening, their flesh hardening. Some even evolved to possessing claws and powerful thighs and legs.

On the other side, the Mutant Beasts were also evolving, having consumed such a large number of zombies. The virus within the zombies was also something vital to their evolution. However, the majority that evolved were low-level beasts. The higher level ones needed a larger volume to evolve.

As Yue Zhong watched both sides battle it out, he thought: “No matter the outcome of this battle, the victor would gain an unshakeable position here. Seems like Japan is in trouble.”

The victor of this all-out clash would reap the corpses and flesh of the opponent. Consuming those would grant the victor more opportunities to evolve. Should there be over a thousand L4s evolved within the Kanagawa Prefecture, it was enough to sweep the entire Japan region.

Even someone as strong as Yue Zhong could only defeat a dozen or so L4s, facing a hundred at one time would force him to retreat. He would have to find other means, there was no way he could handle a frontal assault.

“Ah! What is that? Mermaid?” Yue Zhong looked down, and suddenly saw something strange.

Within the group of sea warriors, there was another group of fish-heads that were over 8m long, and their bodies full of rippling muscles, there was a group of top half-human, bottom half-fishes, the males were handsome, the females exceptionally beautiful. At their feet, or where there feet would be, there were waves flowing, making it seem as though these mermaids were riding the waves.

“Level 73 Strange Beast: Killer Whale Fighters. Powerful warriors of the Sea Clan.”

“Mermen. Biological lifeforms with high intelligence.”

“What’s going on? Could they really be similar to us humans, with intelligence?” Yue Zhong’s mood sunk further.

After the world had changed, Yue Zhong had used his Eyes of

Perception to get information even on Type 5 Mutant Beasts. The only times when he could not get the levels were on ordinary beasts that did not mutate or other humans. The information on these mermaids and mermen were actually withheld from Yue Zhong's Eyes of Perception, and he was strongly suspicious.

At the same time, a huge sense of pressure weighed down on Yue Zhong. The number of humans were decreasing since the apocalypse, after all, they had only been able to survive so far in the midst of zombies and Mutant Beasts was because of their advantage in intelligence. If a high-intelligence being evolved among the zombies or Mutant Beasts, then they would definitely pose a greater danger to humanity. Not to mention an entire race of intelligent beings.

It was unclear how the merpeople could control the masses of sea warriors on top of the Mutant Beasts. This strength caused one to be fearful.

Yue Zhong was a top-level expert that could control 3 Type 3 Mutant Beasts, but the horde that was attacking the Yokosuka Base had over hundreds of them, and 8 of those seemingly invincible Type 4 Mutant Beasts. Compared to them, Yue Zhong's might was pitifully weak.

Yue Zhong pointed to one Type 3 Mutant Sea Snake in the battlefield and said: "Go kill that fellow."

As Greenie flapped its wings, the wind gathered around it, before it shot towards the Type 3 Sea Snake like a sharp sword. Its sharp claws pierced the head of the Type 3 Sea Snake and grabbed it as it flew into the sky.

With the additional weight of over a few tonnes, Greenie's speed slowed down substantially. However, it was still more than enough as by the time the low level Mutant Beasts around reacted, Greenie was gone.

Greenie dragged the huge Sea Snake before it landed on a tall

building.

Yue Zhong then swiftly removed the brain, blood essence and blood, throwing the nuclei to Greenie to swallow. He then leaped back onto its back and they continued to search for opportunities to hunt other Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

The Type 3 Mutant Beasts were not easy to hunt and kill, and as Yue Zhong commanded Greenie to soar above the battlefield, they would usually look for the stranded Type 3 Mutant Sea Snakes. They were Greenie's natural prey, and was easier to handle as compared to others.

Under Yue Zhong's lead, Greenie flew about and they managed to hunt down another 2 more Type 3 Mutant Sea Snakes.

The Type 3 Mutant Beasts were still a high-ranking beast among the horde, and after Greenie had killed 3, the rest of the Type 3 Mutant Sea Snakes quickly gathered towards the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake.

The Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake chased Greenie, enraged, as it dragged that body of over 200m with it.

As it moved, the Mutant Beasts, zombies and even abandoned vehicles that were in its path was entirely obliterated by its humongous body. The smaller Mutant Beasts quickly got out of its way, making a path for it.

"Towards there!" Yue Zhong saw the enraged Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, and pointed to a direction of the zombie horde.

Greenie flapped its wings and flew towards the where Yue Zhong had directed.

Led by Greenie, the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake slithered all the way towards the huge zombie army.

6 L4s immediately charged up to the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake when they saw it approach, and punched out viciously.

This time, the powerful fists that could destroy a Type 2 Mutant Beast's head in a blow was ineffective, as the scales of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake retracted slightly, before it struck out with its body, and the L4s to be knocked back.

The blows of the L4s still caused the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake to feel some pain, and it stared at one L4, opening its huge jaws to swallow it.

The moment the L4 was gobbled up, dozens of S4s charged up the body of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake like ants, and they used their incredibly sharp claws to tear off the scales on the Sea Snake.

Although the S4s did not have the strength of the L4s, nor the defences, they had extremely sharp claws for weapons, which could pierce even the tough scales of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake.



# Chapter 576: Corpse Amaterasu!

---

The S3s and S2s were like ants that crawled all over the massive body of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake. They used their claws and jaws to tear into the meat of the behemoth.

Every one of these evolved zombies could cause a little harm to the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, if the damage was accumulated over time, then even an invincible being like it would succumb to its injuries and die.

Facing the combined assault of the evolved zombies, the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake opened its huge mouth to release large amounts of poisonous gas.

The huge poison cloud surrounded the zombies, which continued to climb all around the huge Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake and bite it. Many of them inhaled the gas and some changes began to happen, as they grew some lesions on their backs.

The innate ability of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake was poison, and the poison it spat out was strong enough to even poison other Type 4 Mutant Beasts to death. If Greenie were to come in contact with just a little, it will definitely die of poison and drop out of the sky. However, the poison that this Type 4 Mutant Snake released was not the dissolving type, hence it was ineffective against the zombies that were basically carrying a deadly virus on themselves as well.

When the wind blew, the poisonous gas was dissipated outwards, and with the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake in the centre, every single Mutant Beast within a 1km radius crumpled to the ground, their faces turning black.

Within that radius, one Type 3 Mutant Lobster and Type 3 Mutant Red-back Crab died instantly. Many of these Mutant Beasts had powerful resistance towards poison and viruses, but the poison from the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake was on a whole different level.

When the zombies consumed the innate ability of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, they begun to ravage the body of the behemoth with renewed vigor.

In its pain, the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake thrashed about, hoping to shake the little critters off. With every twist of its massive body, the zombies would be sent flying, and at the same time, the zombies that were around were crushed beneath.

Even without its innate ability, the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake possessed a terrifying strength. Its huge body contained a strength that not even Evolvers were capable of withstanding.

As the Type 4 Mutant Snake continued to swing about, most of the zombies were sent flying, only those S4s continued to grab on tightly with their claws embedded in the body of the Sea Snake.

The S4s were like ants to the gargantuan Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, and it was able to ignore the remaining S4s on its body.

Instead, it turned its attention towards a L4 and opened its huge jaws to swallow it. When it was done, it opened its jaws again to suck in, and a powerful suction caused many of the evolved zombies around to be sucked into its jaws.

As it continued to suck in the hundreds of smaller evolved zombies like a vacuum cleaner, only the L4s, L3s and Devourers were able to withstand. The rest were all sucked into its body.

When the Mutant Sea Snake was done sucking in hundreds of evolved zombies, it then closed its jaws and coiled its body, causing the zombies within its body to be crushed into bits and pieces.

Seeing that, Yue Zhong immediately felt his heart turn cold and he abandoned the idea of fighting his way out from within if he was ever caught. The moment the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake twisted its body, he would definitely be crushed to death.

A number of the S4s which were still on the body of the Mutant Sea Snake quickly climbed along its body. The moment they

moved, the sensitive Mutant Sea Snake discovered them and once again, it began its violent thrashing in a bid to shake them off.

Right at this time, a white line shot out from within the zombie horde, piercing a hole directly in the body of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake.

The Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake had not been injured too greatly by the surrounding zombies earlier, but this single blow dealt a huge blow to it.

A single young man stepped out from the horde, his hair long and flowing down his shoulders. He wore a kimono, and his looks were extremely handsome. His muscles were ripped and lean, but his eyes were entirely blood-red, and he was covered in a layer of bone armor.

“Corpse, a different evolution of the virus infection. Possesses terrifying strength and intelligence that do not lose out to humans. A being with high-intelligence.”

Yue Zhong’s Eyes of Perception kicked in when he glanced at that corpse, and the notification shocked him.

Looking at that corpse, his heart was filled with killing intent: “Damn it, there’s such a freak. I need to eliminate it, right here! This sort of life form cannot be allowed to live on this earth!”

After the world had changed, there was less than 1 in 10 humans who survived, and yet the zombies population was at least a hundred times of that. Any single large city would be occupied by at least a million zombies now. Yue Zhong had been able to obtain victory in the past was because the zombies were stupid. Even the Z-types could not compare to humans in terms of intelligence.

However, the fact that there was a evolved being that had high intelligence, this was definitely the nightmare for humanity. Even if it was just one smart high school student that could control all the zombies, he or she would be able to wipe out all the factions on

earth.

As of now, the Kingdom of God was the strongest faction that Yue Zhong had come across, but he knew that if they were surrounded by a billion zombies, they would also collapse. Nuclear bombs might not necessarily annihilate a billion zombies.

The corpse was like an emperor that had control of the world, as it pointed to the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, and 4 sharp bone spikes came out from its body to pierce the body of the Type 4 Mutant Snake. The spikes that begun to drill furiously, causing 4 huge gaping holes as copious amount of the precious Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake's blood flowed out.

The corpse then begun to suck, absorbing the blood of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake into its body.

Having been injured, the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake became even more violent, as it twisted towards the corpse in a frenzy.

The blood-red eyes of the corpse flashed with scorn. The bone spikes beneath its feet sent it retreating backward speedily, its speed faster than the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake by over 2 times.

As the corpse retreated, it continued to use huge bone spikes to pierce the body of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, aggravating its injuries, and continued to absorb its blood.

The Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake opened its huge mouth to spit out a large amount of poisonous gas towards the corpse, enveloping the entire area.

The corpse did not panic, instead, it shot out a huge bone towards the brain of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, intending to pierce its brain.

Peng! At this moment, as the corpse was about to seize victory, a powerful sniper bullet shot towards the heart of the corpse.

At that instant, the corpse twisted its body slightly, and the bullet blasted its left shoulder, causing the bone armor to shatter into

pieces. Its figure was also sent staggering a few steps backwards due to the force of the bullet.

As the corpse was hit, another powerful spear made of flames shot past it, piercing the brain of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, exploding and burning the brains of the behemoth into ashes.

Having lost its scales that could withstand even water, fire and bullets, the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake was no longer invincible and Yue Zhong took the opportunity to steal the kill.

“Congratulations on achieving Level 80, you’ve gained 2 attribute points to be allocated.”

“Congratulations on achieving Level 80, you’ve gained 1 skill point.”

After killing the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake sneakily, the notifications rang out in his mind.

At the same time, a blue box appeared beside the corpse of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake.

When he caught sight of the blue box, Yue Zhong’s expression almost turned green, and he activated his Bone Encompassing Armor and leaped down from the height of over 200m.

He reached out towards the ground, and shot a bone spike into the ground, before pulling himself towards the corpse quickly.

The corpse that was forced to stagger backward by Yue Zhong had a look of fury in its eyes, as it waved its hands, 4 of the bone spikes that could pierce even the defences of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake shot towards Yue Zhong.

Facing those sharp spikes, Yue Zhong did not dare dally. He activated his Shadow Steps, pushing his Agility to the limits, before he pulled out his Black Tooth Blade to hack at the incoming spikes. He then made use of the recoil to send himself towards the ground.

He immediately grabbed the blue box, depositing it into his storage ring, and instantly activated his Second Order Stealth skill, routing around the corpse of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake to hide himself.

The fact that the corpse could hunt the Type 4 Mutant Beasts, it was because it could counter the innate ability of the Type 4 Mutant Beasts, from this, it was apparent how powerful this corpse was.

The corpse glanced around, laughing maniacally in Japanese: “Distorting Perception, interesting! Human, in front of you is the great Amaterasu that will rule the world! In front of a god, you are all ants. There’s only death even if you try to run!”

# Chapter 577: War between Zombie Horde and Sea Clan!

---

The corpse that referred to itself as Amaterasu waved its hand, and a dark red blood liquid came out of its body, as it swept across the general area towards Yue Zhong.

An overwhelming sense of danger arose in Yue Zhong's heart, and he immediately conjured a dragon with his Devil Flame and fired it at the incoming blood river.

When the Devil Flame dragon came in contact with the blood river, there was a sizzling sound as the blood was burnt upon contact, turning into a bloody fog that dispersed into the sky.

The corpse saw its own blood river being incinerated by Yue Zhong's Devil Flame and its eyes flashed with unhappiness: "A fire user! Damn it!"

The dark blood river was a special skill that amounted from the corpse's absorption of blood from living things. Under its control, the river could change size and shape, and the moment it congealed, it could even pierce the scales of a Type 4 Mutant Beast. It was the own blood essence of the corpse as well, the moment it was destroyed, the corpse would suffer a backlash, and become weak.

The corpse had consumed an indeterminate amount of blood from numerous people and Mutant Beasts, and the blood river was as equally as dominating as it was. However, it happened to be countered by Yue Zhong's Devil Flame.

As the Devil Flame died down, and the smelly bloody fog had lifted, Yue Zhong had disappeared from his position.

Amaterasu looked at where Yue Zhong had disappeared from and laughed out loud: "Have you escaped? Humans are indeed crafty. The moment you think you're no longer my opponent, you ran!"

What a trash! From today onwards, the earth will belong to me, Amaterasu! Hahaha!!”

The grating laughter rang out through the night sky.

Amaterasu then turned to look at the corpse of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake and walked over. “After swallowing this Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, my strength will evolve once more. By then, there will be no one who’s my match.”

To zombies and corpses, the flesh and blood of a Type 4 Mutant Beast was a potent ingredient for evolution. The flesh of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake held great allure over zombies, and Amaterasu was no different.

It was just walking towards the body of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake when all of a sudden, a lightning bolt struck down on it, causing its body to be charred black, its hair to be singed, giving off a burnt smell.

From afar, a huge Type 4 Sea Jellyfish was leading a swarm of jellyfish towards the direction of Amaterasu. Their innate ability was electricity, and they caused a number of lightning bolts to assault Amaterasu.

The Type 4 Sea Jellyfish led the attacks by casting huge and powerful lightning strikes towards Amaterasu, electrocuting it. While Amaterasu was impervious to poison, it had no way of defending against the lightning attacks fully.

Receiving that continuous onslaught of electricity, Amaterasu began to launch its own counterattack, as sharp bone spikes as well as a layer of blood congealed to form a mighty shield. The shield absorbed the incoming lightning attacks, causing part of the wall to sizzle and turn into a bloody mist.

The innate ability of the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish was frightening, as it continued to drift forwards while casting its ability, before it came in front of the blood shield and smacked down on it



viciously. The blood shield instantly disintegrated.

The shield of blood had collapsed into nothing, but by then, the corpse Amaterasu had disappeared from behind. As a being with high-intelligence, survival was always the first priority. If it were zombies, even if the enemy was way out of their league, they would just continue to fight until they themselves were exterminated. As for the corpse, the different line of evolution had caused them to develop thinking and to possess feelings and intelligence equal to that of humans.

Amaterasu was extremely clear that it would not be easy to defeat the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish, hence, it decided to escape in another direction.

Amaterasu could defeat the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake was because it was unafraid of the Sea Snake's innate ability. If it were other experts, they might have long been poisoned to death. It was only because the corpse had evolved from the virus strain that made it invulnerable to the poison.

However, facing the group of Sea Jellyfish that were electrical in nature, Amaterasu had no natural defence, and if things continued on, it would suffer an electrocuting end.

After chasing the corpse Amaterasu away, the Type 4 Mutant Sea Jellyfish reached out with its countless tentacles, bringing the evolved zombies around it into its mouth, and it bit through them, grinding their bodies down.

After swallowing a large number of zombies, the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish then reached out to flip the corpse of the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake, piercing its head to obtain the nucleus.

The Type 4 Sea Jellyfish was still probing the forehead of the dead Sea Snake when Yue Zhong suddenly burst out from the forehead, covered in snake blood. He waved his hands and fired a Devil Flame tornado towards the head of the Jellyfish.

The Sea Jellyfish wasn't too slow in its response as well, quickly raising numerous tentacles to defend itself.

When the Devil Flame tornado blasted onto the tentacles, a number of the tentacles which consisted mostly of water instantly turned into ash. In just a few breaths, the Sea Jellyfish was able to regenerate out another few tentacles. Type 4 Mutant Beasts possessed terrifying regenerative abilities, and this was one of their advantages.

Yue Zhong was not so overconfident to think that he could take care of the Jellyfish that easily. After firing that flame ball, he immediately dashed behind a building and activated his Second Order Stealth.

When the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish saw the person that injured it had disappeared, it went into a rage, and released multiple electrical charges outwards. The rampage caused many zombies to be instantly electrocuted to death, and the region where it was had turned into a nightmare of electricity. Over thousands of zombies were instantly wiped out.

"Damn it! These Overlords are sure hard to deal with." Amaterasu watched as the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish continued to consume the evolved zombies around it, and it quickly gave an order to the evolved zombies to retreat. To Amaterasu, the death of the countless ordinary zombies would not cause it much ache, but any evolved zombie of Type 2 and above were elite soldiers, and had consumed a large number of people and Mutant Beasts to get to where they were. They were its cards to use in conquering the world.

A large number of evolved zombies began to retreat, while ordinary zombies surged forwards, swallowed up by those Mutant Sea Jellyfishes.

The corpse Amaterasu might be wild and crazy, but its intelligence wasn't low, as he thought of the crux of the problem:

“The Sea Clan! Those merpeople are the cause of this. As long as I wipe them out, these Mutant Beasts would naturally collapse!”

Many of the Mutant Beasts followed the law of the jungle, where the strong preyed on the weak. Larger fishes consumed the smaller ones, while the smaller ones consumed prawns and the smaller life forms. It was a cruel world. If it wasn't for the strange power that held control over them, then they couldn't possibly co-exist or even gather together for this joint assault. If the power controlling them was done in, then these beasts would naturally fall.

The moment Amaterasu came to this conclusion, it closed its eyes and started to sense for the existences of the Sea Clan. It had a mystical ability, in that within a 50 km radius, it could get information from the zombies. Even for ordinary zombies that had no eyesight, it could make use of their undamaged eyes to look on the battlefield. Of course, it was an ability that required all of its concentration. Furthermore, beyond the radius, it could only make use of the various Z-Types to control the troops.

Under its command, over a thousand S2s began to charge towards the direction of the Sea Clan.

A vast majority of those S2s were directly killed by the Mutant Beasts and the sea warriors, however, a portion managed to breach the defences, and entered the inner circle of the Sea Clan.

The closer they got, the tighter the defences. With the suicidal charge of those S2s, only a few managed to reach the region that was guarded by those burly whale-head soldiers. Only then did they catch sight of the intelligent merpeople guarded heavily.

Those S2s had just seen the merpeople when the whale-head warriors immediately shot forwards and smashed those S2s into meat paste.

Right before the moment the S2s were turned into meat paste, the corpse Amaterasu opened its eyes with delight, and a savage smile broke out on its face: “I've got you! Damn merpeople, you

can all die for me. The land belongs to me the god Amaterasu.”

Since it had discovered the traces of the merpeople, Amaterasu quickly issued out a number of commands.

The zombies all around Yokosuka Base stirred and made their way towards the Sea Clan and Mutant Beasts, as fighting and killing broke out everywhere.

The evolved zombies of Type 2 and above were split into 8 troops, avoiding the 7 invincible Type 4 Mutant Beasts, and launched a ferocious attack on the Sea Clan from 4 different directions.

Each troop was headed by 8 L4s, their strength exceeding even those of Type 3 Mutant Beasts. Furthermore, there were Devourers and S4s supporting them, and huge number of the sea warriors and lesser Mutant Beasts were torn apart.

The ordinary zombies might not be able to cause much damage, but that was not to say they were useless. The Mutant Beasts would get distracted while attacking the ordinary zombies, leaving them vulnerable to the evolved ones. At the same time, with the large number of zombie pressing forward, and squeezing all the parties together, it was easier for the L2s and L3s to pummel them into mush.

The 7 Type 4 Mutant Beasts turned their attention to the 8 different groups and chased after them.

Amaterasu had somehow picked up on tactics by itself, and under its command, the 8 separate forces did not engage the Type 4 behemoths, only escaping further into the sea of zombies.

The 7 Type 4 Mutant Beasts charged into the midst of the horde, and flattened countless zombies into meat paste. Each of them was the size of a large cruise, and in their path, corpses laid strewn all over the ground, in varying degrees of flattened flesh and splattered blood. It seemed as though nothing could pose a threat to those Type 4 Mutant Beasts.

# Chapter 578: Tyrannical Corpse Amaterasu!

---

When the attention of the Type 4 Mutant Beasts was on the zombie horde, every single action of theirs caused the surrounding zombies to be flattened into meat paste. With every passing second, there were over thousands of zombies being taken out of commission. That was the problem with the zombies, their densely packed formation caused them to suffer as an entire bunch.

Yue Zhong had no way of killing over tens of thousands of zombies in one blow, but the 7 Type 4 Mutant Beasts could easily trample over them as long as they were willing to.

With the 7 behemoths lured away, 300-over L4s, a thousand over S4s, and 500 Devourers led a huge horde of Type 2 & 3 zombies numbering at least in the dozens of thousands out from one shelter.

This huge horde that could easily decimate any human troops quickly reached the centre of the sea warriors, and began their clash against the Mutant Beasts.

This huge army of zombies with the L4s leading the charge were the elite zombies under the control of Amaterasu. It had gathered most of the Type 4 evolved and Type 3 evolved, before launching this sudden assault. Its intelligence wasn't low, and it had already learnt how to implement tactics.

Those L4s were like tanks as they charged into the battlefield, and any unfortunate sea warrior that stood in their way were obliterated like ants.

There were many Type 3 Mutant Beasts within the army of the Sea Clan, however, they were ripped apart easily by the joint assault of those L4s, S4s and Devourers. The Type 3 Mutant Beasts might be large, but the Type 4 evolved zombies and Devourers possessed enough might to threaten their existence. Surrounded by those zombies, they could only succumb to the onslaught. Of

course, many Type 4 evolved zombies were also devoured by the other Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

Facing the attack of the evolved zombies, the elite of the Sea Clan finally made their move. Those killer whale-heads and tiger shark-warriors which were at least 7m in height stepped forwards. Even the merpeople they were guarding started to act.

With the killer whales and tiger sharks warriors stepping in the fray, and the powerful large bones from unknown creatures they wielded, every strike or smash would kill dozens of evolved zombies. Even the strong L3s were knocked back quite a distance when hit.

The beautiful merpeople were not sitting idly by as well. They activated their own abilities, causing the waves below them to rise up in towering levels, before forming sharp ice spikes to shoot down towards the evolved zombies.

These merpeople then raised their hands again, and the water beneath them became powerful pressurized cannons that blasted those frozen zombies struck by the previous ice shards. Due to the high pressure, the water blasts caused those ice statues to be disintegrated, including the zombies frozen within.

One L4 was currently engaging a Killer Whale warrior in combat. Both had thick skin for defences that would not lose to tanks. The Killer Whale warrior might be stronger in its offence, but due to the defence of the L4, victory was not certain in the short period of time.

At this time, a sharp ice shard shot out from the middle of the battlefield, piercing the right hand of the L4, and it immediately broke apart to freeze the entire right arm of the L4.

The Killer Whale warrior took the chance to hammer down on the head of the L4. The mighty blow instantly smashed the brain of the L4, causing it to ooze out of the orifices.

After dealing with the L4 with that explosive blow, the Killer Whale warrior then swung its powerful bone weapon around, smashing the dozens of S-types back before it charged towards another area.

It was at this time when countless H1 appeared in one high-rise building. They opened their huge mouths, and fired multiple fireballs on the Sea Clan down below.

In a blink of an eye, the sea warriors were bombarded by the rain of fireballs. The lower-level sea warriors were either instantly killed or suffered heavy injuries. As for the Killer Whales and Tiger Shark warriors, they were protected by the thick scales on their bodies.

Under the protection of those powerful guards of the Sea Clan, the merpeople caused the waves beneath them to rise into the sky, forming a water barrier. When the fireballs landed on that water protection, they were smothered.

“Hahaha! Go to hell!” Just then, Amaterasu shot through, turning into flash of light covered by the rain of fireballs. He fired out multiple blood-covered bones, and pierced through the bodies of 2 mermen.

Having killed 2 merpeople explosively, he then fired out 4 other sharp spikes, and pierced another 2 mermen and 2 mermaids.

6 merpeople died just like that. This caused the rest of the merpeople to be enraged. This time, the total number of merpeople that had come up shore numbered about a hundred, with 6 of them dead, that represented almost 10% of their forces. In the eyes of these merpeople, the deaths of the low-level sea warriors and Mutant Beasts weren't important, however, every member of their merpeople race was important.

The positions of each merperson suddenly began to churn with seawater, as multiple ice shards formed and shot towards Amaterasu.

Facing that scale of attack that even blocked out the sun, Amaterasu retracted the blood chain connecting it with a nearby building. It managed to dodge a large number of the ice shards and pressurized water cannons. It shot towards the roof of the building like a bullet, and only 7 or 8 ice shards managed to land on it, causing its right arm to be encased in ice.

Amaterasu flung its arm casually, causing the ice to break away. It then tugged at its blood chain, pulling itself towards another building.

At that next instant, an endless chill enveloped the building it was on previously, shattering all the glass windows and wrapping the entire building.

Amaterasu had just evaded that powerful joint attack from the merpeople, and quickly escaped to another location, before he suddenly launched a sneak attack from there and killed another 4 merpeople. He then disappeared.

Yue Zhong watched the corpse Amaterasu hunting the merpeople with its guerilla tactics and shock filled his eyes: “What a terrifying fellow.”

Each time it appeared in the midst of the merpeople, one or 2 would die at its hands. Whereas the merpeople could not do anything to it other than react.

Amaterasu might be arrogant, but it truly possessed the strength to do so. It continued to support the sea of zombies through its command, while launching its own attacks on the merpeople. It wasn't too far off to say that it was already a top existence of the food chain.

Watching their comrades being killed by Amaterasu, the mermaids began to sing out loud in their bewitching voices.

The song of the merpeople was more melodious and enchanting than any song in the world before the apocalypse. When Yue



Zhong heard the song, his killing intent and combat state started to dissipate.

The 7 Type 4 Mutant Beasts were already filled with bloodlust and their eyes were red after slaughtering such a large number of zombies. These evolved zombies were all delicacies to them. After all, being Overlords in their own parts of the ocean, it was hard for the merpeople to fully control them. Therefore, when the song resounded across the battlefield, the Type 4 Mutant Beasts which had almost lost control began to calm down, slowly retreating and moving towards the merpeople.

Amaterasu's eyes were bloodshot as well, and it let out a shrill shriek. The countless ordinary zombies immediately followed the charge of dozens of thousands of Type 2 zombies to launch a kamikaze attack on the Type 4 Mutant Beasts.

The H1s that were all hiding in various buildings opened their mouths and began to spit out fireballs after fireballs on the Type 4 Mutant Beasts. The rain of fireballs fell on the scales of the Type 4 behemoths, exploding on their scales.

Among the 7 of them, the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish was the weakest. It could control electricity and generate powerful lightning charges, with huge potential for destruction, considerably high among the 7 of them. However, its defences were the weakest, and the fireballs from the H1s could damage it.

Facing the hail of fireballs, the Sea Jellyfish could not help but stop and covered its head with its tentacles. When the dense barrage of fireballs exploded on its tentacles, they were blasted apart, mucus and slime splashing everywhere.

However, it was still a Type 4 Mutant Beast in the end, with powerful regenerative abilities. Each time it lost a tentacle, it would quickly grow back one. That was not to say that the attack was ineffective though, as the pain was enough to cause the mighty Sea Jellyfish to scream out in pain.

As the H1s were focused on assaulting the Sea Jellyfish, the thousands of S2s shot towards it, using their sharp claws to tear into its skin, causing its slime and mucus to ooze out from the wounds.

The Sea Jellyfish endured the pain and began to channel its innate ability, as thousands of lightning charges fire out from it, enveloping the zombies all around it, and instantly frying over thousands of the Type 2 evolved zombies.

Under the command of Amaterasu, the evolved zombies continued to launch their attacks of the Sea Jellyfish.

The H1s atop the buildings also began to concentrate their firing on the Sea Jellyfish, suppressing it at its location. Facing the swarm of zombies, the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish had no choice but to continue and fire its innate ability, as lightning charges continued to electrocute thousands of Type 2 zombies into charred beings.

The Type 4 Sea Jellyfish had countless subordinates, but they were likewise being held up by the other zombie groups, unable to render their leader any help.

# Chapter 579: Merpeople Royal Family!

---

The Type 4 Sea Jellyfish was surrounded like by the countless zombies, and it could neither advance nor retreat, its strength whittled away slowly.

The remaining 6 Type 4 Mutant Beasts were being assaulted on all sides by the sea of zombies as well, it was just that they had tough and resilient scales. The fireballs of the H1s were only mildly painful to them, and could not actually damage them.

However, there were about 50 Devourers amidst the sea of zombies attacking the 6 Type 4 Mutant Beasts, and as these Devourers possessed high offense and combat ability, they were stronger than ordinary zombies by countless times.

The 50 Devourers did not engage the 6 Type 4 Mutant Beasts in direct combat, instead, they leaped about from building to building, from time to time, firing their toxic bile at the behemoths.

As long as the toxic bile hits any of the Type 4 Mutant Beasts, countless zombies would rush over and try to tear into the scales of that Type 4 Mutant Beast.

Under the co-ordination of the corpse Amaterasu, the zombies were able to exhibit a terrifying combat strength. Although it wasn't enough to instantly kill a Type 4 Mutant Beast, it was enough to suppress them, and caused them have difficulty sweeping or killing the zombies.

Each blow or strike from those behemoths could easily obliterate thousands of zombies, but by minimizing their movement, it was an effective tactic.

The horde of zombies managed to keep the Type 4 Mutant Beasts at bay, preventing them from providing aid to the merpeople. Amaterasu then went all out, waving its right hand, and sending 4

blood-like bone spikes to pierce the heads of 4 singing mermaids. It then twisted the bone spikes, sucking up the life force of the mermaids, turning them into shrivelled mummies.

The merpeople roared out in rage, and sent yet another mighty wave of ice shards shooting towards Amaterasu.

Amaterasu did not try to dodge or escape to another area, instead, its blood river appeared once again, pouring out of its body, and surrounding itself. The blood river became some sort of a protection, and Amaterasu then continued its charge into the group of merpeople.

The countless ice shards and the incredible cold enveloped the blood shield, and the powerful freezing ability turned the blood rock-solid.

Seeing the shield of blood being frozen, delight flashed past the eyes of the merpeople. The corpse Amaterasu was simply too overbearing, and it was more threatening than even the Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

Kacha!

With a loud crack, the frozen blood river burst open, and a pale-faced Amaterasu leaped out, jumping into the middle of the group of merpeople.

As it stood on a piece of frozen blood shard on the waves, its right hand shot out a 100m-long sharp bone blade, and it slashed outwards at the merpeople.

The faces of the merpeople fell, and some controlled their waves to send themselves into the sky. Some retreated into the waves, while others controlled the waves to turn into ice shields to block the incoming assault.

With a single slash, Amaterasu caused 6 beautiful merpeople to be sliced into two. It then took the chance to shoot out bone spikes and pierce the bodies of 4 others, before it started absorbing their

blood essence, leaving them empty and void of blood.

After absorbing the blood essence of those 4 merpeople, Amaterasu regained a little of its life force, and its pale face regained some color: “The blood essence of you merpeople is not bad! Give me your knowledge and intelligence!!”

Amaterasu laughed savagely, before it shot in front of a beautiful mermaid with an incredible body, and suddenly opened its mouth beyond what was normally capable, and covered the head of the mermaid. It then bit it off in one bite, chewing gruesomely.

Although the corpse Amaterasu looked like a human on the surface, it was a terrible existence. It had the ability to absorb intelligence and knowledge by ingesting the brain of certain life forms, hence, gaining and growing its own capabilities and intelligence.

Amaterasu laughed savagely, and appeared behind another member of the Sea Clan, before piercing its body and absorbing its blood essence: “The language of the Sea Clan! I’m a genius! Haha!”

It became even more courageous and its momentum built up the more it killed and absorbed. Finally, it became a sort of blood-red flash. Every time the blood figure flashed by a mermaid or merman, an emaciated corpse would be all that remained floating on the sea.

After continuously absorbing the blood essence of dozens of merpeople, Amaterasu caught sight of a 1.45m little mermaid, looking about 12 or 13, wearing a crown with a mysterious pattern and inlaid with a number of crystals. The little lady was childish-looking, but she had an exceptional aura to her, and her figure was explosive, and Amaterasu immediately roared in excitement: “Mermaid Queen! It’s you! Become part of me!!”

It then turned into a flash of light and shot towards the little mermaid. The 8 personal guards around the little mermaid roared out in rage and activated their abilities as countless ice shards fired

at Amaterasu.

The countless ice picks rained down on the blood-red flash, but was instantly shattered, as Amaterasu appeared in front of the little mermaid. 4 bones with a tinge of blood pierced 4 of the female guards, and sucked them dry.

After absorbing them fully and breaking their defences, Amaterasu reached out and grabbed towards the little mermaid's heart.

The little mermaid stared back at the ferocious looking corpse, and a strange rune flashed brightly on her chest, as she opened her little mouth and blew out a dense and powerful mist that enveloped Amaterasu.

The white fog instantly turned Amaterasu into an ice sculpture.

After she had casted that ice fog over Amaterasu, the little mermaid turned incredibly pale, and her hands clutched her chest as she took ragged breaths. It was evident that the ability earlier took a large toll on her.

With a 'kacha', the huge ice sculpture broke apart, and Amaterasu stepped out, as he laughed savagely: "What a powerful ice ability. However, if you want to seal me, it's still slightly lacking."

Seeing the unharmed Amaterasu, all the merpeople had expressions of despair.

At this time, the Type 4 Dragon Beast that looked like a diplodocus opened its huge mouth from afar and fired its innate ability, as a huge white beam of icy energy shot over, blasting the body of Amaterasu, encasing it in a huge pillar of ice over 10m tall.

When they saw this, the mermaids all erupted in cheers. The Type 4 Mutant Dragon Beast's innate ability was the manipulation of ice, and when it fired its ice energy, it could even seal up fellow Type 4 Mutant Beasts.

As the merpeople were celebrating, Yue Zhong suddenly shot out from a small alley with lightning speed, reaching the Mermaid Queen and grabbing her neck. A thin spider silk shot out from his left hand, wrapping around her body, and began absorbing her Stamina.

Once he captured her, he didn't even spare a look back and ducked back into the dark alleyway. He had no interest in fighting it out with the merpeople.

Yokosuka Base was destined to fall. It would either be overrun by zombies, or conquered by the Sea Clan. All Yue Zhong could do was to try and get as many benefits as he could before running away.

When the Mermaid Queen was captured by Yue Zhong, she let out a sharp scream, at the same time using an unrecognizable language. Yue Zhong could not understand it, and did not know what she was shouting about.

She was evidently an important member though, as the moment she was captured, the rest of the merpeople immediately mobilized and chased after Yue Zhong with a terrifying chill.

Facing the powerful ice shards coming his way, he raised the body of the Mermaid Queen in front of him, acting as a shield.

When they saw this, the rest of the merpeople became shocked and furious and controlled the ice shards to change trajectory.

Yue Zhong then tugged at his spider silk, and he instantly leaped up to the roof of a building.

A powerful gust of wind blew, and Greenie came soaring through the skies, descending on the roof. Yue Zhong hugged the little mermaid close to him before jumping onto Greenie's back.

Greenie flapped its wings once and soared into the skies.

After they were airborne, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief. The center of the battlefield had been too dangerous, any single Type 4 Mutant Beast could have heavily injured him, if not kill him.

The defences of the Sea Clan were also strong, if it weren't for the corpse Amaterasu punching a huge hole into their defence, Yue Zhong would not have been able to capture the little mermaid.

Zhao Tian Gang saw Yue Zhong carrying the little mermaid and could not help but sigh: "This is a mermaid? So beautiful... I'd never have thought that I could see one from the legends."

The little mermaid continued to struggle in Yue Zhong's clutches, however she was already tied up tight in those spider silk, hence she looked pitiful yet adorable at the same time.

Qiao Xing could not help but ask: "Leader, you've caught a mermaid. When will we be obtaining the cruiser of the 7th Fleet?"

The 7th Fleet of the U.S. Navy was not just a huge cruiser, it also possessed powerful combat capabilities. It was the symbol of strength, and prior to the apocalypse, it was a famous icon in Southeast Asia. Qiao Xing wanted to get his hands on it badly, and to drive it around.



# Chapter 580: Hitting Corpse Amaterasu Hard!

---

The corpse Amaterasu possessed intelligence, and was a variant mutation of the zombie virus. In addition to its intelligence, it was insanely strong. If it continued to grow, it might take over the whole of Japan, after which, it might launch assault other areas with Japan as its base.

The moment Yue Zhong imagined Amaterasu commanding over millions of zombies to launch an assault on him, his heart turned cold.

Previously, he had led his army to destroy millions of zombies, and each time, it was mainly due to killing the Z2 that he was able to achieve his objectives. However, it was never once a case of killing the zombies themselves. With his current strength, if he were to meet Amaterasu commanding millions and billions of zombies on the battlefield, he would definitely perish.

Zhao Tian Gang and the rest saw Yue Zhong's serious expression and their hearts sank, not saying anything.

Yue Zhong tied the little mermaid securely onto Greenie's back, before looking back down. He was hoping that Amaterasu would die in the battle below. However, his gut feeling told him that it would not be as simple as he imagined.

The merpeople had watched helplessly as Yue Zhong kidnapped their queen, and their hearts were filled with rage. 2 9m-tall Whale Shark warriors wielded their large Mutant Beasts bones and swung it viciously at the ice sculpture containing Amaterasu, hoping to smash it into smithereens.

Suddenly, things took a different turn. The ice sculpture blasted apart, and the handsome Amaterasu stepped out, its face incredibly pale. Its right shoulder had been gravely injured, and

there were many areas where its bones were showing. Even its chest had a large hole. However, there was no blood seeping out from its wounds.

If an ordinary person were to suffer such injuries, they would have long perished. However, Amaterasu just turned into a beam of bloody light and shot deep into the horde.

The innate abilities of the Type 4 Mutant Beasts were too fearsome, it had expended all its energy to escape from that icy prison. If it had to take on another blow from any of the Type 4 Mutant Beasts, it might really succumb to its injuries.

The 2 9m-tall Whale Shark warriors quickly chased after Amaterasu, smashing it amidst a rain of shattered bones and blood.

Amaterasu let out a pitiful scream and hurried towards a building before disappearing.

The 2 Whale Shark warriors continued their pursuit, only to discover an empty location. With their speed, they weren't a match for Amaterasu, and there was only a chance to injure Amaterasu if they had the opportunity to get close.

They bellowed in rage and cursed in their Sea Clan tongue, but it was useless.

When Amaterasu escaped into a building, a powerful fiery blade slashed out from the dark, slicing its body and combusting it in a burst of flames.

The resulting explosion lit up the entire area, revealing Yue Zhong's determined face. He had tied the little mermaid to Greenie, before activating his Second Order Stealth and predicting the best escape route for Amaterasu. He had waited patiently, till Amaterasu appeared, and finally launched his fearsome attack, hitting Amaterasu hard once more.

Amaterasu roared out again in agony, before shooting out 4 sharp

bone spikes towards Yue Zhong.

The Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade in Yue Zhong's arms flashed and shot out a few blade beams to counter Amaterasu's bone spikes, but was forced a few steps backwards from the might of the clash.

"It's you, human?!" The heavily injured Amaterasu stared hatefully at Yue Zhong, spitting out: "The mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind! You have already snatched the Type 4 Mutant Beast and the Mermaid Queen from my hands, and now you want to kill me?"

A cold glint flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he activated his Shadow Steps and Devil Flame, covering the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade with the powerful flames, slashing towards Amaterasu: "That's right! Submit to me, and pledge your allegiance to me. Otherwise, today shall be the day you die!"

Amaterasu brought up its own blood-colored bone blade to parry Yue Zhong's attack, as a bloody fog began to steam from the blade. Its eyes flashed with an arrogant look: "Human, even if I am heavily injured, I will not be humiliated by you lowly scum. Human, I'm appreciative of your cunning and strength. Submit to me, become my subordinate, and work for me. I can grant you power, status, riches and beautiful virgins. There're over 70,000 humans here in Yokosuka Base. As long as you work for me, you can become their leader. Their lives and deaths will be yours to control."

When Yue Zhong heard it, his face seemingly twitched as he lowered his blade: "Really?"

The corners of Amaterasu's mouth lifted slightly: "Of course! There's an absolutely beautiful pair of twins in the 5th Bunker. As long as you work for me, they are yours."

Having swallowed a large number of human brains, Amaterasu had an understanding of human nature. To men, power, status, riches and women were the things they wanted the most. Hence, it

wanted to try to entice Yue Zhong with these promises.

Yue Zhong nodded lightly, and he stepped forwards: “Alright! I’ll go with you!”

Amaterasu grinned, pleased, and produced a dark red drop of blood in its palms. It then spoke somewhat alluringly: “This is my blood essence. If you promise to be loyal, swallow this. Once you swallow this, you’ll be the leader of all the humans in Yokosuka Base. When I control Japan, you’ll be Japan’s king. When I control the world, you’ll be the human king by my side that I trust. Many people would look up to you in reverence, and tremble at your prestige and might. The only price is your loyalty to me.”

The position of a king was pretty enticing to any man. Many ambitious people before the apocalypse would have thought of ruling at once. However, most had failed. In the past, it was an unattainable goal. But now, it might be possible.

“Let me see!” Yue Zhong eyed the blood essence with an expression of pondering as he walked forwards.

All of a sudden, he swung his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade covered in Devil Flames, slashing Amaterasu across its chest. The fiery flames combusted and caused a large hole on Amaterasu’s body, as its blood essence was burnt and sizzled into the air.

“YOU DARE TRICK ME!” Amaterasu roared in rage and pain, and fired out 4 sharp bone spikes at Yue Zhong.

In response, Yue Zhong swung out and parried the incoming bone spikes, before casting his Gravity Manipulation, as a two-fold gravitational force weighed down on Amaterasu, causing it to sink and lose its balance.

Yue Zhong then grabbed the chance to swing once more, slashing out at Amaterasu’s body, and burning more of its blood.

Amaterasu roared out again, shooting a dense wave of blood that was shrouded in evil energy. If Yue Zhong came into contact with

this move, he would definitely be sucked dry of his blood.

Yue Zhong fired his Devil Flames again, sending it to burn the evil blood energy into fumes.

When Amaterasu saw its blood essence being burned, it immediately turned tail and tried to escape out in a blood-red flash.

By now, Amaterasu was at its weakest, having been assaulted over and over, it had lost all of its fighting will, and desperately wanted to escape.

Yue Zhong fired out a beam of Devil Flame, enveloping the flash of light that Amaterasu had become, as the flames burned brightly and fiercely. Endless amount of bloody fumes continued to rise into the sky.

Under the merciless burning of the Devil Flame, a crystal-clear bead of blood dropped out from the beam of light that was Amaterasu.

Yue Zhong shot forward, however, he suddenly felt an overwhelming sense of danger and he quickly retreated, before 2 sharp bone spikes smashed apart a nearby wall, chasing after him.

Yue Zhong hurriedly swung his blade and broke apart one bone spike, but unfortunately, the other bone spike managed to pierce his body. It tore apart the Bone Encompassing Armor he had activated, piercing the Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, before it was forcefully stopped by the Level 4 Protective Vest.

Yue Zhong felt some cold sweat, if he hadn't dodge in time, he would have been pierced. If it were any other Mutant Beast it wouldn't be so bad, however, this was Amaterasu he was facing. It was simply a freak of nature that carried the deadly zombie virus, and if he was pierced, he might have become a zombie as well.

Even Evolvers and Enhancers had no means of defending against the virus. Only the Mutant Beasts were somewhat invulnerable, as

they were affected early on and had mutated themselves.

Taking the chance when Yue Zhong was distracted and stopped by the bone spikes, Amaterasu hurriedly charged out once again, before disappearing into the night.

When Amaterasu had gained intelligence, it had also learned the fear of death. In fact, it still possessed some strength to contend against Yue hong. However, it wasn't willing to bet its life, and just wanted to escape into the horde to recuperate. At that time, it could come back and deal with Yue Zhong as it wished.

Yue Zhong looked in the direction which Amaterasu had disappeared with, sighing with regret: "Shit, it still managed to escape."

This time, Yue Zhong had made use of the opportunity of Amaterasu being ambushed by the Type 4 Mutant Beasts to attack it. If it were based on their actual strength, Amaterasu could even injure and kill a Type 4 Mutant Beast, hence it was definitely stronger than Yue Zhong.

# Chapter 581: Killing the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish!

---

“What is this?” Yue Zhong came up to the blood red crystal-like bead, and used the Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade to poke it gingerly. Nothing happened. He hesitated a little before reaching out for it.

The blood-red crystal-like bead was as smooth as jade, and it radiated a brilliant red colour, as though it was capable of drawing any gaze that was cast upon it.

Yue Zhong held it, and could feel a warm flow of energy circulating into his body. His blood essence seemed to quicken, and his muscles seemed to strengthen as well.

As he held it for 20 seconds, a notification sounded in his mind: “Congratulations, you have gained an enhancement of +1 in Strength.”

When he heard that, delight flashed in his eyes: “This is a treasure! Definitely a good treasure!”

Yue Zhong’s body was enhanced to a terrifying degree at this point. Most ordinary treasures were ineffective to him. The meat of a Type 4 Mutant Beast was extremely nutritious and could boost vitality. If it were to be given to an ordinary person after training, their bodies could be strengthened to about three or even four times of their original state. However, for Yue Zhong, it would at most enhance his stats by a little, because his body was simply too strong. The vitality of mutant beast meat can no longer enhance him.

The higher a biological life form evolved, the harder it would be to take the next step. It was true for the Mutant Beasts, and it was true for humans as well.

The blood bead that dropped from Amaterasu’s body was some unknown treasure. From the way it could strengthen Yue Zhong by just holding onto it for 20 seconds, it was apparently something

very god.

With a thought, he kept the blood red bead back into his storage ring. Upon seeing it enter successfully, he heaved a sigh of relief.

The storage ring could not accommodate living things, and if the bead had been a biological thing, it would be impossible to store it in the ring.

After hesitating for a moment, he did not wear the blood red bead, and instead chose to open up the blue box that had dropped upon killing the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake.

“Level 7 Treasure: Sea Mask. Wearing this allows the user to breathe freely underwater. Swimming speed will be boosted, and the mask also negates the resistance and pressure of water. The mask can withstand damage from 25mm caliber bullets and below. Accompanying skill: Water Jet. Description of skill: Fires a high-powered torrent of water so that the user can travel in a straight line at high speeds. Lasts for 10 minutes.”

The Sea Mask was a sky-blue colored mask that was engraved with countless runes, and it seemed capable of covering a person's face. There were holes where the eyes, nose and mouth were supposed to be, and it was enveloped by a layer of transparent film.

He took it and thought while eyeing it: “This is a treasure for sea combat.”

This Sea Mask was like some diving gear, except that it was much stronger and better. However, it didn't add much to ordinary battles.

He kept the Sea Mask into his ring, and activated the Second Order Stealth, carefully making his way back into the battlefield.

At the center, countless Mutant Beasts were engaged in an all-out slaughter with the zombies. There were corpses of both sides littered everywhere.

He relied on his Stealth to slowly carve and dig out all the Blood



Essence and Nuclei from the various high level Mutant Beasts corpses, before keeping them.

Within the Yokosuka Base, there was a large number of Type 2 Mutant Beasts and a decent number of Type 3 Mutant BEasts. Even these powerful life forms were being killed by the Type 4 zombies.

Soon, Yue Zhong managed to gather about 20 nuclei and blood essences from the Type 2 Mutant Beasts, and about 4 nuclei and blood essences from Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

“My chance is here!” His eyes suddenly lit up, as he charged towards the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish.

At this time, the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish was dragging its large body backwards, and the surrounding electrical charges were dimming. Behind it, there were plenty of charred corpses, over 50,000 zombies had been electrocuted to death by it.

Countless fireballs blasted multiple wounds on the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish’s body. The ant-like S2s were crawling all over it while tearing and ripping its body, causing more injuries.

A number of Devourers continued to fire corrosive bile at the Mutant Sea Jellyfish, corroding large gaping holes in its body. The Mutant Sea Jellyfish might be able to regenerate from the wounds caused by the S2s and H1s, but the corrosive damage from the Devourers prevented any form of healing, furthermore, there was an intense stench that was being emitted b the wounds.

Evolved zombies were like ants to the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish, and it could easily flatten or crush any them. But even it would suffer under their swarm and continuous onslaught.

It reached out with its massive tentacles to either slap away or bring some s2s into its mouth, as it attempted to make its way to the sea. It had no more strength to activate its innate ability, and it wanted to escape badly to recover.

However, it was as though the zombies could feel the

vulnerability of the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish, as many of them rushed over to surround and attack it.

Countless zombies were blocking the rest of the Mutant Beasts from providing any assistance, and both sides were thus locked in battle.

The tentacles of the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish flew about, smashing numerous S2s and S3s into smithereens. However, more S-Types continued to crawl all over it, tearing into its body. They even dug into the exposed wounds, further threatening the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish. In response, it would emit out some electrical charges from time to time, lighting up the area and charring any unfortunate zombies within a kilometer of it.

As the storm died down, the charred black corpses of the S-Types fell from the body of the Sea Jellyfish. However, the Sea Jellyfish was in no better shape, it slumped to the ground, and seemed to be out of energy.

The Sea Jellyfish's innate ability was one of the strongest offensive abilities among the 8 Type 4 Mutant Beasts, but it also was one of the most energy consuming abilities. The Type 4 Sea Jellyfish made its final charge before slumping to the ground, exhausted.

Countless evolved zombies rushed towards the Sea Jellyfish. It didn't matter what level the zombies were, the flesh and blood of a Type 4 Mutant Beast were extremely tempting.

Just then, from within the horde of zombies, Yue Zhong with his body wrapped in bone armor reached out with his right hand, and a sharp bone spike shot out and supported him all the way to the head of the Sea Jellyfish.

The H1s that had been hiding in the various buildings fired their fireballs at Yue Zhong. They were afraid that he would steal the precious blood essence and nuclei.

A bright shield appeared in front of Yue Zhong, blocking those incoming fireballs.

Yue Zhong wielded his Black Tooth Blade and slashed down viciously at the head of the Sea Jellyfish. With a Strength of over 10 times a normal person, the strike caused a large gaping wound, and mucus started to flow out.

Yue Zhong then swiftly put on the Sea Mask that he had just obtained, and burrowed directly into the body of the Sea Jellyfish.

It was a mask that allowed the user to breathe freely in liquid, hence Yue Zhong was able to dive inside the body of the Sea Jellyfish that was 95% water. He then pulled out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade and slashed about randomly, tearing flesh and nerves.

As he continued to wreak havoc in the body of the Sea Jellyfish, he noticed a blue nucleus, as well as a bright red blood essence. They were surrounded by a number of white pearls amidst the nerves and tissues.

Yue Zhong reached out to grab the 2 of them, before pulling hard. He then used his blade to sever the different nerves and muscles, causing the brain of the Sea Jellyfish to immediately shutdown.

“Congratulations on achieving Level 81, you’ve gained 2 attribute points to be allocated.” The moment the brain of the Sea Jellyfish was mutilated by Yue Zhong, he received a large orb of experience, directly causing him to level up.

“These should be all precious treasures, I shall keep them for now.” Yue Zhong eyed the mass of white pearls, and encased them in a glass container before keeping it into his ring.

Even the flesh and blood of the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish was a hard-to-come-by delicacy, Yue Zhong quickly sliced some off, and kept them into his ring, before hurriedly burrowing out.

He had just emerged from the body of the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish

when a gust of wind blew towards him, as a sharp claw made grab at his body. It was an S4 that had just climbed onto the body of the Sea Jellyfish and was intending to attack him.

Yue Zhong swung his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade, slashing the S4 was directly sliced into two, and a Skill Book dropped out.

Yue Zhong looked down and saw the sea of zombies crawling all over the body of the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish, devouring its body.

The blue colored box had landed in the sea of zombies.

Since anything that dropped out of a Type 4 Beast was bound to be a treasure, Yue Zhong took one look at the box, and leaped down after it.

# Chapter 582: Electromagnetic Gun

---

The horde of zombies looked at Yue Zhong leaping down and immediately reached out with their claws to swipe at him. It was like a hell of demented souls reaching for him.

As he landed, Yue Zhong fired out numerous bone blades from his Bone Encompassing Armor, before he twisted on the spot. In an instant, his whirlwind tactic caused the zombies within a 20m radius of him to be ground into slices. Body parts and blood splattered and flew everywhere.

Yue Zhong reached for the blue box, and the storage ring flashed, drawing the blue box in. He then shot out a sharp bone spike into the ground, propelling him towards a high building.

Even a Type 4 Mutant Beast could fall under the continuous attacks of the zombies, Yue Zhong was not stupid to think he could withstand their onslaught.

All of a sudden, a number of L4s and L3s grabbed the zombies beside them and flung towards Yue Zhong. A rain of zombies shot towards Yue Zhong like cannonballs.

The L-Types had bad aim, and most of them landed a distance away. There were a few who had slammed into walls and burst apart due to the impact.

Even so, 2 managed to hurtle towards Yue Zhong, flung viciously by the L4s.

Right as they were about to hit Yue Zhong, a white shield appeared again. The 2 zombies smashed into the shield and their bodies broke in various places. The shield also dimmed, falling back in Yue Zhong's arms.

Yue Zhong dared not delay longer, and quickly rushed to the roof before releasing a long and sharp howl.

Hearing his summons, Greenie immediately swooped down,

picking him up and soared back into the skies. Yue Zhong settled himself in, and looked down again for another chance to kill a Type 4 Mutant Beast.

If he was facing a Type 4 Mutant Beast at its tiptop condition, Yue Zhong would find it incredibly difficult to kill it. However, with the horde of zombies unwittingly assisting him, there might be a chance.

There were still 6 of the Type 4 behemoths. Everyone of them had incredibly thick armors, their defences astonishing. The H1s' fireballs could not do anything, the L4s were helpless as well. Only the sharp claws of the S4s as well as the corrosive bile of the Devourers could do some damage to those thick scales.

Yue Zhong observed for some time, noting that there was no opportunity. He then signaled for Greenie to fly towards the 7th Fleet in the Yokosuka Base.

Currently, on the deck of the 7th Fleet, there were countless 1m-long Mutant Sea Lice with sharp teeth and their bodies covered with tentacles assaulting the American zombies.

The powerful tentacles of the Mutant Sea Lice propelled them like cannons, latching on to the different American Navy zombies, taking huge bites out of their brains.

Greenie descended and dropped Yue Zhong on the deck, and their attention swivelled towards him.

Facing the hundreds of Mutant Sea Lice, Greenie flapped its wings powerfully, its innate tornado ability blasting out, sending the little critters flying away.

Yue Zhong covered Zhao Tian Gang and the rest as they made their way to the control room, and they quickly got to wait.

Following the whirring of engines and the lighting up of some buttons, the cruiser began to come to life, and quickly made its way towards the sea.

There were over 70,000 survivors in the Yokosuka base, but the place was swarmed with Mutant Beasts and zombies fighting each other. It was hard for Yue Zhong to attempt a rescue. Furthermore, they weren't Chinese, and he didn't feel particularly bad about leaving them behind.

The moment the cruiser moved, a number of Mutant Beasts started to chase. However, because the cruiser was made for battle, unless the Type 3 or Type 4 Mutant Beasts made a move, the rest of the Mutant Beasts could not possibly block them.

However, the Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts were all locked in a crazy fight with the zombies, and the ordinary beasts could do nothing to hinder the 7th Fleet cruiser.

After breaking out of the surrounding of the Mutant Beasts, Yue Zhong heaved a long sigh of relief. Although he didn't manage to obtain the entire Yokosuka Base, earning a mothership and cruiser was decent enough.

Especially since the mothership had a number of advanced fighter jets, once Yue Zhong gained full control of the mothership, he would have gained a huge boost in might.

The Kingdom of God might have the powerful Thunder Fighters, but these were all assault helicopters that were weaker against the fighter jets that were more superior in the air. After all, fighter jets were focused on aerial combat, as compared to the Thunder Fighters that focused on land.

After the apocalypse, Yue Zhong could use the Devil Flame to easily melt an assault helicopter, but it would be hard for him to destroy a fighter jet. This was because the speed of the fighter jets reached mach speed. Furthermore, their altitude was too high, it exceeded the range of what Yue Zhong was capable of.

Yue Zhong had started mass producing ammunition in the Yan Zhou City base, however, manufacturing fighter jets were impossible. Even with the advancement in technology over the

next 10 years, it would be practically impossible to create the highly advanced fighter jets. After all, it was hard for China to have manufactured even before the apocalypse, needless to say the current situation.

Yue Zhong felt slightly more at ease, and opened the blue treasure box. With a flash of light, a strange gun appeared, its muzzle about 40mm wide, the body flashing with a black metallic lustre, and a number of gold lines wrapped around the body, converging around the muzzle like a spiral. The golden lines continued into a clear empty box below the muzzle, which contained even more of the golden metallic lines, and it looked extremely sci-fi.

“Level 7 Treasure: Single Light 40mm Caliber Electromagnetic Gun (I-Type). It fires a powerful electromagnetic pulse, everyday generating one bullet automatically. If user inputs nuclei, the Gun can use the nuclei as ammunition.”

Yue Zhong flipped the Electromagnetic Gun about in his hands, his eyes lit with excitement: “Good treasure!”

It was currently the most powerful assault rifle in his arsenal, with it, his destructive potential increased yet again.

As for nuclei, with the millions of citizens under him, and his promise of rewards to hunters, they could gather enough Mutant Beast nuclei to exchange at the government’s office, and the nuclei was free for Yue Zhong to use.

Ordinary humans could not make use of the nuclei from the Mutant BEasts, and only the Energy Converter, the Biological Armor, as well as the recent Electromagnetic Gun could utilize those. These treasures were all dropped from the rare Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beasts, and were hard to come by for most ordinary people.

The cruiser was speeding along in the sea, when suddenly, the surface of the sea started to churn and a number of Mutant Flying



Fishes that were 3m long and sharp spikes all over their backs jumped out of the water, smashing into the cruiser.

Dang! Dang!

Following the sounds of metals being struck, the countless Mutant Flying Fish continued to slam into the cruiser. The sea was rippling madly, as though there were many horrors awaiting to break through the surface.

Yue Zhong frowned as he thought anxiously: “What’s going on? Most of the high-level Mutant Beasts should be engaged in the battle at Yokosuka Base.”

When Yue Zhong had led his men to manoeuvre the mothership out of the base, there hadn’t been much disturbance from the Mutant Beast horde. However, this time, the cruiser had not even left for quite awhile and there was such a heavy onslaught. Something was not right.

“Could it be due to her?”

A thought arose in Yue Zhong’s mind, and he swiftly ran towards the control room.

The little mermaid’s mouth was open as she seemed to be continually singing something. Strange runes flashed on her chest. The moment she saw Yue Zhong, she became flustered, and stopped moving out of fear. The runes also died down.

“So it really is her.” Yue Zhong came to a swift judgment. He walked up to her and grabbed her, carrying her towards the observation window. True enough, the waves had settled down, and the crazy onslaught of the Mutant Flying Fishes had stopped.

He stared at the little mermaid and growled menacingly: “I know it was you. Little rascal, I don’t want this to happen again. If it happens again, don’t blame me for killing you.”

The pretty little mermaid kept her mouth shut, as she stared at Yue Zhong with a hint of fear, not saying a single word.

He could not do anything, since the language barrier was an issue. He was not like the corpse Amaterasu, swallowing the life force of other biological lives would enable him to learn all there was to learn about the race or species.

Yue Zhong suddenly felt excited as he looked at the adorable little mermaid. He felt as though it was possible for an endless number of Mutant Beasts lining up for his subordinates to kill: “This Mermaid Queen should be able to summon multiple Mutant Beasts. If used properly, we should be able to procure a large amount of sea-based products, and gain a large number of nuclei as well.”

All of sudden, a sharp scream that could send shivers down one’s spine resounded from a distance, and it caused everyone on the cruiser to tremble with fear.

# Chapter 583: Country A!

---

“Type 5 Mutant Beast!! Hurry, turn the ship around!” When Yue Zhong heard that shrill howl that was filled with might, his face immediately fell, and he ordered loudly.

A single Type 5 Mutant Beast possessed an earth-shaking might, just one alone could easily make a huge mothership seem like a dwarf. Such a behemoth was basically invincible in the seas, and as long as they wanted to, they could easily flip and tear into the cruiser Yue Zhong and his team were on.

The little mermaid that was in Yue Zhong’s arms was also frightened, and her body trembled. The Type 5 Mutant Beast was truly an Overlord in the seas, and her clan was just one of the many factions that held power, and through their joint efforts, they managed to subdue 8 Type 4 Mutant Beasts. However, a Type 5 Mutant Beast was beyond their capabilities.

Zhao Tian Gang swiftly controlled the cruiser to head for another direction, and cranked the turbines, pushing the speeds to the limits.

Following the constant howls, a fierce wave rose in the distance, and made its way towards them, before crashing down on the boat.

Yue Zhong leapt onto Greenie’s back and flew up to the sky for a better look.

In the distance, lightning flashed about, icebergs shattered, and strong gusts of winds brewed. The sea churned and waves after waves rose, spreading outwards and covering the entire battlefield.

In the skies, he could not make out what was going on at the epicentre of all that commotion, but he knew that there were definitely 2 Type 5 Mutant Beasts engaged in a fierce battle, and they were slowly moving towards the cruiser.

His face instantly fell and he roared into the walkie talkie: “Bank

left! Bank left!!”

The people on the cruiser could not care about what was going on, and just followed Yue Zhong’s orders as they tried their best to escape from the vicinity.

Yue Zhong stared fixedly at the battle in the distance, praying that the cruiser wasn’t the aim of the 2 Type 5 Mutant Beasts.

If it had been on land, Yue Zhong could still try to engage one of them in order to be a distraction. However, in the seas, he was helpless. Even with the Sea Mask, he was simply powerless against the behemoths and their natural advantage in water.

Fortunately, the 2 behemoths did not seem to place the cruiser in their eyes, the storms they created just happened to blast their way.

Even so, the force of the storm was enough to raise some powerful waves, causing some to slam into the cruiser, rocking it side to side. The cruiser was still a precious piece of technology that humanity had come up with, and even with the rocky seas, it still managed to stay afloat.

As the powerful storm blew past, Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief. However, he noticed that the cruiser had already deviated from the channel they were supposed to be at by over a 100 miles.

All of a sudden, the surface of the sea started to churn, as a huge tentacle broke through the water, and wrapped around the cruiser, intending to drag it below the surface.

“Level 77 Mutant Beast: Type 3 King Squid.”

Looking at that ominous tentacle, Yue Zhong immediately took out his new Electromagnetic gun and fired a single shot at the Type 3 King Squid.

A hot pulse blasted the tentacle, severing it into two, while the electrical discharge from the shot covered the surface of the King Squid, shocking and paralyzing it.

The moment the Type 3 King Squid went into shock, Zhao Tian Gang came back to his senses and activated the defenses on board, firing the various powerful weapons at the tentacle of the Type 3 King Squid.

Under that dense barrage of firing, the Type 3 King Squid's tentacle was blasted full of holes, and broke apart.

The torpedoes on the cruiser also fired and exploded on the body of the King Squid beneath the surface of the sea, causing it to bleed. Dense clouds of blood spread outwards in the sea, dying the water red.

The King Squid immediately gave up in fear and retreated out into the sea.

Yue Zhong looked at the tentacle floating on the surface, and his eyes flashed with pity. If it had been on land, a heavily injured Type 3 Mutant Beast was the best to hunt. However, in the sea, he had to think twice.

Yue Zhong returned to the command room, when Zhao Tian Gang had an ugly expression: "Leader! There's a situation, 4 huge Mutant Beasts are making their way here, one of them is just slightly smaller than this cruiser, I think that it might be a Type 4."

Yue Zhong frowned and replied: "Immediately divert us away from their path."

Zhao Tian Gang then replied with difficulty: "But Leader, we have already veered too far from our original course. If we try to avoid this swarm of Mutant Beasts, we will be even further away. There is not enough fuel for us to make it back should we decide to go further off course. We will have to make a stop at another island.

Yue Zhong immediately made a judgment: "Then let's stop somewhere so that we can refuel."

The Type 4 Mutant Beasts were practically impossible to fight out in the sea. While the cruiser did possess the means to injure some Type 4 Beasts, they had the ability to flip it over and sink it into the sea. He did not want the cruiser that he worked so hard to get be destroyed that easily.

Zhao Tian Gang received his order, and his heart eased a little: “Yes!”

Under Zhao Tian Gang’s control, the cruiser managed to speed off into the distance, far from the path of the Mutant Beasts.

There were all sorts of dangerous entities in the waters in the current world, however, since the cruiser was the renowned 7th Fleet’s treasured ship, it possessed powerful devices and sonar equipment to detect any biological lifeform, allowing it to adjust its course whenever needed.

A huge land mass soon appeared in the distance.

Yue Zhong looked at that foreign place and asked: “Where’s that?”

Zhao Tian Gang reported: “That’s Country A, Sir.”

A look of loath flashed past his face: “It’s actually that place.”

Country A was a place with a history of anti-Chinese sentiments. In recent history, there were points in time where the Chinese had been slaughtered like livestock. Men were killed, women were raped, and kids were grilled over fires. Some of the locals had no feelings whatsoever towards their deeds, and their cruelty knew no boundaries. It was almost comparable to the Rape of Nanking by the Japanese and the Nazi genocide of the Jews.

In 1998, there was a huge anti-Chinese movement in Country A. Over thousands of Chinese had been killed, their properties and belongings were seized, and even little kids were not spared. When Yue Zhong was studying in university, he had seen the photos of that period, and could not forget the cruelty.

In front of them, he noticed a small boat docked near the shore, and on it were a few survivors in tattered clothes. Each of their right hands were chopped off, and their blood flowed freely into the sea.

The blood attracted the Mutant Beasts in the sea and soon, the surface of the water churned, as a number of Mutant Beasts appeared, chomping down on the bodies of the survivors.

Hong! Hong!!

Just then, the small boat suddenly exploded, and the powerful explosion blasted the Mutant Beasts, killing them instantly.

An electric fishing boat soon came throttling from shore, and a number of ashen-faced survivors tossed out some nets, dragging in the corpses of the Mutant Beasts.

7 or 8 other armed militants were roaring with laughter, loudly talking about who knows what.

One of them casually raised his gun and fired it at one of the survivors, causing the rest to tremble with fear, and their movements quickened. The rest of the militants continued to laugh.

When Yue Zhong witnessed this, his brows furrowed. He whipped out some masking tape and sealed the mouth of the little mermaid, who stared furiously at him, before putting on the Sea Mask and swimming towards that fishing boat.

The moment he put on the Sea Mask and dove into the water, he felt like he had become a fish, easily slicing through the water without resistance. At the same time, under the enhancement of the mask, he could even see a fish scale the size of a palm floating about 2 miles away.

He swam easily towards the boat, before suddenly jumping out from the water and leaping onto the boat. He punched out mercilessly at one of the militants with his 10 times strength, and

the militant's brain was instantly pulverized.

The rest of the militants immediately cursed out in their native tongues as they raised their guns to fire at Yue Zhong wildly.

He whipped out his Crocodile Tooth Saw Blade from his waist, and in a flash, he evaded their attacks and coldly separated their heads from their bodies.

In just a short span of time, all of the militants had been exterminated by Yue Zhong.

During the process, the rest of the survivors who had been watching coldly, felt a tinge of fear.

They immediately got down on their knees and trembled, not knowing what Yue Zhong would do.

He eyed them and frowned, before using Chinese to ask: "Any of you understand Chinese?"

None of them spoke a single word.



# Chapter 584: Mixed-Chinese!

---

Yue Zhong looked at the survivors trembling in fear and frowned. He immediately took up one of the rifles and pointed it at the head of one of them: “Did I just save a bunch of Country A monkeys? What a waste of effort, since you guys are from Country A, you guys might as well die.”

Some of the native locals were lazy, foolish, yet cruel. They were envious of the lifestyles of the rich Chinese who worked hard in their country. That was why that during each period of unrest, some of these people would launch an assault on the Chinese to snatch what they had, raping the women and not letting the children off. They were truly worse than beasts.

When Yue Zhong thought that he might have rescued some of these very people he loathed, he felt unhappy. After the apocalypse, he had already slowly grown to become extremely vicious, and he truly wouldn't have second thoughts about killing them.

The survivor who was held at gunpoint began to wet his pants in fear as he tried to kowtow profusely, trying to speak in some barely understandable form of Chinese: “Don't kill me! I'm Li Jing Ren. I'm Chinese, they're all Chinese as well! Please! Sir! Thank you for saving us! Don't kill us! We're willing to do anything for you!!”

“Don't kill me!!”

“I'm Chinese!!”

The rest of them began to kneel and hurried to kowtow. Not all of them could speak Chinese, and 4 didn't even speak, they just kneeled and kowtowed.

In this apocalypse, any expert that possessed strength was someone who had killed Mutant Beasts and zombies before. They're well-known to be decisive and vicious, and would

definitely not be soft-hearted. These survivors did not want to die.

Yue Zhong pointed at a few of them and coldly drawled: “Why aren’t you guys speaking in Chinese? Are you locals, colluding to trick me?”

Those survivors turned pale when the gun was pointed at them, and they continued kowtowing even harder.

Li Jing Ren immediately responded in a small voice: “Sir, sir. They’re truly Chinese, but their families have been in Country A for a few generations, they have already lost their understanding of the language. They’re really Chinese people.”

It was usually hard for Chinese to assimilate into other countries. Hence, many Chinese families would choose not to teach their kids Chinese, and instead, use the local language to raise their children, in the hopes of integrating better.

Many countries were usually more kind to their own locals, and less so to foreigners. As for countries like China that usually cared more about foreigners than their own people, there were few countries like so.

Yue Zhong pointed at the various corpses floating on the sea surface and asked: “What’s going on here?”

Li Jing Ren chuckled bitterly as he spoke out in a solemn manner: “They were live bait. The locals captured a few Chinese to be live bait. They tied explosives onto them in order to deal with the Mutant Beasts in the sea. It’s how they fish.”

There were many fierce beasts in the seas, and the locals had devised the trick of tying explosives with bloodied survivors to lure the Mutant Beasts in, before blowing them up. It was cruel, but effective.

Yue Zhong frowned: “I heard that their intelligence wasn’t high, how could they have thought of this idea?”

Li Jing Ren laughed bitterly again: “It was an idea proposed by a

Chinese called Wu Liang.”

A strong killing intent flashed in Yue Zhong’s gaze: “This Wu Liang, I must kill him!”

Someone like that who betrayed his own race to help others, Yue Zhong hated these sort of people the most. He would kill any that he came across.

“There’s no need, Sir, he’s already dead.” Li Jing Ren saw the confusion in Yue Zhong’s eyes: “After proposing this wicked idea to the natives, he was soon captured and used as the first bait. His wife and daughter were also raped before being killed and cooked to be eaten.”

When Yue Zhong heard that, he turned silent. Their depravity and cruelty far exceeded his imagination.

He then asked: “Any of you know how much firepower their base has?”

“Not entirely sure.” Li Jing Ren replied. “I do know that they possess a lot of guns, but other than that, we don’t know much. We have been kept in pig pens all this time.”

Yue Zhong pointed at the corpses of the local militants and told Li Jing Ren: “Alright! I’m giving you guys a chance for revenge now. Take those guns, and follow me to eradicate those bastards!”

“No! No Sir!!”

“No. Sir, we can’t fight!”

“Sir, they’re too fearsome. The moment you go against them, once you’re found out, your limbs will be chopped off, and you will be nailed to a cross to suffer till you die!”

The moment they heard that Yue Zhong wanted to take them to fight it out with the locals, they immediately kowtowed furiously, and begged not to. They were already broken by the cruelty and viciousness of the methods the locals employed. The only way they

knew how to survive was to endure. Regardless of how suppressed, humiliated or even how many of their loved ones were killed, they only knew how to endure. To them, the moment they retaliated, they would suffer even more.

Most of the mixed-Chinese people only sought to advance their own causes and could endure tough times. As long as they weren't pushed to desperation, they wouldn't lash out. That was why they didn't dare to antagonize the locals. They might be capable figures in their respective fields, like business, engineers, farmers, architects, and all sorts of occupations, but they weren't warriors.

However, even the most pitiful had a threshold. Even after suffering so much, these mixed-Chinese survivors in front of him were all trembling and actually dared not rise up to take arms against their tormentors.

Yue Zhong eyed them furiously and barked: "What a bunch of useless trash!"

They lowered their head in shame, but continued to kneel there, looking like curled up worms.

Yue Zhong eyed Li Jing Ren and spoke coldly: "Get up, bring me to where you guys were held."

"Sir, please spare us! It's hell there!"

"On account that we're fellow Chinese, please spare us. I don't want to go back to that hellhole!"

Some of the Chinese began to wail and plead.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and he raised the rifle, firing once at the head of one survivor.

An additional hole appeared in the head of the survivor, and he crumpled to the floor with a look of fear on his face. Seeing this, the rest of them were frightened out of their wits, and fell back.

Yue Zhong was like a killing demon as he eyed them, speaking

icily: “This is not a negotiation. This is a fucking order. Those who don’t abide, will die. Get up, and lead me there, or you can die here like trash.”

He had no choice but to employ different means to deal with different people. Since these mixed-Chinese had been broken by their overwhelming fear of the locals, He had to use their blood and lives to inform them of a greater threat: him. Otherwise, he would have to blindly search for the base himself.

Seeing their comrade killed, the rest of them finally felt the true extent of Yue Zhong’s nature. They didn’t dare to plead any longer, and began to control the ship back to their base.

From his walkie-talkie, Zhao Tian Gang’s voice sounded: “Leader! Is there anything wrong over on land?”

Yue Zhong’s expression was as calm as the water surface: “I’m going to clear some trash, and look for some fuel. You guys stay where you are and await my orders. Call for reinforcements”

Since the fleet was advanced, its communication equipment was easily top-notch. They were able to contact their forces over at Shizuoka Prefecture and Sakura Town.

Zhao Tian Gang responded: “Yes!”

On a small hill, Li Jing Ren was pointing at a base in the distance as he reported to Yue Zhong fearfully: “It’s right there!”

Yue Zhong looked at the base, and noticed that it sat on a flat terrain, its design was extremely simple and surrounded by wooden fences. Surrounding it were wide fields that were once used for growing crops, but it was now barren.

On those wooden fences, there were numerous corpses of men, children and women hung up on them. At the entrance, there were even over hundreds of heads stacked up. It was truly a gruesome scene.

Yue Zhong eyed Li Jing Ren and the rest of them, and said

indifferently: “You guys stay here.”

These bunch of people were too weak to do anything, and might even become a burden to him.

“Thank you Sir! Thank you!” Li Jing Ren and the rest immediately kneeled down and kowtowed in thanks.

At the entrance of the base, there were 4 locals standing guard. They were currently riding on top of a pretty Chinese woman, roaring with laughter.

The female survivor had her hands broken, her snow-white skin was carved with the words ‘Kill all Chinese Pigs’, and her tongue was sliced off. One of her eyes had also been dug out. Currently, one of the soldiers was carving into her body, causing more blood to spill, as she squirmed and moaned in agony.

The 3 other soldiers were excitedly raping her in whatever hole they could find, the sight of her bloodied body excited them further. As they raped her, they bit down viciously on her flesh, and sucked out her blood.

The moment Yue Zhong arrived at the entrance, he had to witness such a gruesome scene, and it was even more depraved and sick than the image of the ‘98 riots.

# Chapter 585: Hell on Earth!

---

Yue Zhong stared at the depraved locals with a chilly light in his eyes. In this apocalypse, he had seen all sorts of depravity and inhumanity, but this was something else.

His killing intent billowed, and he shot towards one of the militants, reaching out for the militant's throat with his hands and twisting it forcefully, instantly crushing the windpipe of the unfortunate militant.

When his throat got crushed, he didn't die instantly, instead, his eyes widened in agony, as though they were about to pop out. His hands clutched at his throat, and he started to flail around like a fish out of water for a few moments before dying.

While that was happening, before the other 3 even had the chance to react, Yue Zhong had already crushed the their throats as well.

They also died miserably.

The woman, who had been tormented with her hands broken, her body full of scars, her eyeball dug out, and even her tongue cut off, looked towards Yue Zhong with only despair left in her remaining eye, as tears flowed down her cheek.

Yue Zhong spoke in Chinese softly: "I'll avenge you."

She struggled to nod her thanks, as a glimmer of hope shined in her eyes.

After killing the 4 locals, Yue Zhong tossed their corpses into a room, before heading further into the base.

As he ventured into the base, he came across a chilling scene. A bunch of kids were using forks to poke at a decapitated human head.

A number of female survivors were stripped naked, with their

hands and shoulders nailed to planks. A bunch of the locals were laughing while pointing at the captives. From time to time, a few locals would step up and proceed to rape the women. Even one young boy who looked about 12 took part in the rapings.

In a muddy area full of faeces by the road, there was a pit. On top of it, a number of children had been skewered with sticks and were being roasted.

The entire place was like Hell on earth, and when Yue Zhong came across this scene, it was as though he was surrounded by ghosts and demons, and not humans, and his stomach threatened to heave.

“Beasts!! Bunch of fucking beasts! They truly deserve death!! Why didn’t the 2004 Indian Ocean tsunami wipe them all out! The donations we gave to them were truly for naught!!”

“Ah!!!” Right at this time, there was a scream from afar.

Yue Zhong turned his head to look.

He discovered a pregnant woman who seemed to be due for delivery soon, being dragged by a bunch of locals towards a huge pot of boiling water. One of them drove a blade into her belly and tore it open, before grinning evilly and digging the unborn child out. He then threw the fetus into the pot of boiling water.

The rest of the locals immediately roared with laughter, as though they were possessed by demons.

In front of the huge pot, there were a number of children aging 8 to 12 years old, and when they saw this spine-chilling scene, they trembled in fear, while some even began to cry.

One of the locals made a grab at a small boy, intending to throw him in to cook. He had already done this countless times.

Right as he was about to throw the boy in, Yue Zhong finally snapped. His eyes flashed with a cold light, and he shot forwards like an arrow, with his blade swinging down on the right hand of



the local, before grabbing the local and throwing him into the pot.

The moment the local was submerged in the boiling water, he let out a piercing scream of agony, his entire body instantly turning red as he struggled and thrashed about.

The moment Yue Zhong made a move, he had no intention of showing mercy. The spectating locals screamed and flailed about as Yue Zhong began to grab them and threw all into the pot.

With a flash of his blade, he cut the bindings on the Chinese children who were tied up.

He eyed them all and threw a number of blades and .54 guns onto the ground, saying: "I'm Yue Zhong, and I'm here to save you. If you have the guts, pick up the weapons, and come with me to kill these fucking monkeys. Those who're scared, you can hide yourself. There are no saviors in this world, only guns and weapons are your salvation."

If these Chinese kids were in China, Yue Zhong would have assigned someone to come protect them. But they were in Country A right now, and most of the Chinese here were sheep. What Yue Zhong needed were hungry wolves, and the more wild they were the better. Kind and passive people would find it hard to survive in this hell-like world now.

The kids eyed the weapons, and one particular 12-year-old stepped forward with a resolute look in his eyes, as he picked up a gun and blade, before walking towards Yue Zhong. His voice was filled with a raging killing intent as he spoke: "I'm Li Ying. I'll follow you! As long as you can take me to kill these bastards, I'm yours to command!! Whoever you want me to kill, I'll kill!!"

Adults had their mindsets and were hard to change. As for kids, they could be resilient, and when they became ferocious, they could be even more scary than adults. Because in their simple-mindedness, killing a person might not be that different to killing an ant. Some of them even lacked empathy towards other life

forms.

With Li Ying stepping out, the rest immediately bent to pick up the weapons, and stood around Yue Zhong like little wolf cubs. Only 4 of them remained, not knowing what to do, while their faces were full of fear.

With a flip of his hands, an assault rifle suddenly appeared. He raised it and sprayed at the locals. Regardless of gender or age, as long as they were locals and appeared in his sight, he would gun them down.

To him, they were enemies, as well as a bunch of beasts. He had never shown mercy to his enemies. Even for the kids, they were just as vicious and cruel on the battlefield to him, and if one wasn't careful, one might fall prey to them.

During the Sino-Vietnamese war, plenty of Chinese soldiers had fallen at the hands of the Vietnamese women and children because they went soft.

"The safety of the guns are already off, Li Ying, take me to where the Chinese people are gathered." Yue Zhong did not bother about those kids who could not come to a decision, and instead, led Li Ying and the rest away, killing any locals that appeared along the way. What he needed now were wolves, not pigs. If he stayed behind to protect the weak-minded ones, he would just be digging a grave for himself.

Li Ying continued to point the way as he ran to keep up with Yue Zhong. He soon led them to a place where one was instantly struck by a putrid stench, of which blood and rotting corpses could be seen everywhere. "There! It's right there!! That's where the locals have been keeping us captive!"

Outside the camp, there were 12 locals wielding heavy machine guns and rifles and they instantly charged towards Yue Zhong, firing madly.

Yue Zhong roared out: “Get down!”

Li Ying and the rest might not have gone through any special training, but they ducked with agility, seeking cover. Only one of them responded slightly slower, and was struck in the body by countless bullets.

When the kids saw their comrade gunned down, having no prior battle experience, they begun to tremble, as their eyes filled with crippling fear.

In mid-air, a nether hole appeared and White Bones leaped out, before standing beside Yue Zhong.

“Wipe them out!”

White Bones was more suitable for slaughtering these enemies that lacked heavy firearms.

Its demonic eyes were ablaze with fire, as it charged into the fray, ignoring the bullets flying at it.

The projectiles were only able to bounce off of White Bones’ body. It waved its powerful black Bone Axe, and sliced through the 12 militants instantly.

Yue Zhong called out in a loud voice: “I’m Yue Zhong, I’ve now killed the locals guarding this cell. Those with guts bring your weapons and come out with me now to kill the rest!”

After a while, a number of Chinese survivors came out.

“Kill those bastards! I’ll come with you!”

“Me too!”

A number of survivors who had deep grudges with the locals came pouring out, but there were still over 200 of them who maintained their silence.

A middle-aged man came out, and his face red as though he was agitated: “Listen to me!! Everybody, calm down!! If we go against Mr. Hartono, he will kill us all! Your families will be turned into

food! They will punish you all with all sorts of torture! Yue Zhong, you get the hell out. We don't need your rescuing. You're not helping us like this, you're gonna kill us! Are you trying to kill us?!"

This guy was called Wang Wei, and he was whole-heartedly trying to side with the locals. He believed that as long as they continued to show their warmth and lack of retaliation, the locals would accept them.

# Chapter 586: Massacre!

---

Wang Wei pointed at Yue Zhong and rebuked loudly: “Look, everybody, this guy is a Chinese from China! We will solve our problems our own way as mixed-Chinese!! Scram!!”

There were some who were fated to serve others their entire lives. This person was the epitome of such a character, whose weak will and cowardice caused others harm. They only knew to bully those weaker than them, and did not know how to fight for their own.

“Go to hell!” Yue Zhong’s eyes flashed coldly and immediately fired a shot at his head.

In between Wang Wei’s brows, a new bullet hole emerged, and his eyes were full of shock and disbelief as he crumpled to the ground.

Seeing this, all the survivors felt their faces drain of color, as some began screaming and receding back into the camp in fear. After so much torture and humiliation, fear has been drilled deep into their mindset. Even at the moment of death, they would only know how to grovel and beg for their lives.

Yue Zhong glared and cussed: “Useless waste!”

However, not all of them were utter trash, as a few women with multiple scars all over their bodies came out silently, picked up the guns on the ground. There were a few men that had tattoos all over their bodies, who looked to be ruffians prior to the apocalypse, that came forward as well, picking up the blades that Yue Zhong had given out. Their eyes shone with a bloody light.

These hoodlums would have been considered the cancer of society during peaceful times. However, in such a chaotic world now, they dared to fight and risk their lives, and would survive even better than ordinary people. Han Xing, Han Shi Zhong and

many other famous generals were of such modest backgrounds as well.

One particular man with a white tiger tattoo over his right shoulder and a bald head, of about 1.7m height stepped forward. His eyes were full of a vengeful hatred as he spoke: “Boss Yue Zhong, I’m Lin Guang Ming! If you bring me to kill those bastards, my life will be yours to command!!”

“Count me, Chen Qi, in!”

“Count me, Li Yuan Hao...” A number of rough-looking men who would usually be avoided before the apocalypse came forward, before calling out loudly.

It was not all of the Chinese who lacked humanity, it was just that many of these mixed-Chinese have been brought up to tolerate, to put in hard work, and to not resist. No one taught them how to stand up for themselves.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze over these 30 men and women, and he was pleased: “Good!”

As for those who ran to hide back in the camp, Yue Zhong would not care about them. With 30 survivors willing to join in the battle, to him, it was already an added bonus. It was not like he couldn’t take on the entire camp himself.

The commotion wasn’t small, and very soon, the rest of the locals had been alerted, and a number of gun-toting militants rushed over, surrounded the place.

One particular officer began shouting in the local language.

Yue Zhong had no understanding of the language and asked Li Ying: “What’s he saying?”

Li Ying’s body was trembling in rage as he relayed the message: “He’s shouting for us to surrender, otherwise he will break our limbs, and throw into the wok to cook and eat. These beasts love to fry people alive. Especially children.”

As the world collapsed, many people had succumbed to their inner demons and depravity. Apparently, this tribe of locals had gone over the edge. Yue Zhong eyed them and ordered coldly: “So it’s like this, White Bones, go slaughter the whole lot of them!”

White Bones immediately set forth with his demonic eyes ablaze.

The local militants began to fire at White Bones wildly.

The bullets just bounced off White Bones’ body, as it charged through the rain of bullets into the midst of the locals. 10 sharp bone blades shot out from its body, and it began to twirl around, turning into a meat grinder slicing the surrounding locals apart.

The surrounding locals were either decapitated or slashed at their waist. Some even had their hearts directly pierced. Their deaths were quick and gruesome.

After White Bones casually dealt with over 30 men, the rest of them immediately crumbled and sought to escape, some also abandoned their weapons and ran, while others got down on the floor and hugged their heads.

When Lin Guang Ming and the rest saw this, they were stunned. When these locals had killed and tortured them, they were like tigers, yet in a short span of time, Yue Zhong had already caused them to be either kneeling, begging or running for their lives. The Chinese survivors could not believe their eyes.

Yue Zhong pointed at those locals who were kneeling with their hands hugging their heads and gave an order to Lin Guang Ming and the rest: “Go pick up their ammunition. We’re not holding captives. Kill them all!”

Since Lin Guang Ming and the rest lacked killing aura, Yue Zhong wanted to make use of these unfortunate locals to cultivate their murderous intents. Those whose had never seen blood before were vastly different from those who have.

“Yes, Boss Yue!!” A fierce intent appeared in Lin Guang Ming’s

eyes, as he hollered while charging at those locals: “Brothers! Follow me as we kill these damn bastards!!”

Lin Guang Ming swept up a blade and thrust it viciously into the body of one local, before pulling it out, effectively slicing his abdomen area, causing the local to scream out in agony.

With Lin Guang Ming rising to the occasion, those Chinese survivors that had willingly stood forward immediately charged, picking up the guns that the militants had abandoned and killing all the parties who had surrendered.

The moment the armed forces collapsed, the entire base fell into chaos. Many of the locals tried to use their weapons and kill the survivors they detained first before escaping. Some even took the chance to kill their own comrades, stealing their resources, setting fire to the huts, plunging everything into chaos.

White Bones took the lead, with Lin Guang Ming and the other survivors charging behind. Regardless of who they saw, be it men or women, young or old, as long as they were locals, they would kill. Fresh blood dyed the entire place.

Countless locals were being slaughtered by the group of survivors. They begged and shrieked for their lives, hoping for mercy. However, Lin Guang Ming and the rest were overcome by bloodlust and their unforgettable memories of the treatment they had received, and used their weapons to end the lives of all these people.

Yue Zhong watched all of this from behind, it was something he had done himself as well. In Vietnam, because of the actions of Ngô Nhâm Hoảng (previously translated as Wuyan Hong), Yue Zhong had killed a town of 4,000 survivors in a fit of anger.

These locals had been acting worse than humans, and their actions were comparable to Ngô Nhâm Hoảng, and even surpassing him in depravity. Yue Zhong would naturally not allow them to live.



After slaughtering over a hundred of them, the experts of the base finally appeared.

20 Enhancers appeared, each of them wearing all sorts of strange equipment.

When Lin Guang Ming saw them, his face fell as he called out: “Not good! Boss, these are all experts with powers. They’re the strongest experts in Country A. Even special forces aren’t a match for them. I’ve had a Special Forces friend who had died at their hands! Please tell Boss White to be careful!!”

A look of fear also flashed past the faces of the dozens of Chinese survivors behind Lin Guang Ming. To them, Enhancers were people way above them, more so those with special abilities. They could not hope to stand up to them. Even with guns, there was no assurance that they could live.

Yue Zhong eyed them and called out coldly: “Just a bunch of ants!”

He then pulled out his Stinger and flashed forward like a shadow, firing 6 times consecutively.

Following those shots, 6 of the high-level Enhancers immediately crumpled to the floor, with their heads blasted apart in a shower of flesh and blood.

When the other 14 experts saw this, their eyes were filled with shock.

Without letting them recover from their stupor, Yue Zhong pointed at them and 14 balls of Devil Flame appeared out of thin air, shooting towards them and exploding at their heads, blasting them to pieces.

Lin Guang Ming could not help but stammer with his mouth wide open: “Strong...strong!! Too strong!!”

A look of amazement appeared in his eyes.

Those survivors who had chosen to follow Yue Zhong could not believe their eyes as well. They were now filled with not just gratitude and respect, now there was a sense of awe and reverence. Such a killing god was their leader, and they believed strongly that there was a chance for them to survive in the future.

Those 20 Enhancers possessed the greatest might out of the 2,000-over people in this base, and with their deaths, no one else dared to step out to stop Yue Zhong. Many tried to make a run for it.

There were some who also wisely chose to surrender, hoping to live on. After all, there were no cases of Chinese committing genocide overseas, and they prayed with all their might that Yue Zhong was the same.

The entire base was soon under Yue Zhong's grasp. He had captured a total of 1,300 locals, and over 300 sheep-like Chinese survivors.

He then proceeded to slaughter over 700 of those who had participated in the killings of the mixed-Chinese, creating a river of blood right there in the base.

After controlling the town, he gathered everyone in the wide open area.

“From today onwards, I'm your master, your king. I will announce now, that Li Ying is now the commander of the Youth Guards, Country An Branch. Lin Guang Ming is the commander of the Country A 1st Battalion, Chen Qi, the commander of the 2nd Battalion, and Wang Qi the commander of the 3rd.

“As of today forth, under my authority, Li Ying, Lin Guang Ming...etc, these 47 people are 1st grade citizens, they're protected by the law, as for the rest of the Chinese survivors, you will be considered 5th grade citizens. All the locals are considered slaves!!”

# Chapter 587: Slavery!

---

“Only citizens possess the right to copulate and build families. 5th grade commoners and slaves have no rights. They must bow when they see citizens. Slaves must kneel.”

“The official language will be Chinese. Anyone found conversing in other languages in public areas will be punished accordingly. Citizens will be downgraded, and 5th grade commoners will become slaves. Slaves will be put to death.” Yue Zhong swept his gaze coldly across the field, announcing this cruel and harsh rule.

Li Ying stood beside Yue Zhong and translated for everyone present.

“I have something to say!” At this time, a Chinese survivor stepped up, speaking in a self-righteous manner: “Yue Zhong, it is an era of human rights. By implementing slavery, it’s going against the very fibre of society. The best method is to establish a democracy now, and allow us citizens to select our own leaders. We mixed-Chinese will forever remember your favor.”

“That’s right!! Yue Zhong, indeed, you have saved us, and for that, we’re grateful. However, if you want to implement this slave system, what joke are you trying to pull? We want our rights and freedom!!”

“Democracy!! We Chinese must have a position on the council, Yue Zhong. As long as you establish one, and allow us to be members, we will support you fully!!!” The weak-minded Chinese began calling for blood and got excited.

Under their agitation, some of the locals also began to stir.

Yue Zhong eyed these people coolly, they had been reluctant to fight against the locals for their lives, yet were willing to challenge their own race for their own benefits, and he laughed coldly, with a billowing killing intent: “Are you done?”

Seeing that cold smile and feeling his killing intent, the mixed-Chinese felt a chill in their hearts, and immediately clammed up.

Yue Zhong waved his hand: “Since you’re done, it’s time for you to be on your way!”

Li Guang Ming and Li Ying swiftly brought men and rounded up those who called out the loudest.

“What are you doing? Release me!! I’m Chinese, you hear, your fellow countrymen!! You can’t do this!”

“What are you doing?!”

“No! No!!” Those that were dragged out began to cry for help.

Yue Zhong looked at them coolly, and spoke: “Fools! Here, my word is law. My words shall be obeyed, and those who disobey, will only have one outcome. Death!! Execute them!!”

Li Ying brought the members of the Youth Corp and eyed those troublemakers coldly. They held guns to their heads and pulled the triggers.

Peng! Peng!

A number of corpses crumpled to the floor.

When they witnessed this, fear flashed past the faces of the mixed-Chinese survivors. They had dared to cause unrest because they had assumed Yue Zhong was a fellow Chinese and would not kill them. They never thought that he would snap and kill them like livestock without batting an eyelid. This resulted in a renewed respect and fear towards him.

Yue Zhong then turned his attention to the locals: “Some of you slaves had dared to move earlier. Kill those who moved, including their entire families! Drag them out and execute them now!”

Li Ying and Lin Guang Ming turned towards the locals.

The locals immediately surrounded Li Ying and Lin Guang Ming tightly, sealing their movements. They were evidently more united

than the Chinese.

Yue Zhong looked at them and ordered: “Kill those who resist! Open fire!!”

10 light machine guns who were already aimed at the locals immediately fired, and a rain of bullets fell upon the locals.

As the bullets fell, a number of them were punched full of holes, with blood splattering everywhere. Those who had tried to block Li Ying and the rest immediately fell in pools of their own blood, groaning in agony.

The subordinates then stepped forward and used their blades to end the lives of those locals. The rest of them shivered uncontrollably, and eyed Yue Zhong on the stage, while their faces drained of color.

“Let me make myself clear for the last time. Those who disobey will face death.” He eyed them all coldly, before continuing: “Those who perform well and gain merit, will have the chance to be rewarded.”

“If you want to be a 1st grade citizen, killing the enemy is the fastest way. For each enemy killed, you will gain one merit point. 5th grade citizens require 2 merit points to upgrade to a 4th grade. Each grade is the same. Therefore. A 5th grade slave will have to kill 40 enemies to convert to a 5th grade citizen. 5th grade commoners will have to kill 20 to become a 5th grade citizen to be able to have access to mates and ensure your family line. Before exchanging your points to become a citizen, 1 merit point can be exchanged for one-time copulation.”

“Resources will be handed based on your classification as well.”

Yue Zhong then said indifferently: “I’m now giving you a chance to turn your lives and situation around. I’m selecting 20 soldiers from the commoners, and 50 soldiers from the slaves. Those who want to change their destinies, go report to Li Ying and Lin Guang

Ming.”

A young Chinese immediately charged over to Lin Guang Ming and exclaimed loudly: “Me!! I’m willing to be a soldier and kill our enemies!!”

“Me, me! I used to be a farmer, I have strength!!”

“I’m a carpenter, my body is sturdy...” After hearing what Yue Zhong said, a number of Chinese survivors who initially had no interest in joining the army immediately volunteered. They surrounded the subordinates of Yue Zhong as they knew that it was truly a chance to turn their fates around. If they missed it, they would have to live like ants, without any capacity for pride.

Yue Zhong’s words were translated by Li Ying for the locals, and they scrambled to be picked as well.

Yue Zhong then ordered: “Li Jing Ren, bring some people to teach the rest Chinese.”

Seeing that Yue Zhong had conquered the base, Li Jing Ren and the rest decided to stay, after all, there were zombies and Mutant Beasts out there, and without food or water, they wouldn’t survive beyond a week.

Li Jing Ren responded by bowing, and replying respectfully: “Yes! Boss Yue!!”

After settling things down, Yue Zhong came to a luxurious spring nearby and got in.

“Ah, comfortable!”

His entire body was submerged in the hot water, and felt his blood circulating. He let out a long breath, before whisking out the Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake blood essence, and swallowing it.

The moment he gobbled it, it turned into hot currents of energy that looked like snakes, and they began transforming his body from within.

It was fortunate that his Endurance was extremely high, and hence could withstand the might of that blood essence. A normal person might explode from the forceful energy. The energy kept on rushing within his body, as it was slowly absorbed and converted into his own strength.

“Congratulations on gaining 15 Strength, 5 Spirit, and 10 Endurance points in enhancement.”

When his body finished absorbing the huge amount of energy, a sound of notification resounded in his mind.

He then threw the blood essence of the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish into his mouth as well, without hesitating.

The moment the blood essence went into his body, it turned into powerful balls of lightning energy and exploded within him, as though they were trying to tear his body apart. Lightning charges could be seen emitting from his body from an onlooker viewpoint.

Under its constant explosion, Yue Zhong felt like his insides were being pricked constantly, as though numerous blades were slicing through him. The pain was almost unbearable. His cells were being blasted apart, before mending themselves quickly with the lightning-based energy, strengthening him.

“Congratulations on gaining 15 Spirit, and 10 Endurance points in enhancement.”

“Hu! My strength has increased again!” After fully absorbing that huge amount of energy, Yue Zhong slowly opened his eyes, and smiled faintly.

When one’s strength reached this stage, it was incredibly difficult to push to the next threshold. Killing multiple Type 3 Mutant Beasts might not work as well. Only by killing those Type 4 Mutant Beasts would allow him to level normally. However, every single one of those behemoths were extremely powerful. Even he did not have full confidence in dealing with them. Swallowing the

2 Type 4 blood essenced had boosted his power a lot.

Early the next day, Yue Zhong brought Li Ying and his troops, as well as Lin Guang Ming's troops, and launched an assault on a nearby establishment that had about a 1,000 people.

With White Bones joining the fray, it easily killed about a dozen locals, wiping out the Enhancers amongst them. The rest of the locals immediately collapsed and surrendered to Yue Zhong.

After killing yet another 400 locals who had participated in killing of Chinese, he continued to sweep through the nearby bases and factions, thoroughly swallowing them up and bringing them under his control.

At the same time, out at sea, Zhao Tian Gang had managed to radio for reinforcements, and the Shizuoka Prefecture had deployed Bai Xiao Sheng as well as 40 Evolvers to assist Yue Zhong.

With this deployment, Yue Zhong became even more relaxed. Every single one of them had the strength to face an armed force of over 100. With them here, Yue Zhong could easily move out in all 4 directions to sweep through the establishments, crushing them all entirely, and bringing the resources back.

By the end of 10 days, they had amassed a group of 7,000 locals, 3,000 Chinese, and they began to start anew. In fact, the total number of locals had numbered over 20,000 initially, but over 13,000 of them had participated in depraved acts as well as the slaughter of Chinese. Yue Zhong thus decided to kill them all.

At the same time, he managed to gather about 400 Chinese soldiers, of which, there were about 130 children who were still young that formed the Youth Corp, and were fiercely loyal to him.



# Chapter 588: Country A Northern Coalition!

---

By the sea, Yue Zhong ordered the little mermaid: “Summon the sea Mutant Beasts!”

The little Queen Mermaid stared back at him with a stubborn look, and her lips pursed tightly. Right now, she was wearing a blue dress, and her fins have transformed into legs. She looked just like a beautiful loli, without a hint of the myth-like mermaid traits.

Yue Zhong eyed her coldly and said: “You’re not willing to listen? Good! Masako, come over here and make sure to guide her properly!”

“Hai!” Beside Yue Zhong, the sexy and mature female instructor bowed, before walking towards the little mermaid.

When the little mermaid saw Masako approaching her, an expression of fear came over her face, as she began to squeal in some broken Chinese: “No....no!!!”

The little mermaid was the Queen of her race after all, and her talents were naturally astounding. Her intelligence was superior, and she had quickly picked up some simple Chinese. However, even so, she was still filled with dread towards the instructor Masako, and her fear towards her surpassed even that towards Yue Zhong.

As a personal instructor, Masako had no tenderness or care towards another female. She was extremely harsh and strict, which caused the little mermaid to be scared of her.

Yue Zhong ordered coldly: “Summon the Mutant Beasts! Only call the lower-level ones.”

The mermaid dared not disobey any further, and opened her mouth to croon in a mystical but strangely soothing sound.

The voice continued to spread out towards the sea, after a period of time, the surface of the water churned, and a number of Mutant

Sandworms and Mutant Sea Lice began to swarm out of the water.

Yue Zhong nodded in satisfaction when he counted over a hundred of them, and said: “Alright, that’s enough!”

In response, the little mermaid stared hatefully at Yue Zhong, while her fair and exquisite face crunched up. She was pissed at Yue Zhong’s demand of her, but she had no choice. After all, she was his captive, and if she disobeyed, the alternative was scarier.

Yue Zhong pointed to the Mutant Beast horde and told Li Ying and the rest who were wielding Tang Replica Swords: “Eliminate them!”

These Mutant Beasts were precisely intended to hone the people under him to become Enhancers.

Li Ying, who had cut his hair short, and wore a small military uniform, held a Dark Magic Blade as his voice rang out clearly above his comrades: “For the Leader! Charge!!”

The Youth Corp immediately charged forward with high spirits as they all shouted out: “For the Leader!!”

Bai Xiao Sheng, White Bones, and 20 other Evolvers stood aside to watch over the Youth Corp, ensuring that they weren’t in any mortal danger.

The beasts that the Mermaid Queen had summon were basically Type 1 monsters. Those that were dangerous enough that could threaten the Youth Corp had been dealt with by Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest.

With the protection of those elite soldiers, Li Ying and the rest of the young soldiers began to rise quickly in level, reaching Level 10 within a short span of time, and their momentum wasn’t stopping.

Yue Zhong looked at the stubborn little mermaid and the corners of his mouth lifted slightly: “This little mermaid is truly a treasure. As long as I can control her, I can train up an entire army of Enhancers.”

He said: “I shall give you a name. Hai Lan.”

When the little mermaid heard Yue Zhong giving her a name, she turned her head to the side out of spite, not saying anything.

When Masako saw that, her face became frosty as she barked: “Hai Lan. What’s the meaning of your attitude? Master has kindly given you a name, it’s an honor. You’re not thanking him, do you want to be kept in the dark house later, and taste the true meaning of hell?”

A hint of fear flashed in Hai Lan’s eyes, as she turned back to Yue Zhong reluctantly, before speaking in broken Chinese: “Thank...you...Master!”

Yue Zhong eyed Masako with amusement: “Good!”

When he had contacted Japan, and raised the issue of the little mermaid, Kira Waichi had suggested to send Masako over. Indeed, within days, she had managed to train Hai Lan to be slightly more controllable.

She bowed towards Yue Zhong, while responding with an alluring smile: “Thank you for your praise, Master.”

Although her looks wasn’t consider the cream of the crop, her methods and the way she carried herself was extremely feminine, and even more mesmerizing than some top beauties.

Yue Zhong made use of Hai Lan’s strength as much as he could, and within a span of 3 days, he managed to raise Li Ying and the rest of the Youth Corp to become Level 30 Enhancers. Lin Guang Ming and the rest of the mixed-Chinese had been trained to Level 10 as well. Having formed a unit of decent fighters, they managed to gain over a ton of Mutant Beast meat from the nearby areas as well.

As Yue Zhong was raising a unit, there were finally some movements from the locals.

Although Yue Zhong had taken over almost all of the smaller

factions around, there were still 3 large bases that had over 10,000 survivors.. They were the Country A Revolutionary Committee, Country A Renaissance and the Country A Empire.

Each of these factions controlled over 3,000 survivors each, and had a decent number of Enhancers.

There were many lazy and brutal people among the current generation, but likewise, there were geniuses as well. Country A was no different. These 3 factions were formed from the geniuses that had survived since the apocalypse.

Within a lavish mansion, there were many beautiful Chinese women who were naked, posing in various areas within the mansion, giving it a sort of a lustful atmosphere.

A middle-aged man who wore a suit, a huge thick gold ring on his thumb, and had a head full of spiky hair spoke: “The current situation is like this. That Chinese guy called Yue Zhong has already established his own kingdom, and discriminated against our fellow locals, branding them as slaves. What do you think?”

This man was called Bencito and he was the leader of the Country A Revolutionary Committee. Prior to the apocalypse, he had been an ordinary farmer. When the apocalypse set in, he had relied on his decisive and vicious methods, as well as his strength attained when he naturally awakened as an Evolver to conquer and rule over a small area, forming his own faction.

On the other side, there was a burly man with gold hair that snorted: “Kill him! Country A belongs to us locals! That Chinese trash actually dared to come here, he truly doesn’t know death.”

Country A had been a Western colony in the past, and this burly, gold-hair man was called Paulos, and he was a mixed blood of Western and Country A descent. He was the leader of the Country A Renaissance, and was a powerful Evolver in his own right.

Bencito gazed at the remaining young handsome man, who

looked about 23 or 24, with an absolute beauty in his arms, as he said: “My sentiments exactly. That Chinese pig is truly arrogant, and even the Europeans dare not treat us like slaves. He dared to kill our people, and brand our people as slaves. He truly is a beast. Lenny, if you don’t join us, then you’re our enemy. Paulos and I will definitely not let you off.”

Lenny was the leader of the remaining faction, the Country A Empire. When he heard that, he chuckled and said: “Good! I’ll join you in eradicating Yue Zhong. However, all the virgins under him belong to me. Other than that, I want 1/3 of the spoils as well.”

As the leader of the Country A Empire, Lenny had kept many beautiful women into his harem after establishing his faction. Right now, there were over 500 women in his harem, and his favourite pastime was to toy with beautiful virgins.

“Aright!”

“Fine!”

Both Paulos and Bencito agreed to his request.

With these 3 heads coming to an agreement, they began to deploy large number of weapons in preparations for combat. Each of these 3 factions had an elite troop of over a thousand soldiers each, as well as numerous cannon fodder.

The 3 factions mobilized quickly, and when they gathered, their total strength numbered 3,000 and together with the even larger group of slave troops, they marched towards Yue Zhong’s base.

This was the largest and most powerful troop right now in the whole Northern side of Country A. They had 20 tanks, over a hundred armored vehicles, and 20 self-propelling rocket launchers. This sort of strength was enough to quell any enemy faction.

From a high location, Yue Zhong had brought Li Ying, Lin Guang Ming, Bai Xiao Sheng, and the rest of his subordinates as they

looked toward the distance.

Seeing the large army marching towards them, there was a severe look in the eyes of Lin Guang Ming, Chen Qi, Li Yuan Hao and some of the new commanders. They had only 400 subordinates, and many of them were Enhancers but had not yet truly experienced war. They had no prior training, and were considered to be a motley crew out there on the battlefield. How would they be a match for this incoming army?

Yue Zhong looked at those enemies and he laughed coldly: “Are they finally coming here?”

Lin Guang Ming suggested: “Leader! Why don’t we spread out into the forests and fight them with guerilla warfare? After the troops have enough experience, we can fight back?”

Yue Zhong declined: “No need! We will thoroughly crush them today, and let them experience our might!”

Lin Guang Ming retreated without saying anymore, as his eyes flashed fiercely with a look of excitement. As long as they could slaughter these locals, he was willing to risk his all, even if he had to die at the end. He had made the suggestion not because he was scared, but he just wanted to live on to kill even more of the locals.

The huge Country A troop followed the major road, and their spirits were high, as though they weren’t afraid of being ambushed. With their strength, anyone who did so was just courting death.

# Chapter 589: Defeating the Country A Northern Coalition!

---

“Attack!” Yue Zhong shouted into the radio communications.

4 Thunder Fighters shot through the air, before arriving in the space above the locals and releasing a large number of cluster bombs.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Following the earth-shaking explosions, the locals troops were instantly engulfed in flames, as a large number of them were blasted apart, with their limbs separated from their bodies. Some even burned as they ran, without any way to extinguish the fire as they screamed in pain.

The 4 Thunder Fighters continued to fire their weapons at the troops as though they were slaughtering chicken and dogs, turning the armored vehicles and tanks into scrap metal full of holes.

Under that ferocious assault, the Country A troops were instantly devastated and thrown into chaos. Those mixed-Chinese and locals who made up the slave army quickly escaped in all directions. Even if the commanders killed a few of those deserters, there was no way of fully stopping this flood.

However, the 3,000-strong elite troop did not collapse. Although they had suffered some losses, they managed to duck for cover, and raised their guns to fire back into the sky.

Yue Zhong saw the moment that the elites were forced to take cover, and his eyes flashed coldly as he ordered: “Do it!! Charge, and kill those animals!”

After that, Yue Zhong led Bai Xiao Sheng, Li Ying, White Bones and the various experts as they charged out from a corner.

The elite troops of the 3 factions might be decent in combat, but

having suffered a sudden assault and being forced to take cover, they had no way of regrouping to face the sudden situation.

Under the fearsome attacks of White Bones and Bai Xiao Sheng, the elites of the 3 factions were slowly picked off one by one.

As for the 4 Thunder Fighters, after they were done with their cluster bomb attack, they rose into the skies, and fired guided missiles at the various armored vehicles of the Country A Northern Coalition, severely impairing their strength.

Bencito roared out in anger: “Damn!! Why is it like this? How come?!”

In his plans, they should have been able to slaughter their way through Yue Zhong’s city. He would try to resist before collapsing, and they would be able to conquer the enemies, at a little cost. They would then pillage and rob and slaughter the Chinese. However, now, they were actually being held back by 4 fearsome flying metal behemoths, and they had suffered so many casualties already. It couldn’t even be called an exchange, as Yue Zhong’s sudden attack had claimed the lives of so many of their subordinates.

Right at this time, a large green silhouette swooped down from the skies, with each flap of its wings, the natural ability of wind was summoned, and the wind formed countless sharp blades as they tore through the Country A Northern Coalition.

As the wind blades sliced cruelly through the air, over a hundred soldiers were instantly decapitated from that single attack, and countless headless corpses slumped to the ground.

Bencito took a look at the Type 3 Greenie in the sky, his eyes flashing with fear and shock: “Type 3 Mutant Beast! Why is there such a terrifying beast on their side?! Who is that Yue Zhong exactly? How can he tame such a monster?!”

Any Type 3 Mutant Beast was a fearsome existence. Just one



could easily smash through an entire rifleman battalion. The aerial ones were the hardest to deal with, though their defences might not be much, their speed and their natural advantage in the air made it near impossible for the humans to hurt them.

Even the Gun Demon from Takama-ga-hara only had the ability to threaten them, but it was not a guarantee that he could face them on his own. As for other people, it was naturally harder.

Greenie did not stop to rest at all, instead, it continued to flap around furiously, slicing apart numerous soldiers.

Lenny's eyes were bloodshot, and had lost all of his swaggering manner from earlier. He was like an injured wild beast as he roared at Bencito and Paulos: "What do we do?! What do we do?! What do we do now?!"

Lenny had never faced an aerial attack before, and he wasn't some military expert. He had just been relying on his own strength to conquer other people. However, facing the terrifying Thunder Fighters, he was helpless.

These aerial beasts were simply not something Lenny could handle.

The expressions of Bencito and Paulos were also ugly, as they were similarly at a loss. They weren't military people, and they had managed to get to where they were through their strength. Facing such a situation, they really did not know what to do.

As they were contemplating their next move, the situation on the battlefield changed drastically. Under Yue Zhong's lead, Bai Xiao Sheng and White Bones charged out with numerous high-level Evolvers, slaughtering hundreds of the Country A soldiers. They started to collapse as they tried to escape.

They didn't possess high fighting wills in the first place, and their combat sense was even weaker, their equipment was lacking, and their combat strength was almost non-existent in the face of

the Thunder Fighters and superior elite soldiers under Yue Zhong. In fact, it was hard to compare them with those from the Kingdom of God and Vietnam as well. They were only used to lording over common citizens. After they lost hundreds of their comrades, their will crumbled, and they abandoned everything as they tried to run.

Yue Zhong looked at the scrambling forces of the Country A Northern Coalition and his eyes flashed with a little surprise. He had not expected them to actually collapse so quickly. However, he did not let go of the opportunity as he hollered: “Kill!!”

Li Ying, Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest followed close behind him as they charged at the soldiers, killing any they came across. These soldiers were already broken in spirit, and were only fleeing for their lives, with their backs towards Yue Zhong and his team. There were some who even got down on the ground and begged for their lives, but were immediately slaughtered.

Bencito spoke in a low voice: “I’ll go reorganize some resistance. You guys quickly think of a countermeasure.”

“Fool. You truly are a farmer, fool. You still want to think of resisting. Running right now should be the priority. But just as well, with you blocking, we can escape better.”

Lenny thought coldly in his heart, but his face still wore a sincere expression: “Bencito, then, we’ll rely on you. We’ll definitely think of a way to defeat them.”

Bencito nodded and swiftly left the command centre.

The moment he left, Lenny and Paulos began to gather their troops. They wanted to gather as much as they could before they retreated. Although there was nothing they could do to Yue Zhong, but against the other Country A factions, these soldiers were still necessary.

Bencito had not left the command centre for long when an officer ran in hastily to report to Lenny: “Liege, Bencito had escaped. He

also brought his trusted aides with him!”

“WHAT?! THAT DAMN BASTARD RAN!!”

Lenny and Paulos almost threw up blood when they heard the news. With Bencito’s escape, they were at the mercy of the soldiers of Yue Zhong.

Lenny hastily ordered: “Scatter! Scatter!! Convey my orders!! All of you have to flee now!!”

With such an order Lenny and Paulos quickly brought their men and abandoned their forces as they ran.

This order was conveyed, and the entire Country A Northern Coalition crumbled. It was every man for himself, as the soldiers abandoned their stations and weapons, not caring about anything else but their lives.

The 400 soldiers under Yue Zhong, on the other hand, grew braver with bloodlust, as they chased down the soldiers. While these soldiers might have also collapsed if they were on the losing end, they were now winning, hence, they went all out to assure their victory. Furthermore, their bodies had been enhanced since becoming Enhancers, and it was a breeze to them.

Yue Zhong led them in killing over 3,000 members of the Country A Northern Coalition, and managed to capture a number of the locals as well as mixed-Chinese.

Yue Zhong did not stop with the advantage, and led them on a conquest towards the nearest Country A Revolutionary Committee.

Within the territory of the Country A Revolutionary Committee, there was an old rundown building, surrounded by a layer of wooden fence. There were no city walls, nor any moats. There weren’t even any fortifications.

The few guards outside the fence were instantly taken down by White Bones, and Yue Zhong commanded his troops as they

charged into the territory.

All the troops had been eradicated from the Country A Revolutionary Committee, and what was left was just a bunch of untrained soldiers. The place was easily taken over by Yue Zhong in a short while.

One military officer ran towards Bencito with a pale face: “Sir!! Yue Zhong had brought his troops and they’re killing their way in!!”

Bencito stood up in rage: “What?! He dared to bring his troops here. Damn bastard, you think I’m easily to bully. Come! Let’s go wipe them out!”

This Country A Revolutionary Committee was after all Bencito’s base, he had no place else to go, and could only choose to face Yue Zhong.

He gathered 50 Level 30 elite soldiers and came to an area where Yue Zhong and his troops were sure to come.

He then hollered out in Chinese: “I’m the leader of the Country A Revolutionary Committee, Bencito. Get Yue Zhong out here to talk to me!!”

Bencito had also learnt the Language Proficiency Ability, allowing him to converse in Chinese.

Yue Zhong walked out and barked coldly: “I’m Yue Zhong! What do you have to say, spit it out!”

Bencito immediately spoke: “Yue Zhong, as long as you take your troops and leave here, I can forget about what transpired here today. On top of that, I will send you a 100 virgins, a 1000 tonnes of food, and a 100 tonnes of fuel. I’m willing to become your ally, and eradicate the other 2 Country A factions with you!”

# Chapter 590: Swallowing 2 cities!

---

As long as he could live, Bencito was willing to compromise anyone else, even the friends and allies that he had forged relationships with.

Yue Zhong's tone was cold: "You only have 2 choices, surrender unconditionally, or die."

Bencito's face fell, his expression ugly: "Yue Zhong, don't push people too far! With my military strength, if we were to resist with all our might, your subordinates would suffer as well. If I want to escape, you can't stop me at all! You should consider having one more friend than one more foe!"

"Is that so?" A frosty voice suddenly appeared by Bencito's side, and his heart was filled with an unprecedented sense of crisis. Just as he was about to activate his skill, a blade flashed past his neck.

Bencito's head flew through the air, his eyes filled with shock and disbelief. There was only the silhouette of Yue Zhong in his eyes.

Yue Zhong had used his Clone Technique and Stealth ability to fool Bencito's eyes, and slaughtered this genius expert easily.

Bencito was not weak, but unfortunately, in the face of Yue Zhong's attack, he was helpless.

"Attack!!" Yue Zhong barked out coolly, as he activated his Shadow Steps, and turned into a spectre, charging towards the rest of the local experts that had yet to react.

With a flash of his blade, the experts fell like sheep as Yue Zhong killed them easily.

"Kill!" Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest of the elite Evolvers activated their own abilities and surged forwards, drowning the rest of the Country A experts.

The moment Bencito was killed, the rest of the experts felt a chill

down their spines as they tried to escape. Unfortunately, there was no way to escape from the clutches of those Evolvers under Yue Zhong, and within 5 minutes, the entire place had been wiped clean of any Country A Revolutionary Committee members.

Had Bencito immediately lead his troops away from the location and hide within the forest to fight against Yue Zhong, it might have caused some problems. However, in a frontal clash, Yue Zhong could easily annihilate the faction.

With Bencito's death, the rest of the base started to crumble in spirit, and many directly escaped into the surrounding forests. A number of the locals and Chinese that had been kept captive remained.

There were 50,000 members of the Country A Revolutionary Committee at first. After this battle, with the majority of the Committee members fleeing, there were over 40,000 left, of which many were still locals, and Yue Zhong had no choice but to deploy some men to keep watch over them.

After swallowing the Country A Revolutionary Committee, Yue Zhong began to mete out judgment on the crimes and sins of the locals. Those who had participated in killings or torment of the Chinese were all immediately executed. In a short while, over 10,000 of the locals were killed, their bodies thrown into the sea, feeding the sea Mutant Beasts.

As Yue Zhong was cleaning up the base of the Country A Revolutionary Committee, he assigned Bai Xiao Sheng and 400 other soldiers to march on towards the Country A Renaissance.

At this current point, as all 3 factions had suffered greatly in the earlier march, both the Country A Renaissance and Country A Empire had yet to catch their breath. It was the best time to launch an attack.

Bai Xiao Sheng led the men towards the territory of the Country A Renaissance.

The base was a small city in Country A, with only a small fence surrounding the place, an indication of the laidback nature of the locals.

Many factions all over the world had already begun construction on city walls, and moats, and yet the locals here had only used a simple wooden fence. The moment any horde launch an assault, the fence would not be able to hold up.

A number of the soldiers of the Country A Renaissance were hiding behind cover, their fear palpable as they watched the incoming troops of Bai Xiao Sheng. A number of their elites had been wiped out by Yue Zhong earlier, and these soldiers were the remaining cannon fodder.

Bai Xiao Sheng eyed those local soldiers lazily and said: “Mr. White Bones, please do your thing!”

For the sake of victory in the operation today, Yue Zhong had transferred temporary command of White Bones over to Bai Xiao Sheng. White Bones already possessed intelligence, and could understand human speech.

Its demonic eyes flashed with fire, and it pulled out its iconic huge axe as it charged into the defensive line of the Country A Renaissance.

The locals were frightened out of their wits when they saw their bullets being ineffective against White Bones.

White Bones rushed to the wooden fence, when suddenly, a depression in the ground appeared out of nowhere. White Bones fell into the hole.

The hole was about 5m deep, and there were countless steel spikes in it. The locals had actually laid a trap to deal with enemies.

Seeing that White Bones had fell into the hole, the Country A soldiers immediately cheered in delight.

However, the celebrations did not last long, as White Bones leaped up lightly, and exited the trap, before shooting forwards like an arrow. It swung its axe and 2 soldiers lost their heads in an instant.

The cheers immediately turned to wails of horror.

After White Bones had slaughtered dozens of them, the rest of the locals immediately began to flee.

“Charge! Zhao Xiong!” Bai Xiao Sheng pointed towards the city and ordered.

“Kill!” Zhao Xiong was a Level 43 Evolver under Bai Xiao Sheng’s team and his strength was truly terrifying. He bellowed and led a number of Evolvers and Chinese soldiers into the city.

The fleeing locals were slaughtered like sheep. Since the majority of them weren’t actual trained soldiers, their fighting spirit crumbled quickly, and many sought to flee from the city itself.

One of the locals rushed to Paulos and shouted hastily: “Sir! We’ve lost our frontlines. We’re truly losing now, all of the men have been defeated. The city is in chaos now, what do we do?!”

Paulos had a look of disbelief: “What?! So fast? I thought General Jean Benton had at least 3,000 men with him?! How could he be defeated so quickly?”

When they had lost the march, Paulos had forcefully gathered his troops of 3,000 to defend the city. He thought that with that number of soldiers, he could at least cause Yue Zhong to suffer, before he stepped out to renegotiate.

He never imagined that the troops had actually been eliminated within an hour, barely holding up.

The local shouted: “Sir, General Jean Benton had escaped!!”

It was precisely because of the desertion of Jean Benton, that the troops of the Country A Renaissance were defeated so easily. Of



course, it was also partly due to the difference in strength.

Paulos cursed before turning around to run: “Jean Benton you bastard. Raven! Come with me.”

“Yes!” The local replied before following.

With Paulos’s escape, the Country A Renaissance lost their ability to resist. However, there were many who had heard of Yue Zhong’s cleansing of those who had participated in the killing and torturing of Chinese, and over 20,000 fled out of fear for their lives.

There were numerous forests in Country A, and these forests housed plenty of ferocious Mutant Beasts. Not everyone could survive within such an environment, and the moment those locals escaped into the forests, many became prey for the Mutant Beasts, and they suffered greatly.

In the end, the Country A Renaissance also fell into Yue Zhong’s hands.

When Lenny from the Country A Empire witnessed the fate of the Country A Revolutionary Committee and Country A Renaissance, and how easily Yue Zhong had captured them, he immediately brought his troops to flee towards the south of Country A.

Having swallowed 2 out of 3 major factions in the north, Yue Zhong became the ruling party of the north. There were no factions that could stand up to him.

After swallowing the 2 factions and settling things, Yue Zhong summoned Bai Xiao Sheng and told him directly: “Bai Xiao Sheng, are you willing to stay here and lead them here? As long as you stay here, the women here are free for you to choose.”

According to Yue Zhong’s calculations, he thought Bai Xiao Sheng would jump up in glee to accept this post, after all, it was a chance to govern.

However, Bai Xiao Sheng actually revealed a hesitating look as he shook his head: “Boss Yue, I know what kind of a person I am. I’m good at killing enemies, Mutant Beasts and having fun with women. But the pressure of governing is too much. I can’t do it. It would be too tiring and I would have to consider too much. The moment things get busy, there would be no time to play or slaughter. It would be a torture to me. I still prefer being your guard and engaging in fights out there, till the day I die.”

However, not within 1 minute of his seriousness, he revealed a lecherous smile as he asked: “Of course, I still want the beauties of Country A, since I’ve done so much, give me 2 beauties!”

Yue Zhong eyed him and shook his head while chuckling: “You! Alright alright, go find Masako and ask her to choose 2 beauties for you.”

“Long live boss!!” Bai Xiao Sheng cheered, and disappeared faster than Yue Zhong thought possible.

“Who should I get to govern Country A then?” Bai Xiao Sheng left, and Yue Zhong was left to this thoughts again.

Currently, even after slaughtering over 40,000 locals, he still had over 60,000 people relying on him. It was a sizeable number, and he needed someone trustworthy.

“I should pass it to her then!” Yue Zhong closed his eyes, thinking for awhile, before ascertaining the person in mind, his eyes flashing open.

Li Ying came marching in front of Yue Zhong, wearing a small military uniform with a short crew-cut. She saluted and spoke loudly in Chinese: “Reporting to Leader, Youth Corp Commander Li Ying is here!”

I didn’t know Li Ying was female. All along the raws seemed to have suggested a boy. Then again, knowing the author, it truly isn’t a surprise.

# Chapter 591: Back to Japan!

---

Yue Zhong motioned for Li Ying to sit down, and observed her quietly.

Her skin was a healthy wheat colour, after cutting her hair short, coupled with her skinny frame and height of about 1.45m, she wasn't exactly a top-rate beauty. Compared to the beautiful women like Guo Yu, Chen Yao, and Hai Lan, her looks were different. She had nice features, and looked more valiant than beauty. She was a young girl with a different charisma and aura.

Li Ying could feel Yue Zhong's gaze and sat straight, meeting his eyes. Her eyes were filled with reverence and awe.

Within a month's time, Yue Zhong had led their forces to take down 3 of the largest factions in the north, and had slaughtered countless locals who had killed their fellow Chinese. His decisive and merciless ways caused his name to spread far and wide, and people like Li Ying held him in high regard.

He broke the silence and said: "Li Ying. From today on, you are the governor of my Country A faction. You'll be in charge of running everything here."

"Yes! Leader!" Li Ying did not hesitate and replied, before asking: "Leader, are you going back already?"

He kept his gaze on her, his voice became warmer: "That's right! I need to return to China. My roots are there. I need someone I can trust to help me oversee things here. Are you to the task?"

She immediately stood up with a serious expression: "Definitely! I will use my life to swear that as long as I live, I will definitely not let your efforts in building this place go to waste. Everyone here would be loyal to you, now and in the future."

Li Ying and the rest of the Youth Corp members were all ardent fans of Yue Zhong, and were willing to fight to the death for him.

After all, they were all rescued from a cruel fate by Yue Zhong. Not only did he save them, he had helped them become powerful Enhancers, and led them in killing the cruel and barbarian locals. There was no doubt in their loyalty and respect for Yue Zhong.

“En!” Yue Zhong revealed a smile, and opened up a gold box. There were 150 vials of Evolving Liquid within. “This is my final gift to aid you, there are 150 vials of Evolving Liquid here. If a normal person consumes one vial, he or she would become an Evolver. Other than these, in this short span of time, there’s nothing else I can do. You will need to rely on your own strength to consolidate your rule. At the same time, I hope that you can quickly eliminate other local factions and expand your power here.

“Yes! Leader!” Li Ying looked at the 150 vials and her heart was filled with excitement. She was clear about the meaning of an Evolver. With these 150 vials, she could produce a troop of 150 Evolvers. It would truly be a terrifying group.

After she received the box, she saluted Yue Zhong and replied: “Leader, please rest assure. I’ll definitely set out to complete the tasks.”

He waved his hands, and dismissed her.

After formally inducing Li Ying as the governor, Yue Zhong brought the 4 Thunder Fighters as well as the 7th Fleet and left Country A, making their way back to Japan.

There was still the mothership in Japan’s waters, and an incomplete Sky Fortress. The moment Yue Zhong brought these back to China, his might would be consolidated.

This time, Yue Zhong had easily obtained victory over those 3 Northern Country A factions because he had the 4 Thunder Fighters with him. Each of them possessed a destructive might more than thrice that of a normal helicopter. Due to them, he had been able to crush the confidence of the locals, otherwise, he would have to pay a certain price as well.

The Thunder Fighters were terrifying, but they were still overshadowed by the fighter jets. The U.S Navy mothership had dozens of fighter jets. Adding on to the advanced radar scan of the 7th Fleet, they would be able to deal with the Thunder Fighters if the Kingdom of God decided to send more.

When Yue Zhong left, he brought Bai Xiao Sheng and his Evolver subordinates with him, causing the strength of the Country A faction to plunge.

However, Li Ying was a smart kid, she had immediately issued out some of the Evolving Liquid to 60 of the most loyal child soldiers, turning them into Evolvers. With them, it was enough to suppress any potential revolt.

At the same time, she didn't make haste to advance southward. Instead, she continued to clear up the smaller factions in the North, while training her troops and gathering resources. Her power was slowly reinforced, while expanding ever so slightly. Under her rule, the Country A faction began to stabilize and grow.

“Otto-sama. Welcome back.”

The moment Yue Zhong stepped out of the Thunder Fighter, Shimazu Mina led the rest of the Japanese women in greeting him politely.

Tenpyo Saka was still wearing the bomb collar standing quietly while looking at Yue Zhong with a complicated gaze.

He smiled slightly and replied: “En, I’m back.”

Muto Shin came up to Yue Zhong and reported: “Leader! Takama-ga-hara had sent an envoy to request an audience.”

Yue Zhong was taken slightly aback. After pondering awhile: “People from the Takama-ga-hara? Let him come.”

Soon, Muto Shin led a young man of about 27, 28 who grew a small moustache into the room. He was good-looking, and wore a crisp suit, giving others a favourable impression as he entered.

Inside the living hall, Shimazu Mina was kneeling by Yue Zhong's side in her kimono, helping to prepare some tea. Yue Zhong laid back on a sofa, relaxed. By his feet, Sakura Shiroyuki and Amano Asami were helping to massage his legs.

Even after becoming Evolvers, both of these beauties were still obediently massaging Yue Zhong, not daring to be the slightest bit disrespectful.

The young man bowed before saying: "Oda Meiwa from Takama-ga-hara greets Yue Zhong-sama!!"

Yue Zhong responded indifferently: "Out with it! You guys should have known my temper from your previous delegate."

Oda Meiwa chuckled as he suggested: "Yes! Yue Zhong-sama, our Takama-ga-hara hopes to enter an alliance with you. Both parties would trade and not antagonize each other. What do you think?"

Takama-ga-hara had strength, but they were just one of the many factions in Japan. The current situation was similar to the Feudal period of Japan. Furthermore, there were zombies and Mutant Beasts everywhere, threatening humanity.

Tetsuo Nendori was also a warlord, and could feel that Yue Zhong was tough to deal with. Hence, he changed his thinking, and wanted to ally with Yue Zhong. After all, Yue Zhong was Chinese, and would not be able to sway the majority of the Japanese to his side.

# Chapter 592: Port Fang Cheng!

---

Yue Zhong thought for a moment, before replying: “Sure!”

Initially, Yue Zhong had wanted to deal with Takama-ga-hara because he felt their strength to be a threat to him. Now that they had suffered some losses, the threat level had receded somewhat. He wasn't willing to be engage in an all-out fight against them as well. After all, it was Japan here, not China. He did not intend to stay here for long.

When Oda Meiwa saw that Yue Zhong was agreeable, he could not help but sigh in relief.

Tetsuo Nendori might not necessarily have let go of his hatred of Yue Zhong, it was just that he needed time to retrain and raise up his troops. It was not wise to fall out with Yue Zhong at this point.

After coming to an agreement, Yue Zhong sent Oda Meiwa away.

Yue Zhong looked at Shimazu Mina and asked: “Is the Sky Fortress ready?”

She looked at him with a complicated gaze, while responding respectfully: “The construction is done!”

“Bring me there!”

“Yes! Otto-sama!”

Under her guidance, Yue Zhong came to that underground factory, this time it had thoroughly transformed into a city, with lights flashing at its sides. The whole body had a metallic luster, and there were a number of heavy cannons mounted on it. These cannons had been salvaged from the remainder of the unusable Thunder Fighters. In addition, there were other heavy machine guns, semi-automatic rifles, and the entire sphere looked like something right out of a sci-fi film.

This was the main structure of the Sky Fortress. The Shimazu

Clan had spent a large amount of resources to bring it to fruition. The fact that such a colossal thing could fly was a feat in itself.

Shimazu Mina pointed at it and said: “The manufacturing of the laser cannons have not been smooth. If we want to add in those side laser cannons, it might take another half a year, as well as more resources. Right now, other than the capability to fly, the Sky Fortress does not possess much combat strength. If you want to gain a huge warship, you might need to wait for another half a year.”

Constructing this Sky Fortress had cost the Shimazu Clan huge amount of resources and manpower. They simply could not divert more to develop the laser cannons. Shimazu Mina had promised that because she had hoped Yue Zhong would help to lead her troops to attack the city and get resources. That way, she would be able to complete the rest of the Sky Fortress.

Yue Zhong looked at it with satisfaction, saying: “It’s ok! I’ll be returning to China tomorrow.” He then asked: “Mina, are you willing to come to China with me?”

As long as the Sky Fortress could fly, Yue Zhong would be able to bring it and the manpower on it back to China. From there, he naturally would be able to use the blueprints to finish the rest and manufacture more.

Shimazu Mina’s eyes flashed with some hesitation, before they shone with a resolve: “Otto-sama, Mina is unable to give up of Sakura Town, the base of our Shimazu Clan. I’ll be unable to leave with you. Mina is willing to take care of Japan on your behalf.”

“En!” Yue Zhong responded mildly. Her not following was not an issue. After all, the Sky Fortress was a huge haul for him.

While Shimazu Mina wasn’t willing to follow Yue Zhong, Sakura Shiroyuki, Amano Asami, Ogura Reiya and Ida Kyoko were extremely willing to follow him.



After all, Japan was still in chaos right now, without the protection of an expert, even if the women were Evolvers, they might still end up as toys for other powerful experts.

Early the next morning, the mountain split open slowly, and the Sky Fortress began to float up into the sky. There was no mechanical noise, instead, it seemed to release some strange energy, allowing to fly noiselessly in the sky, as though it was an alien spacecraft.

Yue Zhong sat within and could not help but sigh with admiration: “Truly amazing.”

Bai Xiao Sheng held 2 Indonesian beauties in his arms, as he kissed them both before chuckling: “This is the might of the anti-gravity energy converter. It has truly exceeded our expectations.”

Yue Zhong mulled silently before replying softly: “This sort of technology should be beyond even 100 years in our future. The person behind this all is truly frightening.”

Yue Zhong had been gaining strength constantly ever since the apocalypse started. However, the stronger he got, the more he felt the pressure of the person who had called himself ‘God’. The humans were just like ants on this Earth, and could only struggle.

“So what. Since that person had called himself God, this sort of strength is reasonable. Boss Yue, let’s not think too much. Life is short. We should enjoy ourselves when we’re alive!” Bai Xiao Sheng chuckled, before lifting the chin of one of the beauties by his side and grinned lewdly: “Beauty, come, feed your Master some wine.”

The Indonesian beauty smiled seductively and lowered her head to take in some wine, before feeding to Bai Xiao Sheng through his lips.

After savoring the wine, he laughed out loud, saying: “Haha! Having a beauty feeding one wine, it truly is an enjoyment in this

life! Boss Yue, let's forget about your troubles. We should live on well!"

Yue Zhong looked at Bai Xiao Sheng and smiled slightly. He didn't say anything, after all, everyone had their way of life. He did not want to stop Bai Xiao Sheng from living his.

In truth, other than being a lustful person, Bai Xiao Sheng was not a bad character. The main thing was, he had lack of ambition, and could be considered as loyal to Yue Zhong. After all, he had joined him in many conquests.

Sakura Shiroyuki walked over to Yue Zhong with a seductive smile: "Master, I want!"

Amano Asami also came into his arms with a fragrance as she grinned: "Me too!"

Reveling in the scent of these 2 beauties, Yue Zhong felt his blood rush, and he brought them to his room. It was time for him to relax as well.

Bai Xiao Sheng shot a lewd look and roared out in laughter, before pulling his own beauties towards another direction: "Hehe! Boss seems to be cut of the same cloth as me! Brothers, let us disperse for the night!"

Within the control area, there were numerous elite soldiers. Other than a few, most of them had a beautiful Indonesian lady with them. They had followed Yue Zhong in his conquest of Japan and Indonesia. Yue Zhong also wanted to reward them, and had given each of them a pretty Indonesian.

He never mistreated his soldiers who fought hard for him. He knew it was hard to control everything himself, and he needed loyal subordinates.

Hearing Bai Xiao Sheng's words, the rest of the elites chuckled and brought their women with them as they left for their own rooms.

Yao Yao was sitting in a corner, hugging the Biological Armor that had Ji Qing Wu inside, and snorted in irritation: “Men are all the same, a bunch of dicks.”

On the sea, the mothership and the 7th Fleet were carefully making their way across.

There were countless behemoth-type Mutant Beasts in the sea, just a single Type 4 possessed the strength to annihilate them. However, there was Hai Lan with them, and while she could not control any Mutant Beasts of Type 3 and above, she could feel their presence.

At the same time, with the advanced surveillance and radar system of the 7th fleet, they could tell the position of any large Mutant Beasts, and avoid them carefully.

Since the apocalypse, only the USS Blue Ridge had ships with radar systems could possibly navigate the seas. Otherwise, the lurking danger was too much for any other ship to bear.

Even then, if these ships or cruisers were not careful, they could suffer under the attack of any Type 5 Mutant Beasts. There would not even be a chance to defend themselves.

After a journey of a few days, the group finally reached Guang Xi's Port Fang Cheng.

Yue Zhong had a sizeable faction at Guang Xi, however, the truth was that there were too many zombies in the region. Even after trying their best to clear as many as they could, they had not yet expanded to this particular port.

The Washington aircraft carrier and the Blue Ridge warships had to find a port to dock, and hence Yue Zhong had selected this port.

There were numerous ships of various sizes floating at the dock, packed like ants.

He surveyed the surrounding and smiled lightly: “This time, we've struck it rich!!”

This port was one of the largest in Guang Xi in the past, its volume of trade everyday reached staggering figures. After the world changed, few had made it in time to get on the boats to flee, and thus, many were left abandoned. There was sure to be a large amount of resources left here, just waiting for Yue Zhong to collect once they have conquered the entire area.

Furthermore, these ships and cargo freights would become Yue Zhong's. Although they couldn't traverse the seas right now, they were still useful near the coast. It was a huge treasure to him.

On the Sky Fortress, Yue Zhong emitted a howl, and Greenie swooped down from the sky, bringing him to the harbor.

"Where are the zombies?" When Yue Zhong landed, he surveyed the surroundings and frowned.

There should have been a large number of zombies around these parts according to their last report. However, the entire place was empty, and the lack of zombies gave Yue Zhong a bad feeling.

"Is it because of the sea Mutant Beasts?" He walked around abit and could see traces of sea Mutant Beasts having come ashore. However, it didn't feel right. It felt as though all the zombies of the port had disappeared.

He pondered a while before using his walkie-talkie to give an order: "Zhao Tian Gang, bring the Sky Fortress back to Gui Ning City. Ensure that the experts are settled in."

"Understood!" Zhao Tian Gang replied respectfully and the Sky Fortress began to move towards Gui Ning City.

It was filled with the experts of various fields that Yue Zhong had collected in Japan. Adding on to the talents already under his wing, he would be able to produce a technologically advanced equipment like the Sky Fortress.

# Chapter 593: Pressure!

---

Yue Zhong's aim was to make use of good talents regardless of who they were. Even if they were from other countries, he would still accept them under his wing.

Under his orders, Zhao Tian Gang led the experts from Japan, as well as the different ladies towards the direction of Gui Ning City.

The Sky Fortress made use of technology that was far beyond the current technology, the moment it pushed its speed to the maximum, it could reach Mach-1. Very soon, it disappeared from its original location.

Bai Xiao Sheng led 30 Evolvers down towards Port Fang Cheng, as they began to search the area carefully. Yue Zhong was also personally sweeping through the place.

Regardless of how they searched the place, it was like a dead town, without a single trace of any being. The resources left behind had not been moved much. In fact, they had chanced upon a large amount of rice and other rations, however, a huge bulk of them had gone bad. Being a port that was near the sea, the high levels of moisture caused the food to go bad even faster.

Bai Xiao Sheng asked Yue Zhong: "There's nobody! However, there are traces of some things being moved towards the north. There should be people there. Boss Yue, shall we go check it out?"

Yue Zhong said: "It's too strange here. I'm taking 8 men with me. You stay here to guard the place. Report to me if anything strange happens."

Bai Xiao Sheng replied seriously: "Yes."

Although Bai Xiao Sheng had an easy-going attitude and a flippant way of doing things, after one strong lesson of defeat, he learned when he should be serious.

Yue Zhong led the 8 elite soldiers as they searched their way

towards the north. Port Fang Cheng was a huge port in Guang Xi, and he needed to control this place entirely, otherwise it would be difficult to develop a navy, Even if the seas were more dangerous in the current apocalypse, Yue Zhong hoped to bring up a navy. It was still fine if they could handle the coastal areas.

“Put down your weapons, raise your hands, and surrender immediately! Or we’ll take your lives!”

After Yue Zhong entered the city area, 20 men in strange clothes suddenly appeared. They held machetes, vegetable knives, and handguns, as they surrounded Yue Zhong and his men.

These militants eyed the equipment on Yue Zhong and his men with greed in their eyes.

Yue Zhong and his men were currently carrying assault rifles on their backs, with Tang Replica Blades at their waists. They had military gloves and boots and were truly armed to the teeth.

One young man wearing glasses stepped forward and warned: “You guys better not try anything funny. I know you’re military, however, our Boss Zheng is a powerful Evolver. His level is 35 and he can even slaughter a L2 with a single strike. We just want your weapons, and not your lives.”

Yue Zhong glanced at the young man with disdain and replied coldly: “Oh? So who is your Boss Zheng?”

“I’m right here!!” A burly man wearing a black leather shirt stepped out. His skin was tan, but his eyes were crossed, and he was hugging an alluring woman as he talked.

He spoke with his nose in the air, while grabbing a glass bottle in his right hand and he crushing it easily: “You guys must be soldiers! I will not make things difficult for you, just hand over your weapons.”

This Boss Zheng crushed the glass bottle to exhibit his terrifying grip strength. An ordinary person would definitely not be able to

perform a feat like this. Seeing this, the 8 subordinates with Yue Zhong laughed. Such a trick was way beneath their level.

“Kneel!” Following a loud roar, one of the subordinates, Zhao Zhang Xing shot forwards, pulling out his Tang Replica Blade swiftly and swinging it right before Boss Zheng’s throat.

This Boss Zheng was only some Level 35 Enhancer, in front of Zhao Zhang Xing, an elite soldier with an Evolver status as well as the experience of countless battles, he was simply incomparable. He looked at the Tang Replica Blade in front of his throat, and his legs turned wobbly. He then knelt down while trembling: “It is I who have eyes but do not recognize Mount Tai!! I’m sorry! Please spare my life!! Spare my life!!”

If he were to face 8 ordinary soldiers, it wouldn’t be a problem, but against Level 40 Evolvers, he was incredibly weak.

Another subordinate of Yue Zhong, Yang Gang stepped forward and barked coldly: “This person in front of you is Leader Yue Zhong, all of you get on your knees now, otherwise you’ll be executed!”

These subordinates of Yue Zhong had grown used to forcing their enemies to kneel throughout their conquests. Forcing the enemy to humiliation was one of the best ways to attack their pride, confidence, and to quell any notion of resisting.

The moment Yang Gang shouted, all of the 20 militants immediately fell on their knees, as their bodies trembled like their leader who was held at knifepoint.

In this world, kneeling was no longer something that shameful. In fact, there were more cruel and brutal ways of doing things, and they knew that they were getting it easy already.

Yue Zhong eyed Boss Zheng and asked coldly: “What’s your name?”

Zheng Bo Yan trembled as he spoke: “My name is Zheng Bo Yan.

Leader Yue Zhong, I did not recognize Mount Tai and have offended you. I seek your mercy and kind pardon, please spare my life. I'm willing to do anything.”

In this world, Zheng Bo Yan had seen many unreasonable experts. As long as someone offended them, his or her fate would be disastrous. Yue Zhong did not seem very friendly as well, thus he chose to submit.

Yue Zhong finally asked the question he was concerned with: “Zheng Bo Yan, do you know where the zombies of Port Fang Cheng disappeared to?

“I do not know.” Zheng Bo Yan spoke hesitantly, before revealing all he knew to Yue Zhong.

He had been an Enhancer in a small town near Port Fang Cheng. Before the apocalypse, he had been an auto mechanic, and his body was in fine shape. After becoming an Enhancer, he had began killing zombies and Mutant Beasts around the town, leading a solitary life. There were a few instances where he almost died to some powerful Mutant Beasts. Initially, he thought that this would be how his life would be like from now on. However, just a month ago, when he came to search Port Fang Cheng for goods, he realised that the zombies had disappeared. He then proceeded to move around in glee, collecting a number of small brothers.

The moment the zombies disappeared, all of the survivors that had been holed up and hiding like mice came out, forming all sorts of factions.

With over 800,000 people in Port Fang Cheng before the apocalypse, after an entire year, there were still over 20,000 people around these parts.

Due to the large shore area, there were plenty of resources lying about. As long as the survivors were careful enough to avoid the sea Mutant Beasts, they would profit tremendously.



Zheng Bo Yan led one of the various smaller factions of the gangs in Port Fang Cheng. The largest group was actually a triad that called themselves the Tian Yang Gang. with over 5,000 people. Their chief was a powerful warlord, and the rest of the factions were just small-time gangs.

Yang Gang asked: “Leader, what do we do now?”

Yue Zhong pondered before replying: “Let’s collect the smaller gangs first.”

With over 5,000 people in the Tian Yang Gang, it was a sizeable faction. If Yue Zhong wanted to conquer them, he would need to deploy some troops. Right now, he had only 60 Evolvers above Level 40. It was still too risky to make a move on them.

Of course, the Blue Ridge warships had the ability to just destroy the whole of Port Fang Ning, but Yue Zhong did not want a wasteland. He was naturally unwilling to utilize his navy might. If it was in Indonesia or Japan, then Yue Zhong would not have hesitated to blast his enemies out of the way.

He came to a decision, and 40 Evolvers were assigned to come over.

They were split into 4 teams, and went to contact the rest of the gangs littered all around the city. Some of these leaders of the small gangs were only about Level 10 or so, and could not even fend off an L2. To a powerful team of elite Evolver soldiers, they were basically nothing.

Under the constant roars and shouts of rage, the leaders of the small factions around Port Fang Cheng were either killed or forced to submit, and their power was consolidated under Yue Zhong.

In just one day, Yue Zhong made use of his absolute strength to conquer over 20 factions, and gathered them under his wing. There were a total of 700 people in his faction at Port Fang Cheng now.

Witnessing his overbearing and tyrannical strength, Zheng Bo Yan and those who had submitted the earliest were agape with shock. Yue Zhong had shaken the entire Port Fang Cheng the moment he arrived, and they were thoroughly convinced of his strength.

One young man held an invitation as he came up to Yue Zhong respectfully: “Sir Yue Zhong, this is the invitation from my Young Master. We hope that you can attend the banquet that he’s hosting.”

“Got it!” Yue Zhong received it, as his eyes flashed coldly before dismissing the youth with a wave of his hand.

“Seems like you want to act against me eh? Fine, let’s see what capabilities you have.” Yue Zhong held the invitation and laughed coldly.

Night, as darkness encroached the land, within a lavish 4-star hotel, a number of handsome young waiters and beautiful waitresses were weaving in and out the crowd.

# Chapter 594: Forceful integration!

---

In that hotel, the guests were all leaders of the various factions of Port Fang Cheng. They had been farmers, fishermen, sailors and other ordinary characters. None of them had class, and their demeanor was boorish while their behaviour was crass.

Even for someone like Yue Zhong, his very being radiated an intense killing aura, but his etiquette was lacking when compared to scions.. After all, those socialites and sons of the famous and rich had a specific form of education, whereas he lacked that type of knowledge.

One particular tanned middle-aged man with a bald head and swollen eyes looked at another man with an eyepatch and 2 claw scars running down his face, and asked: “Brother Fang, do you think this Yue Zhong will come?”

The bald middle-aged man was called Long Jian An and he was the chief of the Rainbow Gang, one of the 8 prominent triads of Port Fang Cheng. As for the scar-faced man, he was called Fang Zhen, the leader of the Whale Gang.

Fang Zhen spoke somewhat savagely: “He will definitely come. If he wants to join our alliance, he will come. I’ve made it clear, that if he doesn’t, our alliance will make sure to eradicate him. He’s too dangerous!”

The 8 main triads of Port Fang Cheng were the Rainbow Gang, Whale Gang, Sea Sand Gang, Sea Waves Gang, Sea Wolf Gang, Coral Gang, Sea Fork Gang and the Sea Soul Gang.

As Port Fang Cheng was close to the sea, the leaders all opted to use sea-related names for their gangs.

Yue Zhong had appeared for only one day, and had already gained control over 700 survivors. If he was allowed to continue like this, the rest of the factions in Port Fang Cheng would be

swallowed by him.

One skinny man that looked like a monkey, Chen Sha, who was the leader of the Sea Sand Gang, frowned and quipped: “What’s the background of this Yue Zhong? How come there would be someone like this all of a sudden?”

Zhan Tian Yi, the leader of the Sea Waves Gang furrowed his brows and said: “Could it be the leader of Gui Ning City, Yue Zhong?”

Hearing those words, the faces of the leaders immediately turned dark.

Everyday, there would be a broadcast from Gui Ning City, inviting survivors to head there, at the same time, summoning the various factions in the Guang Xi region to submit to Gui Ning City.

Port Fang Cheng had received those transmissions as well, it was just that these 8 leaders were living comfortably and did not want to give up their power and control over to Gui Ning City.

Chen Gui He, the leader of the Sea Wolf Gang spoke slowly: “It could just be a coincidence! The world is vast, it’s not strange for people to share names. It might not necessarily be him.”

Hearing Chen Gui He’s words, the 8 leaders slightly relaxed, they really didn’t want to come to blows with the leader of such a huge faction.

“Yue Zhong arrives!!”

As Yue Zhong stepped into the hotel, the waiter at the entrance called out loudly.

Hearing the announcement, everyone swivelled their heads to look at Yue Zhong.

In just one day, one day! Yue Zhong had swallowed over 20 factions in Port Fang Cheng, this caused everyone to be apprehensive.

One vicious-looking man laughed savagely, before pulling out a gun and swiftly aiming at Yue Zhong: “So you’re Yue Zhong? You’ve got guts! You actually dared to come alone. Good!! Good!! Your guts are something else, but too bad you lack brains. Today will be the day you die!!”

The vicious-looking man had a speed that exceeded a normal person by 6 times, and to the normal people present, his speed was incredible.

However, Yue Zhong’s speed was even faster than his, and he grabbed the man’s hand casually, before twisting it. He then turned the man’s hand and placed the gun into his mouth before pressing the trigger.

With a loud gunshot, the fierce man’s head was blasted, and his brains and blood splattered behind him.

Such a scene would have invoked countless screams and shouts from the witnesses. However, in this apocalypse, everyone had grown used to seeing death and conflicts. When the corpse crumpled to the ground, 2 waiters stepped forward and carried his body out.

At the same time, the gazes of the leaders present were filled with apprehension. The fierce man was a fast shooter, and they had been 15 leaders that had fallen at his hands. He was also a well-known expert in Port Fang Cheng. Such an expert was actually taken down by Yue Zhong in a second, and they were filled with shock.

Long Jian An tried to bark at Yue Zhong with a self-serving tone: “Yue Zhong. I’m Long Jian An, the leader of the Rainbow Gang. You came in here and immediately killed a leader. What the hell are you up to? Do you want to go against all of us here?”

His words immediately riled up the strong feelings in all of the leaders, as they stared at Yue Zhong with hate and prepared to attack.

“Fuck off!” Yue Zhong stepped forward and shot Long Jian An a glare, with his killing intent billowing towards the skies, pressuring Long Jian An.

Long Jian An instantly cowered, and he retreated a few steps involuntarily as his face was full of fear.

After forcing Long Jian An back with his gaze alone, Yue Zhong walked towards the stage under the gaze of everyone present, and stared down at all of the leaders of Port Fang Cheng like an emperor.

Yue Zhong gazed coldly at the leaders and spoke in a matter-of-fact tone: “I’m Yue Zhong! The leader of Gui Ning City with a million survivors! You have 2 choices now. Submit, or die.”

When they heard his overbearing announcement, all of the leaders immediately became silent, it turned out to be actually him.

One middle-aged warrior with a full beard shouted: “Even if you are Yue Zhong, so what? This is Port Fang Cheng. It’s not Gui Ning City. Your father, I am not convinced that you can do whatever you like. If you have the guts, you can kill this old one!”

“Sure! Go to hell!” Yue Zhong pulled out his Stinger and immediately fired a shot at the burly warrior.

Before the warrior could even react, his brain exploded, as red and white matter splattered all over the ground. The woman in his grasp turned pale, as the body crumpled to the floor, and brain matter dripped all over her clothes.

Seeing this, the faces of the leaders changed terribly.

Yue Zhong’s speed had exceeded the sound barrier, almost everyone only saw a quick shadow. With this single move, everyone knew that they were no match for him in speed.

“Who else is still not convinced?” Yue Zhong viewed them with contempt as he drawled icily.

Long Jian An shouted out in a frenzy: “Do it! Everyone, let’s join forces against him, we have nothing to fear!”

Before he even finished, Yue Zhong waved his hand, and the Stinger fired once more. Long Jian An’s head then exploded like a watermelon.

However, his words had riled up the fighting spirit of the leaders in the hall, and they began to exhibit their skills, charging towards Yue Zhong.

Many of the leaders of the small and mid-sized factions were summoned by Long Jian An as help. If Yue Zhong was not willing to join the alliance, then they would all act against him. However, they didn’t expect him to be this strong, and forceful, wanting them to submit to him.

Of the skills and abilities revealed, most of them gained Strength-type and Agility-type books. Hence, most of the leaders enhanced their respective stats and attacked Yue Zhong.

“What a bunch of fools, you truly do not know death. Since you guys are looking to die, I’ll grant your wish!”

Yue Zhong looked at the leaders and laughed coldly, before reaching out with his right hand to fire his Devil Flame. In an instant, dozens of fireballs appeared out of thin air. He then pointed at the leaders swiftly, and the fireballs shot towards the leaders.

The moment the devouring fire came in contact with any of the leaders, their heads were instantly turned to ashes.

Seeing such a terrifying scene, many of the leaders who did not act immediately turned pale, as their bodies trembled uncontrollably. It was the first time they had seen such a frightening person, who could easily eliminate dozens of people in a single move.

Fang Zhen of the Whale Gang immediately got on his knees and

shook as he stammered: “The Whale Gang is willing to submit and obey any of the commands of Leader!”

Fang Zheng had not seen such a powerful expert like Yue Zhong before. Just with his power alone, it was enough to annihilate the whole Whale gang. He did not dare to provoke him anymore. The death of Long Jian An was still fresh in his mind.

“The Sea Fork Gang is willing to submit to Leader, and obey Leader’s commands!”

The remaining leaders began to kneel one after the other, and their bodies trembled as they swore fealty to Yue Zhong.

When Fang Zhen saw this, his heart was full of bitterness. He had wanted to oppress Yue Zhong, forcing him to join the alliance, before curbing his rate of expansion. Who knew that it would become a stage for Yue Zhong to forcefully suppress all of them instead, and force them to submit to him. It was simply trying to steal the chicken but losing the rice instead. (Idiom: seeking to gain some advantage but being taken advantage of in the end)

Yue Zhong looked at them kneeling and smiled slightly.

There were dozens of leaders who had been killed, including the chief of the Rainbow Gang. The smaller factions of Port Fang Cheng were thus thrown into chaos.

However, those who had chosen to submit to Yue Zhong were absorbed into his forces, and after accumulating these survivors, Yue Zhong’s faction thus grew into one with 5,000 survivors.

However, as there were too many factions, there had been conflicts between some of them. Yue Zhong had no choice but to address them and forcefully integrate the new troops. There was no way in the short future that he could advance further into Port Fang Cheng’s city.

Although he had swallowed a number of them, in truth, they had just submitted to him, and their hearts were not fully loyal yet.



There was the possibility of revolt, so he needed to reorganize everybody.

“4 in the afternoon, meet you at the entrance of the shopping mall.”

As Yue Zhong was busying himself with the handling of affairs, someone delivered a message over. It was an invitation from the head of the largest faction of Port Fang Cheng, Lie Ming Yi.

At 4, Yue Zhong went alone towards the shopping mall of the city.

At the entrance, there was a man in black leather clothes, his stature was average, and his hair was short. He was good-looking, and sat under a large umbrella. There were 2 beautiful serving girls beside him, and he sat in front of a glass table, with a plate of fruits on it.

Yue Zhong came up to the table, and sat down, before looking at the man. He could feel a slight sense of danger from the man, one that could threaten his safety. It was evident that this man was also a high-level Evolver, and could be comparable to the weakest member of the Takama-ga-hara.

“Lie Ming Yi?”

“Yue Zhong?”

Both of them uttered out at the same time, before exchanging looks, with their eyes filled with slight amazement.

Lie Ming Yi fixed his gaze on Yue Zhong as he slapped his hands lightly: “Yue Zhong, Port Fang Cheng is under my territory. Can you leave? In exchange, I can send you 2 absolute beautiful virgins, 200 other virgins, 10,000 tons of rations, 1,000 tons of fuel, 1,000 tons of metal, and 500 tons of cotton. You troops can also move freely within Port Fang Cheng.

2 absolutely beautiful women with snow-white skin and stunning figures came up beside Lie Ming Yi.

Yue Zhong shook his head and rejected: “No way! I have to gain this place. Lie Ming Yi, you had best find someplace else to expand. I have set my sights on this place. Soon, my troops will come over to start running this place.”

The moment Yue Zhong gain Port Fang Cheng, he could start training up Enhancers. With the port, his navy could also dock there. This was extremely important to Yue Zhong, and he could not let go of it no matter what.

Lie Ming Yi frowned slightly before sighing: “Alright, I’ll leave then!”

He had only 5,000 men with him, and knew that the Tian Yang Gang had no means of dealing with Yue Zhong or his troops. Even he himself had no confidence that he could take out Yue Zhong alone.

Yue Zhong saw that Lie Ming Yi was willing to give in, and did not push for anything else.

He knew that Lie Ming Yi was a powerful expert. If he were to run, Yue Zhong did not know if he could kill him easily. Should Lie Ming Yi escape, then Yue Zhong would have an additional headache. He had a strength that Yue Zhong could not ignore, and thus, he did not force Lie Ming Yi like how he did the other smaller factions.

Lie Ming Yi suddenly spoke: “Yue Zhong, I know a place where a Novice Village exists, do you want to join forces and go check it out?”

# Chapter 595: Recruiting Lie Ming Yi!

---

Yue Zhong's brows arched, his eyes flashing with surprise: "Oh! There's a Novice Village around here? Where exactly?"

The Novice Village had opened only about a month after the world changed. It can only exist if a person were to discover and own it. Other than Lei Jiang City, Yue Zhong only heard of another in the grasp of the Kingdom of God over at Europe. That was how they trained up a large number of soldiers.

As long as one could nurture an ordinary person into a Level 10 Enhancer, they could do a Job Change at the Novice Village and gain the Gun Specialization Skill as an elite soldier. They were much stronger than ordinary soldiers. In Japan, the elite troops of the Kingdom of God holding off over 5,000 soldiers of the Takamagahara had left a deep impression on Yue Zhong.

If Yue Zhong could control a Novice Village, he could mass produce top-notch soldiers. Other than turning people into soldiers, he could groom talents in other fields as well.

In fact, he had considered bringing his troops to conquer Lei Jiang City the first thing once he went back to China. However, he never expected to gain some news on a Novice Village here at Port Fang Cheng.

Lie Ming Yi chuckled lightly: "Ning Xi City! There's one over there. I had gone through the Job Change there with some friends."

Yue Zhong frowned: "There should be many zombies over there right?"

Ning Xi City was about 50km away from Port Fang Cheng. Before the apocalypse, there had been a population of over a million.

After the apocalypse, all the major cities suffered the largest number of zombies. The smallest horde had numbered about

500,000. With such a horde, without a strong troop, there was no way of fending them off.

Even if Yue Zhong managed to gather all 5,000 survivors of Port Fang Cheng, he was not blindly arrogant to think that he could use them to eradicate the zombies of Ning Xi City. Even if he added on Lie Ming Yi's troops, it would be impossible.

Lie Ming Yi replied mildly: "Yea! The horde there is no joke. The hundreds of thousands zombies that used to be here had marched on towards there. There should be over 2 million zombies now."

"2 million?!" When Yue Zhong heard this figure, he frowned as he tried to do some calculations mentally.

The moment the size of a horde exceeded a million, it would be incredibly difficult to eradicate them fully. Even a faction like Yue Zhong would suffer a terrible price while doing so.

However, he had already obtained Yan Zhou, as one of the heaviest manufacturing industrial city before the apocalypse. After providing a huge supply of manpower, the entire city had produced a large number of ammunition. At the same time, during Yue Zhong's absence, his people had discovered 3 armories. Now, he possessed enough manpower and equipment to fight against a million zombies.

Yue Zhong's tone became slightly heavier as he said: "I admire you very much, Lie Ming Yi. Are you interested in joining me?"

By now, Yue Zhong had over a million survivors, and his elite troops numbered more than 20,000. He could be considered one of the biggest warlords.

Although Lie Ming Yi was strong individually, in Yue Zhong's eyes, he was still barely a local thug leader. He wanted soldiers but there were no soldiers. He needed military fire but lacked them. The only thing that was worth evaluating was his personal strength.

In this world, a single person's strength was miniscule. Even a Level 81 expert like Yue Zhong could not possibly handle a horde of hundreds of thousands of zombies. The only way was for humanity to work together to form an army. That way, they can eradicate the zombies and restore some form of stability.

When Lie Ming Yi heard Yue Zhong's proposal, he hesitated before asking: "If I do join you, what kind of treatment will I get?"

By now, the notoriety of the Tyrant Yue Zhong of Guang Xi had spread far and wide. His exploits and defeated enemies were broadcasted everyday. Lie Ming Yi had also gotten word about Yue Zhong from an escaping survivor.

The number of experts under his wing numbered like clouds, his troops numbered over 20,000. It wasn't a force Lie Ming Yi could hope to contend with. When Yue Zhong proposed recruitment, he really had the thought of relying on him. However, it would depend on the price Yue Zhong was willing to pay.

Yue Zhong immediately offered a position of Major and Battalion Commander to entice him: "If you join me, you'll gain the post of a Major rank. Of course, everything of the Tian Yang Gang has to be handed to me. As for your brothers and your own possessions and women, they can be kept."

Yue Zhong had established his power, and any battalion commander post was extremely precious. It was a post where one could command a large army. Furthermore, with Yue Zhong leading, everyone would ride the wave with him. In the future, they would stand to gain much.

Gui Ning City had attracted numerous Evolvers to join and fight for Yue Zhong's cause. Even then, they would at most be lieutenants and captains. One could see the worth of a Major.

Lie Ming Yi was tempted. He had been ambitious and tried to raise the Tian Yang Gang, only to feel exhausted as time passed. Even a small gang had its troubles, the various power struggles

within the gang itself. There was also the community of survivors that had to be looked after, as well as the problem with issue.

After Lie Ming Yi's faction had hit 7,000, it was hard to expand further. Just the consumption of ration was a troubling headache for him. Much of the food from Port Fang Cheng had gone bad and the amount he had left was only enough to last for another 3 months. Once he was forced to leave Port Fang Cheng, he might have to abandon some of the survivors.

He was passionate about fame and wealth, and decided to bargain: "Lieutenant Colonel. A Lt. Col. post. I'm a dual-attribute Evolver, and my level is 63. As long as you give me that post, I'll serve you. Tian Yang Gang will be all yours. These 2 absolute beauties are yours as well."

Yue Zhong revealed a smile: "Agreed!"

Yue Zhong felt that exchanging a position of a Lieutenant Colonel for the loyalty and service of a powerful dual-Attribute Evolver was worth it. He could offer such a position because his faction had expanded greatly. Furthermore, he had established some form of stability and society, plus his experts were numerous, that was why Lie Ming Yi felt comfortable throwing his weight in with him. If Yue Zhong had been alone, even if he was at Level 100, Lie Ming Yi wouldn't have chosen to follow him.

"Thank you Commander! No! Leader!!" Lie Ming Yi exclaimed in excitement. He had always wanted to be an officer when growing up, however, since the bureaucracy was too strict before the apocalypse, he didn't have the chance to even be a civil servant. Now that Yue Zhong was willing to, he was excited.

It must be clear that it was an honor to many Chinese to become officials and ranking officers. From Ancient China till now, it was a dream of countless heroes. Yue Zhong had formed some government in Gui Ning City, and Lie Ming Yi knew he had no chance of fending off Yue Zhong's army, thus he chose to submit,

hoping to gain some merit, and earn some fame and riches for himself.

Lie Ming Yi managed to calm down, and immediately motioned for the 2 ladies beside him: “Xie Jing Yun, Wang Shuang Ru, why aren’t you greeting your master?”

To someone who was excited about fame and riches, women held little allure over him. Compared to women, power was something a man should lust for. In fact, for the sake of a post, many had no qualms presenting their wives to other officials. Xie Jing Yun and Wang Shuang Ru had nothing to do with Lie Ming Yi, that was why he had no qualms giving them to Yue Zhong.

“We greet Master!” Both of them spoke up with a smile to seek favor with Yue Zhong, although not before a look of helplessness and bitterness flash past their eyes.

Humans during chaos could not compare to dogs in peace\*. Both these women knew that the world had changed, and they were no longer females that were chased and sought after. If they didn’t face reality, then they would just suffer a worse fate.

“En!” Yue Zhong swept his gaze past them faintly, but did not linger on them. Instead, he continued: “Lie Ming Yi, if you join me, there will be some in your gang that would not agree. What do you plan on doing?”

Lie Ming Yi chuckled in response, his handsome face revealing a slight killing aura: “Leader, rest assured, I’ll handle it well. Those who aren’t willing, will definitely not live to see tomorrow’s sunrise.”

Lie Ming Yi might have been able to converse nicely with Yue Zhong, but for someone like him to establish a gang like the Tian Yang Gang in this apocalyptic world, he wasn’t some pushover as well. He would only speak courteously to Yue Zhong because of his strength. There was no way he could fight back.

He was also a man of actions, as he swiftly returned and announced his decision.

Immediately, chaos ensued. Not everyone was willing to follow, as some preferred their current lifestyles of drinking and eating, toying with women as they liked. They vehemently opposed joining Yue Zhong.

After slaughtering 8 of the dissident voices, the entire Tian Yang Gang swore fealty to Yue Zhong, and assimilated with his troops.

With Lie Ming Yi's submission, there were no other parties that could stand up against such a force. The smaller factions either chose to leave or join Yue Zhong. Soon, the entire Port of Fang Cheng as well as the city fell into Yue Zhong's control.

Evening time, Yue Zhong sat on Greenie's back, as it flew towards the direction of Ning Xi City.

A huge elite army had already set off from Gui Ning City upon Yue Zhong's orders. Along the way, they managed to clear 300,000 zombies, and camped about 50 km away from Ning Xi City.

Yue Zhong came specially to survey the place, and conduct a recon of his own to better understand the situation.



# Chapter 596: Strange Blood Lotus!

---

Yue Zhong arrived in the airspace above Ning Xi City. When he looked down, he could see the entire city densely packed with countless of zombies.

In the dark, a ball of white light caught his attention.

He steered Greenie towards the location housing the source of the white light. He noticed two large queues around a large gate

Countless zombies were patrolling around that gate, of which, they were mostly evolved zombies. There were the large L4s and L3s, the fast and speedy S-types and Devourers, as well as the H1s that could shoot fireballs.

It didn't matter how strong a single expert was, charging headlong into this bright gate would only mean death.

Other than those evolved zombies, near the gate of light, there was also a monstrous organism of over 8m in length. Its body was covered in various barbs and tentacles. It had a pair of thick legs, and a pair of claws. Its body was ash-colored, and its head was an ugly visage of a snake-like form, its mouth filled with rows of sharp teeth. It stood there with a large bulging stomach.

“Level 98 Infected: Mutant Infected Womb. It possesses an incredible regenerative ability and powerful combat abilities. It is unaffected by the Z-Types' control.”

Yue Zhong looked at the gigantic Mutant Infected Womb, as a chill came over his heart.

“What a terrifying monster! I think this must be the guardian beast of the Novice Village. Seems like I'd have to pay a huge price to attack Ning Xi City.”

A Level 98 Strange Beast was almost on the level of a Type 4 Mutant Beast. Without any heavy weapons, it would be easy for such a monster to kill over tens of thousands of people.

Furthermore, compared to a Type 4 Mutant Beast, this Mutant Infected Womb could infect other people, and turn them into zombies.

As Yue Zhong flew around Ning Xi City a few times, he did not discover any place that he could utilize. He frowned: “Is a frontal charge the only way?”

Within Ning Xi City, the numbers of the zombies were really too many. Even if they could win the war, he would have suffered too much casualties. It would impact his other plans.

Yue Zhong’s strategy was to focus the majority of his troops on recovering the big cities, and make use of the resources and equipment in these cities to bolster his forces. Each and every huge city had over hundreds of thousands or even millions of zombies. Conquering each one was no easy task, without enough ammunition or heavy firearm, it would be impossible.

As he continued to survey from the skies, he noticed flocks of Mutant Giant Birds swooping down to swallow some of the zombies.

When a large number of them were gobbled up by the Mutant Giant Birds, having eaten their fill, the aerial beasts took to the skies again and disappeared behind a nearby mountain range.

Since the apocalypse, countless Mutant Beasts had increased in size. The large density of life in the seas had allowed the larger Mutant Beasts to eat their fill. On land, many of these Mutant Beasts treated humans and zombies as their food sources.

“I might be able to make use of those Mutant Beasts!”

Yue Zhong looked at the flock of Mutant Giant Birds flying, and directed Greenie to follow them.

Yue Zhong sat on Greenie and flew towards the mountain range. When he reached, he leaped down, and activated his Second Order Stealth. His body was instantly shrouded in a layer of energy,

distorting others' perception of his.

Under the cover of the night, Yue Zhong proceeded carefully towards the nesting areas of those Mutant Giant Birds.

Within the huge mountain range, there were numerous Mutant Beasts. As he walked carefully through the dense foliage, he could see spiders the size of discs, Mutant Wolves the size of tigers and lions. There were even huge mice as large as buffalos. Many had reached their Type 2 stage.

Under the cover of the Second Order Stealth, he evaded them and proceeded deeper into the mountain range.

The deeper he went, the larger the Mutant Beasts. Yue Zhong had even caught sight of some Type 3 Mutant Beasts. He held his breath, trying his best not to arouse their attention. His aim wasn't to kill these powerful Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

All of a sudden, he heard an earthshaking roar. At the same time, numerous roars sounded out in succession.

When he heard that, his heart was shaken: "That sound, a Type 4 Mutant Beast?!"

Yue Zhong walked towards the source of the commotion.

In the dense forest, a fierce battle was happening between two powerful beasts. One was a bear-like monster about 6m, its body covered in a layer of black scales. It had powerful fists that could envelop an entire human body. Its claws were 1m long, and it was engaged with a beast that had the head of a tiger and body of a leopard. The other beast was covered in a layer of white scales, each of them incredibly sharp. There was a single horn on the head of the tiger-beast.

Although the bear-like monster was huge, it was incredibly agile. Each movement it made, there was a fleeting shadow left in its wake. Its speed had exceeded the Type 3 Lightning, and surpassed the sound barrier. With each slap, there would be a Mach-1 force

behind its fists. Its strikes would punch through the scales of the tiger-like beast when connected, drawing blood.

The tiger-like beast's speed was even more terrifying. It seemed even faster than the bear-like monster. Each time the bear-like monster drew blood with its fist, the tiger-like beast could launch 2 attacks in retaliation, tearing flesh from its enemy as well.

“Level 95 Mutant Beast: Type 4 Steel-Armor Bear.”

“Level 96 Mutant Beast: Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger.”

“What terrifying Type 4 Mutant Beasts!” Yue Zhong crept past them as he watched them going at each other, his heart full of shock.

The two of them weren't exceptionally large, in fact, their bodies could not even compare to some Type 2 Mutant Beasts. However, their combat abilities far surpassed any Type 2 Mutant Beasts. If Yue Zhong had to go against either of them, he would not last more than 10 rounds, his defenses would be destroyed utterly by them, before being killed.

Yue Zhong looked at the 2 of them and held his breath as much as he could, not daring to make any rash move while in his Stealth mode.

The recovery of those 2 Type 4 Beasts was simply too sick, each time they dealt blows to each other, their vitality would cause the flesh and wound to recover at an incredible pace in front of their eyes. The battle got even fiercer the longer it lasted.

“Ah! Is that the lair of one of them?” Yue Zhong gazed about, surveying the surroundings, when he suddenly caught sight of a large den about 200m away from the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger.

Yue Zhong gazed at the 2 beasts tearing into each other in a frenzy, and knew that the outcome wouldn't be decided so quickly. He decided to go check out the den of the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger.

He was extremely careful, as both beasts had their attentions on each other, he could make his way towards the den under the cover of his Second Order Stealth.

When he entered the den, he was hit by a strong stench. It was evident that the Mutant Beast lacked any hygienic habits. There were countless Mutant Beast bones littered all over the den. Some were even from Type 3 Mutant Beasts. Yue Zhong's heart raced and he immediately took all the sharp claws and bones into his Storage Ring.

Such leftovers, if turned into weapons, the sharpness could exceed even the Black Tooth Blade of Yue Zhong. However, the only thing was that those who used such handmade weapons would not be able to absorb the experience from killing any Mutant Beasts.

Even so, their claws and teeth were incredible treasures.

Yue Zhong absorbed over dozens of such claws and teeth before he arrived at the deepest recess of the den.

Within the deepest part of the cave, there was a blood-filled lake, and right in the middle, there was a blood-colored lotus that radiated. There were 4 blood-like lotus seeds budding, as the lotus flower continued to emit an alluring fragrance. It was apparently a precious item.

Not far from the lotus, there was a patch of grass, where a giant egg the size of a human laid. There were strange runes carved all over the giant egg, which was glowing and shimmering ever so slightly, as though it was breathing.

Beside the egg, there was a pile of nuclei. This was evidently leftovers the Type 4 Mutant Beast had set for its child.

Eyeing the blood lotus, the huge egg as well as the pile of nuclei, Yue Zhong's eyes lit up in joy: "Treasure!! These are all incredible treasures!! I've really struck it rich!"

He swiftly got out a glass basin, and stored the blood lotus, root and all into it. He then waved his hands and swept all the nuclei into his Storage Ring, before grabbing the giant egg and making a mad dash for the exit.

The moment Yue Zhong exited the cave, he activated his Shadow Steps, Bone Encompassing Armor, and let out a sharp howl towards the skies. The blood lotus and huge egg in his hands were biological lifeforms, and could not be kept in the Storage Ring, hence he could only escape.

The moment he exited, the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger could smell the blood lotus. It turned to face Yue Zhong, and leapt through the air, shooting for Yue Zhong with a terrifying speed. It reached out with its claw and swiped at Yue Zhong's head with the speed of sound.

# Chapter 597: Mutant Infected Womb!

---

The speed of the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger exceeded the Type 3 Lightning. Even after Yue Zhong had undergone so many enhancements, he could not match its speed.

When the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger moved, Yue Zhong's Danger Perception was pushed to the max, and a strong threat of death overcame him. With a thought of his mind, a Shield of Light materialized in front of him.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger's claw smashed into the Shield of Light, and with a 'kacha', the shield disintegrated, falling to the ground in pieces.

Yue Zhong was horrified, and he quickly activated the other Shield of Light in front of the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger.

With another swipe, the other Shield of Light was also destroyed, and only managed to obstruct it for a mere second.

In that second, Yue Zhong activated his Devil Flame, and a powerful flame that could devour everything spread out towards the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger.

A light flashed past the eyes of the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger, and it leaped above the terrifying Devil Flame tornado.

Just as it was about to launch another attack, the Type 4 Steel-Armor Bear suddenly appeared behind it and sent a claw smacking into its body, tearing a huge chunk of meat.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger let out a piercing howl of rage, and its eyes seemed to burn with anger. It turned to smack the Type 4 Steel-Armor Bear once, leaving a huge scar on the body of the Type 4 Steel-Armor Bear.

In the air, Greenie turned into a shooting star and shot down, grabbing Yue Zhong, before shooting back into the skies.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger saw this, and bellowed in rage. Its single horn shone with a white light, before firing a single beam of light at Yue Zhong and Greenie in the skies.

Yue Zhong's face fell, and activated the Bronze Spiritual Bell, covering himself and Greenie.

The white light slammed into the green shield from the Bronze Spiritual Bell, penetrating the protection, and pierced past Yue Zhong's leg, causing it to disintegrate. The white light continued past Greenie's body, causing a large hole, as fresh blood dripped.

When Yue Zhong's right leg was disintegrated by that white light, he almost fainted from the pain.

Greenie howled out in anguish, activating its innate ability, as it controlled the winds around it to reach the speeds of Mach 1.8, sending them towards the direction of Ning Xi City, disappearing in a flash.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger howled out once more, but it was helpless towards Greenie in the skies. It was a tyrant of the land, and while it was a fearsome entity on the ground, it couldn't do anything to those in the skies.

Greenie bore the pain and landed nearby Ning Xi City while wobbling.

Yue Zhong jumped down with his remaining leg. He saw the gaping hole in Greenie, and was filled with heartache and fear. He had really risked too much, and underestimated the might of the Type 4 Mutant Beasts. Without Greenie's help, even if there were 10 of him, they would have been killed by the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger.

At Yokosuka Base, Yue Zhong had met many Type 4 Mutant Beasts, and their strength and power innate abilities had opened his eyes. However, they all had a weakness, which was when they came onto shore, they were not as powerful as in the seas. That



was how he had managed to use the opportunity to kill 2 weakened Type 4 Mutant Beasts.

However, the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger was still an absolute Overlord on land, its speed having exceeded the sound barrier. While its strength could not match up to those Type 4 Mutant Beasts of the seas, it was still something humans still couldn't contend with. It was a terrifying existence, and Yue Zhong was still lacking.

With Yue Zhong's current strength, he could easily kill a Type 2 Mutant Beasts, against a Type 3 Mutant Beast, he would still be in slight danger. It was basically impossible to face against a Type 4 Mutant Beast at this point.

Yue Zhong quickly pulled out a handful of Type 3 Nuclei to give to Greenie: "Eat them!"

After Greenie swallowed those nuclei, it curled up into a ball, and focused on recovery. Type 3 Mutant Beasts also had powerful regenerative abilities. It was just that the blow from the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger had injured it greatly, and it needed to rest for sometime to regain its strength.

Yue Zhong pulled out a number of Type 3 Mutant Beast meat as well as Type 4 Mutant Beast meat and began to consume them.

As the large amount of high-level meat disappeared in his mouth, his Regeneration skill kicked in, and he felt an itch at his right leg. Flesh began to grow back at a visible rate, as a new leg grew out slowly.

After a day's time, Yue Zhong's right leg had regenerated. Greenie had also recovered from its grievous injury from consuming those Type 3 nuclei.

"I wonder who was the winner of that battle."

After recovering, Yue Zhong jumped on Greenie's back, and directed it to fly over the mountain range.

“Good! Seems like the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger won! Quick, lower and fly towards Ning Xi City.” When they neared the mountain range they saw a huge horde of Mutant Beasts galloping towards their direction. A terrifying killing intent was fixed on them, originating from within the horde of Mutant Beasts.

Greenie was also extremely fearful of the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger. It hurried and flapped its wings as it flew towards Ning Xi City.

Among the beast horde, the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger let out an enraged roar, and the beast horde increased its speed towards Ning Xi City.

Type 4 Mutant Beasts were considered Overlords on the land, and could control other Mutant Beasts. Having lost its treasure and its child, the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger was thoroughly enraged, riling up numerous Mutant Beasts in a bid to kill Yue Zhong and to kill the rest of the puny humans.

The horde of beasts continued to charge towards the direction of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong leaped down from Greenie, and hopped onto his Swift Shadow Bike, before charging towards Ning Xi City. He needed to leave behind a trail for the Mutant Beasts to follow.

At the entrance of Ning Xi City, a large number of zombies were attracted by the blood lotus in his grasp, and they begun to move towards him.

Within the glass basin, there were also numerous Type 2 and Type 3 blood essences, and these were important evolving nutrients for the zombies.

Yue Zhong shot those staggering zombies a look, and activated his Bone Encompassing Armor, reaching out with his right hand, and shot a bone spike into the ground, sending him up onto a building.

The Mutant Beast horde that was chasing after Yue Zhong had also arrived, and as they charged through the zombie horde, they tore the zombies apart.

Yue Zhong saw that his plan was coming to fruition, and began to rush towards the centre of Ning Xi City. He needed to create the perception that he was hiding within Ning Xi City, and cause the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger to attack the center of the city.

Watching Yue Zhong escape, the Mutant Beasts became furious.

A number of Type 2 Black-Scaled Boars charged through the zombie horde like tanks, sending them flying, as they continued to rush straight for the deeper parts of the city. The rest of the Mutant Beasts also continued forward, steamrolling over the numerous corpses.

With the sudden attack of the Mutant Beast horde, it enraged the zombie controller in Ning Xi City. Numerous L4s, L3s, S4s, S3s and other evolved zombies charged for the Mutant Beast horde.

The 2 mighty armies clash, and countless abilities were displayed from the Mutant Beasts, as both sides tore into each other, the body count rising constantly.

Mutant Beasts were invincible existences to ordinary zombies, but the evolved zombies possessed enough strength to threaten them.

As Yue Zhong weaved in and out on the roofs of the buildings, he was chased by a number of Type 2 Hunters, chasing him while crawling up buildings like lizards.

He had to stop from time to time, waving his Black Tooth Blade to kill them with a single slash. With his current strength, as long as he wasn't swarmed by them, he could still carve out a bloody path for himself.

Yue Zhong continued to make his way towards the center of Ning Xi City, while keeping his distance from the Mutant Infected

Womb. That existence was simply too dangerous. Yue Zhong did not want to be assaulted by that freak.

There was no known data on the attack patterns of the Mutant Infected Womb, and to Yue Zhong, an unknown enemy was too dangerous. If he wasn't careful, he could possibly slip up, and might lose his life as a result.

However, the Mutant Infected Womb could feel the strong scent of blood from the clash between the zombies and beasts, and begun to move there.

It was large, but extremely agile. Its speed was even comparable to Yue Zhong. It continued forward like a tank, bulldozing over any unfortunate zombies in its path.

The Mutant Infected Womb soon came to the battlefield, and with a swipe of its huge tentacles, a number of the evolved zombies were slapped away, slamming into walls and their bodies broke down, their brains and innards splattering everywhere. It then shot out a tentacle with a sharp barbed spike at the end towards a 7m-tall Type 2 Black-Scaled Boar, and pierced its brain.

With its snake-like head opening its wide jaws, revealing countless rows of sharp teeth, the tentacle brought the Type 2 Black-Scaled Boar towards it, and chomped down on the Mutant Beast, fresh blood flowing everywhere. It munched and chomped, swallowing the Type 2 Black-Scaled Boar in a gruesome and horrifying manner.

# Chapter 598: Clash of 2 Tigers!

---

The gargantuan Mutant Infected Womb began to devour the Type 2 Black-Scaled Boar in huge mouthfuls, with its stomach expanding rapidly for a short while, before deflating to its usual shape. The dozens of tentacles with sharp barbed tips were thrashing about constantly, turning a number of Mutant Beasts into meat paste, before sweeping their remains into its huge mouth to consume.

The Mutant Infected Womb was like an insatiable beast, swallowing large numbers of Mutant Beasts.

Fresh blood splattered everywhere, with dismembered limbs lying about. Its surrounding was like it had been struck by a disaster, and it didn't matter whether they were zombies or Mutant Beasts, as long as they were within its vicinity, they would be killed.

Yue Zhong observed this from afar, and was filled with shock: "It's freaking strong!! What a terrifying existence!!"

The tentacles flailing about were truly horrifying, with each strike easily smashing the heads of the Type 2 Black-Scaled Boars. With the defenses on Yue Zhong, even if he were to activate all of them together, it would at most be enough to defend against one strike from that Mutant Infected Womb before he would be smashed to death.

One Type 2 Mutant Poisonous Python of about 80m opened its jaws wide and fired a number of poisonous green fog in short bursts at the Mutant Infected Womb. Those green blobs of poison were the innate ability of the Type 2 Mutant Poisonous Python, and it could corrode even the toughest carapaces on Type 4 Mutant Beasts. When the poison landed on the body of the Mutant Infected Womb, it began to sizzle, and the flesh began to corrode. However, even though the poison corroded the flesh, it would recover at a

speed visible to the eye. The corrosive ability could not match the speed of the flesh's regeneration.

The Mutant Infected Womb slapped out with its tentacles, and hit the head of the Type 2 Poisonous Python, smashing it into smithereens. Another tentacle pierced into its body, and dragged the entire corpse towards the mouth of the Mutant Infected Womb.

It was incredibly ferocious and anything it touched, would die. Mutant Beasts were consumed by it at a frightening speed. And all it was doing was using its tentacles to slap around. The Type 2 and Type 3 Beasts could do nothing to block the tentacles, and they were consumed immediately after being smacked. Its flesh and body was able to recover even under the innate ability attacks, with no visible wounds barely 5 seconds after the attacks.

Where it was currently occupying, the other evolved zombies tried their best to avoid. The other high-level Mutant Beasts were also frightened till they trembled when they saw what the Mutant Infected Womb was capable of.

Yue Zhong watched from afar and his scalp felt numb as well. This terrifying monstrous entity was even scarier than the Type 4 Flame Bird, and he didn't dare to approach it even with his strength.

As the Mutant Infected Womb continued to devour the Mutant Beasts, it grew a new tentacle with a sharp, barbed end, and became even more threatening.

As the monstrous freak of nature continued to devour the Mutant Beasts, a powerful beam of light came shooting from a distance, blasting into the chest of the Mutant Infected Womb. It penetrated the entire chest, resulting in a bloody hole the size of a fist. Some strange pus oozed out from the wound, and dripped onto the ground. The pain caused the Mutant Infected Womb to scream out in agony. This was the first time it had suffered a grievous wound.

Such an attack that could pierce the entirety of the Mutant Infected Womb was not a simple one. It caused the Mutant Infected Womb to scream in pain, and its attacks became even more ferocious. It began pulling in more Mutant Beasts into its mouth at a faster speed, before chomping and gobbling them up. Its flesh then began to heal at a visible rate.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger could not watch anymore as it hid behind the mutant beast horde, and after it had fired that powerful white beam of light, with a single leap, it charged towards the centre of Ning Xi City.

“Damn it, its target is still me!” Yue Zhong was on top of a building, and he determined that the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger was still not giving up on Yue Zhong, or rather, its offspring.

“What a pity!!” When he knew that the White-Scaled Tiger was aiming for him, he immediately took out the egg and threw it towards the Mutant Infected Womb. With his 12-times Strength, the egg shot towards the Mutant Infected Womb with a shooting-star like speed.

When the Mutant Infected Womb felt the incoming projectile about 20m away, it reached out with its large tentacle, and smashed its tentacle towards the egg. Instantly, the egg was smashed into smithereens, revealing a partially-formed White-Scaled Tiger fetus.

The tentacle then pierced into the fetus, and brought it into its mouth. As its sharp teeth clamped down, the fetus was directly turned into minced meat.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger let out a piercing roar of grief and rage. It immediately pushed its speed to the maximum and charged right at the Mutant Infected Womb. Its powerful claws came swiping down on the body of the Mutant Infected Womb, clawing out a huge chunk of meat.

The Mutant Infected Womb retaliated by sending dozens of its

tentacles smashing towards the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger.

At this point, the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger exhibited its insane agility. Its body continued to flash about, dodging every single one of those tentacles. At the same time, it would slash out with its claws, drawing blood every time.

The regeneration ability of the Mutant Infected Womb was on another level though, and even though the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger was drawing blood with each attack, within 5 seconds, flesh would grow back and render the previous attack useless. Such a regeneration rate was beyond 10 times that of the White-Scaled Tiger.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger single-handedly faced off against the Mutant Infected Womb, while the rest of the Mutant Beasts resumed engaging against the rest of the zombie horde.

Within the city, as both sides clashed against each other in an explosive manner, Yue Zhong activated his Second Order Stealth and watched the battle between the 2 titans at the centre of it all.

The battle between the 2 of them lasted an entire day. Even with such a drawn-out battle, the regeneration ability of the Mutant Infected Womb did not seem to slow down. In fact, it was still as active as when it first acted out, as though there were no signs of exhaustion. There wasn't a single wound on it, because every single injury would heal within seconds. However, the same could not be said for the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger. It was getting exhausted, as a numerous injuries covered its body. The injured flesh was decomposing, and there was a putrid smell in the air. In a short period of time, it could perhaps dodge most of the attacks. But, in the span of the entire battle, it was still impossible for it to be resilient.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger caught sight of a space, and immediately twisted its body to leap through. It used its sharp claws to propel itself up a large building, scaling all the way to the



roof. It then turned to face the Mutant Infected Womb with its single horn, and fired the powerful and threatening beam of white light.

The devastating white light immediately shot through one of the eyes of the Mutant Infected Womb, penetrating its head, and dissolving the brain by  $\frac{1}{5}$ .

Regardless of the biological makeup of any entity, the moment the brain was vaporized beyond a certain amount, there would only be death. However, the Mutant Infected Womb just screamed out in agony, and numerous tentacles rose like the waves of the sea to crash against the White-Scaled Tiger.

Having fought such an exhausting battle the entire day, adding on to its overdrawn energy for firing that devastating beam of light, the White-Scaled Tiger was almost spent. It could not defend nor dodge the incoming attacks of the Mutant Infected Womb, and it was sent soaring through the air for about dozens of meters. It smashed through one building, and if it wasn't for the scales on its body, it might already have turned into meat paste.

At this moment, the most terrifying scene was happening. Although  $\frac{1}{5}$  of the brain of the Mutant Infected Womb had been vaporized by the beam fired by the Mutant White-Scaled Tiger, it was already beginning to regenerate slowly. The speed might not be as fast as how its fleshly wounds were healing, but one could still see the reforming of the brain matter.

Yue Zhong kept his gaze fixed on the Mutant Infected Womb throughout the whole process, and noticed that as the Mutant Infected Womb was regenerating, one of the tentacles on its body shrivelled up and dropped off its body.

“The brain is truly one of its weak points. However, this freak is too terrifying. It can even recover from such a degree of injury. Its tentacles should be part of its stored up strength and vitality. If I can't damage the brain, then I must at least destroy the tentacles.

It truly is a bitch to deal with.” Yue Zhong frowned as he assessed the situation, with the dozens of tentacles, this monstrous entity was truly threatening. He had to deal with those tentacles before he could utterly annihilate this Mutant Infected Womb.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger leaped out from the rubble of the building in a breath, and it fired another beam of white light at the Mutant Infected Womb.

The Mutant Infected Womb twisted its body, and brought several of its tentacles up to block that attack.

The devastating white light penetrated the tentacles, and blasted through its head, before vaporizing more of its brain.

# Chapter 599: Striking while the iron is hot!

---

The Mutant Infected Womb howled once more in extreme pain. It immediately adjusted its body and tried to flee towards the distance. It could feel the amount of danger the White-Scaled Tiger posed to it, it was more than enough to cause its demise.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger flashed through the battlefield like a specter, latching on to the Mutant Infected Womb, firing its unique white light in multiple beams, causing numerous holes on the Mutant Infected Womb.

However, because the Mutant Infected Womb was moving constantly, it was extremely hard to hit its head. While most of the blows caused the Mutant Infected Womb to be covered in multiple wounds, none had hit its head again.

As the Mutant Infected Womb was escaping, its brain was still continuing to regenerate under its sick healing ability. The moment its brain was fully regenerated, it brought up its powerful tentacles and launched attacks back on the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger like a torrential downpour.

Under the relentless assault of the Mutant Infected Womb, the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger was once again sent flying into the air, its body riddled with wounds.

Yue Zhong stood on top of a tall building, and as he watched the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger losing its advantage, he immediately barked an order into his walkie-talkie: “It’s time, begin the assault!”

After giving that order, he then leaped onto Greenie’s back, and they soared into the sky.

“Attack!!”

Under Yue Zhong’s order, a number of artillery troops on standby began firing from outside the city.

Hong!! Hong!! Hong!!

Powerful shots resounded throughout Ning Xi City, as a large number of cannons lit up the sky when they came shooting down towards the hordes of zombies and Mutant Beasts, blasting them into pieces.

Yue Zhong's artillery troops had already undergone numerous training and exercises, and they had chosen the locations where the zombies and Mutant Beasts were concentrated. Each time a rocket landed, it would take out at least tens of thousands of zombies.

Under the fearsome volley of heavy fire, a number of L4s that were as large as houses were also not spared.

A large Type 2 Mutant Python was blasted apart by a round of 122mm cannons.

In the skies, 8 Thunder Fighters and the Sky Fortress came swooping over Ning Xi City, firing countless bombs, enveloping the large areas where the Mutant Beasts and zombies were clashing.

Amidst the explosions, countless zombies and Mutant Beasts were killed every second. This was the might of advanced weaponry and tactics of the human race.

The Mutant Infected Womb was also treated as a high-priority target, and the 8 Thunder Fighters fired numerous rockets at it, covering its flesh and body with numerous wounds.

Although the Mutant Infected Womb was terrifying, its effective attack range was only about 30m. Against those Thunder Fighters in the skies, it could only dodge and evade, while screaming out in pain.

The Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger was already heavily injured before, and it was caught in the blast of one 122mm round, sending it flying through the air again.

The loud explosions rang throughout the city, these were the ammunition that Yue Zhong had accumulated in Yan Zhou City these few months. He had also brought in any heavy artillery that they had found in their scavenging expeditions. These were all just to conquer Ning Xi City, and to fully gain control of the Newbie Village.

When Enhancers reached Level 10, through the Job Change option, Yue Zhong could gain a whole load of talents. By selecting soldiers, he could train up an entire battalion of elites. Some could also be groomed as doctors, then he would have healthcare. Some could become scientists, and his research and development team would be strengthened and grow.

Of course, it was not that once they went through the Job Change that they would instantly become experts of their chosen field. However, they would gain the advantage in their growths there. At the very least, they could still become lower-level doctors or scientists, and to Yue Zhong, this was more than enough for the short term.

The terrifying explosions continued without stopping. Other than the huge door with the 2 lights, the rest of Ning Xi City was covered in explosions. Each blast radius was enough to take out hundreds and thousands of zombies. To experts who had to fend off horde attacks, such groups were difficult to entangle with, but to the powerful artillery, they were great targets.

Under the constant ravaging of the artillery, the zombies of Ning Xi City were at a loss. They could not see the enemy, and did not know what to do, only suffering the damage from the projectiles.

As for the other Mutant Beasts, having lost the pressure from the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger, many started to flee out of Ning Xi City.

Yue Zhong did not deploy his troops to go stop the Mutant Beast Horde, in any case, he had only intended to make use of them to

kill the zombies. To truly conquer Ning Xi City, it would still require Yue Zhong and his army.

The powerful heavy artillery continued throughout the night, consuming almost everything in the flames, as countless zombies and Mutant Beasts laid charred and dead across the city.

The entire city was currently clear and quiet, and the once-densely packed zombie horde had already disappeared, leaving behind only the charred bodies, some still burning slightly, as well as a few scattered groups that had somehow survived the night raid.

Hu Yi thus led the 1st Regiment right into Ning Xi City.

Under the lead of the 4 different commanders of the 4 Battalions within the regiment, they split up and began to clear the zombies. Many of the zombies had barely just stuck out their head at the commotion when they were already shot at by the soldiers. The evolved zombies were taken out by the Enhancers within the troops.

Just using heavy artillery would not be enough to handle the problem, as there were plenty of zombies that had managed to slip past the net. Thus they had to use the ground troops to wipe them out.

Every soldier of the 1st Regiment were veterans and elite soldiers, even more disciplined and stronger than the 5,000-strong Japanese soldiers of the Takama-ga-hara. They were like a power sickle that claimed the lives of the zombies as easily as cutting wheat, and as they marched on, there was almost no resistance to their advance.

Within the city, the zombies numbered about 2 million, but the majority of the evolved ones had lost their lives during the clash with the Mutant Beasts in the previous night, hence, all that was left were largely ordinary zombies.

Under the terrifying artillery fire, hundreds of thousands were

incinerated and blasted to pieces. Even more were reduced from the million that had been left over. Furthermore, since most of the zombie horde was concentrated at the south side of the city, there was not much resistance in the north area.

When Yue Zhong noticed the troops entering the city, he immediately gave an order: “Let Bai He lead the 4th Long-Range Company to assist me.”

The forces that were under Bai He were powerful and elite snipers groomed by Yue Zhong. They were all proficient in the sniper rifles, or possessed the Specialization skill.

Of them, Bai He had the Second Order Enhance Bullet skill, and Level 3 Sniper Specialization. He was the top sniper under Yue Zhong. In fact, he could almost rival the Gun Demon of the Takama-ga-hara. Compared to him, Bai He was just lacking in the fact that he wasn't a dual-attribute Evolver, however, his sniper skills would not lose out.

This 4th Long-Range Company was one of the trump cards kept by Yue Zhong. They possessed powerful destructive power from a long range, and at least 8 of them could shoot down a Thunder Fighter. Every single soldier of the troop could take down a normal aircraft. Their only weakness was close-combat, and they could not compare against powerful close combat experts.

Bai He led his 20 men as they swiftly proceeded towards Yue Zhong's location.

Meanwhile, Yue Zhong was riding Greenie as they soared through the skies, chasing after the Mutant Infected Womb.

The Mutant Infected Womb had been bombarded by the 8 Thunder Fighters, as a large number of rockets were fired at it constantly. However, it waved its tentacles constantly, smashing the rockets away.

Each of these rockets would explode the moment they were

destroyed, and the powerful explosions would cause the tentacles to be blasted apart. However, each time, they would quickly regenerate.

It seemed that the destructive power of the rockets were still far away from that of the Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger.

If they wanted to take down the Mutant Infected Womb in one go, they had to have at least 50 Thunder Fighters firing countless rockets at the same time, bombarding it to death.

However, the moment they couldn't take care of it in one strike, it would be able to regenerate and resurrect itself. It truly was a difficult opponent.

Yue Zhong sat on Greenie's back as he flew up in the sky, over the Mutant Infected Womb, as he watched it regenerate time after time. His scalp went num, this Mutant Infected Womb was truly something else, even more fearsome than the Type 4 Flame Bird or the Type 4 Sea Mutant Beasts that he had come across.

Yue Zhong then quickly gave an order: "Ready cannons, coordinates XXXX."

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Under that order, the area of the Mutant Infected Womb was instantly enveloped by numerous heavy artillery, and it continued for a good 5 minutes, covering the entire space, destroying the surrounding construction and structures, causing dust clouds to rise.

As the dust cleared, Yue Zhong saw the tentacles shielding the brain of the Mutant Infected Womb, its body had been damaged badly under that barrage of rockets. Its dozens of tentacles also dropped off, yet, it was still not dead.

The Mutant Infected Womb had truly suffered greatly under that powerful volley of artillery fire, but, its overbearing regeneration was still kicking in, as its wounds recovered at a rate discernable to



the human eye.

# Chapter 600: The ovum of the Mutant Infected Womb!

---

Yue Zhong roared loudly: “Focus your fire, aim for it head!!”

The 8 Thunder Fighters immediately fired their powerful anti-tank missiles, their guided missiles, and all other rockets at their disposal, blasting the Mutant Infected Womb. Their machine guns were firing rapidly as well, and the volley of destruction came raining down on the Mutant Infected Womb, chipping away at its health.

A number of anti-tank missiles blasted the Mutant Infected Womb, destroying its tentacles, as tainted blood splattered everywhere.

The soldiers of the 4th Long-Range Company had also reached a high vantage point, as they unleashed their abilities and fired at the head of the Mutant Infected Womb. The bright beams caused many tentacles to break off, and revealed the grim and ravaged head.

The moment the Mutant Infected Womb revealed its head, Yue Zhong immediately expended 80 points of Spirit and 20 points of Stamina, condensing a Devil Flame Spear and fired it like a shooting star towards the head of the Mutant Infected Womb, causing it to burn.

Under the relentless burning of the flame, the flesh began to smoke, as large portions of flesh were incinerated and turned into ash. The Mutant Infected Womb could not take it anymore and howled in pain. However, it was still not dead, as its head continued to regenerate.

Yue Zhong did not dare to give it the chance to recuperate, and quickly condensed another powerful Devil Flame Spear and fired it once more.

The Devil Flame Spear shot towards the head of the Mutant Infected Womb like a shooting star, and once more, exploded in a powerful ball of flame, turning its regenerated flesh into ash yet again.

On the other side, Bai He had also executed his Enhance Bullet skill and had fired at the head of the Mutant Infected Womb as well, destroying part of it.

Beams of light shot from a distance, blasting numerous holes in the head of the Mutant Infected Womb, causing it to bleed non-stop.

The Mutant Infected Womb finally could not take it anymore and adjusted its body to flee once again.

Its speed was incredibly fast, surpassing even Yue Zhong. The moment it moved, there was no way for Bai He and his men to get a fix on its head.

The 8 Thunder Fighters were also giving it all they could, firing as many rockets and projectiles as they could, but they kept missing.

“Fuck!! We must not let it get away!” Yue Zhong looked at the fleeing Mutant Infected Womb and his brows furrowed.

The Mutant Infected Womb looked in an extremely pathetic and wretched state right now, but Yue Zhong was clear, as long as it was given enough time, this monstrous entity would recover yet again, at that time, it would be extremely difficult to take it down.

Yue Zhong had already expended 160 points of Spirit, and the 8 Thunder Fighters had no way of firing infinitely due to the lack of ammo, and having expended much of their rockets and projectiles on the Mutant Infected Womb.

If they could not take it down in this short span of time, Yue Zhong would have no choice but to bring his men and retreat.

Otherwise, if it charged into the 1st Regiment at full strength, it

could easily decimate his entire elite force.

Yue Zhong whipped out the Electromagnetic Gun, and fired a shot at the freak of nature. A powerful electromagnetic charge was shot out and blasted a hole in the head of the Mutant Infected Womb.

The might of the Electromagnetic Gun was no joke, at the same time, its consumption was equally terrifying. Ordinary nuclei could only sustain one shot before breaking apart. Type 2 nuclei could support 10 shots before breaking. Type 3 nuclei could give the Electromagnetic Gun 100 shots.

Yue Zhong had used a Type 3 Nucleus and was firing constantly at the head of the Mutant Infected Womb. With his Shadow Steps activated, his Agility had exceeded that of the monster, and with his Marksmanship skill, of every 10 shots fired, 9 would strike the head of the Mutant Infected Womb.

The monster was assaulted constantly by Yue Zhong, and more wounds appeared on its head. After about 300m, being blasted once more by over a few dozens of rockets, it finally crashed into the ground.

The moment it stopped moving, a number of shots that had been Enhanced blasted into the head, ripping it further apart.

Yue Zhong rode on Greenie and arrived at the body of the Mutant Infected Womb, firing his Electromagnetic Gun without mercy.

He did not let up, instead, using 2 Type 3 nuclei to fire without stop, until the Mutant Infected Womb finally stopped twitching, and a huge orb of experience entered his body.

“Congratulations on achieving Level 82. You have gained 2 points of attributes to be allocated.”

When the orb of experience entered his body, and the sweet notification sound rang in his mind, he then heaved a huge sigh of relief. This terrifying existence had finally fallen.

For the sake of obliterating this monstrous entity, the 8 Thunder Fighters had utilized all their ammo, while Yue Zhong himself had almost expended all his Spirit, as well as 2 Type 3 nuclei. He even had the support and help from over 20 other experts and their individual skills as well. He was finally able to kill the monster with all of these.

Had he been missing any of those subordinates or arsenal, he might not have been able to kill the Mutant Infected Womb. The regeneration of this mutated biological lifeform was truly insane.

Beside the corpse of the Mutant Infected Womb, there was a skill book as well as a blue treasure box.

He landed on the ground and grabbed both items.

“Third Order Skill: High-speed Regeneration. After learning this ability, you will possess the regeneration ability of some powerful Mutant Beasts. Learning it requires 400 Vitality, as well as Second Order Regeneration to be enhanced thrice. Learning this skill requires 3 skill points.”

“A Third Order skill, it actually is a Third Order Skill. It’s too bad it’s not a combat ability, but it truly is decent.” Yue Zhong kept the book into his ring, while shaking his head out of pity.

After killing the Mutant Infected Womb, Greenie swooped down and began devouring the flesh of the corpse.

The flesh and blood of High-level Mutant Beasts were essential for zombies, likewise, zombies were nutritious for Mutant Beasts. This was the reason why both sides would kill and hunt each other.

“Ah, what’s this?” Yue Zhong did not mind that Greenie was consuming the flesh of this Mutant Infected Womb, however, his face change when he came to the side of the corpse.

A strange, protruding portion of the abdomen area had been ripped apart by Greenie’s claws. It revealed a huge ovum inside the

corpse, covered in strange runes. The runes were flashing, and it looked extremely mythical and strange.

Yue Zhong activated his Bone Encompassing Armor and wore the Sea MASK, before carefully stepping into the body of the Mutant Infected Womb. He broke apart the nerves connecting to the ovum, and pulled it out from the corpse.

Yue Zhong eyed the huge ovum as large as a human, his eyes disturbed.

The biological lifeform was evidently extremely weak, and Yue Zhong could destroy it in one punch. However, he was slightly reluctant to, as if he could subjugate the life form inside with his Beast Tamer ability, then it would be an additional boost to his strength. Yet, if it happened to a life form like the Mutant Infected Womb, then it would be a disaster to him.

Right as Yue Zhong was hesitating, with a kacha, the runes covering the ovum shattered, and juices spilled out everywhere, as the life form within jumped out and pounced towards Yue Zhong in a gust of wind.

Before he could respond, the life form had already landed on him, and he was utterly shocked, his face drained of color in fear. He had always prided himself in his speed, and could even handle the unbelievably quick Type 4 White-Scaled Tiger. Yet, this entity from the ovum had jumped on him before he could even react, and this scared him greatly.

Yue Zhong was about to conjure up his Devil Flames to incinerate the life form, when he opened his eyes to look, and faltered.

That which was laid on top of Yue Zhong was actually a little girl that looked about 12, her hair silver and long, her limbs as delicate as can be, as though they could be broken with a just a snap. Her skin was extremely fair, her looks exquisite, and her eyes absolutely charming, so much that one could be lost in those eyes.

The little girl laid in Yue Zhong's arms, and stuck out her tongue to lick Yue Zhong's Sea Mask, smiling as she licked.

“High-intelligence Mutant Life Form, possess incredible evolving potential and extremely high intelligence.”

Yue Zhong looked at it, and his scalp turned numb: “What's going on? That freakish thing could actually give birth to such a girl, is she human, or a zombie?”

Yue Zhong had slaughtered so many zombies, but he had never seen a pregnant one that was carrying an ovum, or one that could produce such a beautiful girl.

Yue Zhong tried to pry the little girl from his grasp, but the moment he placed her down, with a flash of her body, she leapt onto him again, smiling adorably.

# Table of Contents

## [God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 501: Vietnamese Princess](#)

[Chapter 502: Roadblock!](#)

[Chapter 503: Terrifying Hailstorm!](#)

[Chapter 504: Fracture!](#)

[Chapter 505: The Glory of Humanity!](#)

[Chapter 506: Conquering the Town!](#)

[Chapter 507: Purple Scorpion Xue Ning!](#)

[Chapter 508: Hidden Concern!](#)

[Chapter 509: Evil Youth!](#)

[Chapter 510: Truth](#)

[Chapter 511: Thousand Hero Alliance! Snow Palace!](#)

[Chapter 512: Shangguan Bing Xue](#)

[Chapter 513: Divine Envoy of Steel!](#)

[Chapter 514: Seize The Opportunity](#)

[Chapter 515: Underground City!](#)

[Chapter 516: Laser Gun Designs](#)

[Chapter 517: Burning Halumanda!](#)

[Chapter 518: Ruined!](#)

[Chapter 519: Chaotic Battle!](#)

[Chapter 520: The Situation Is Reversed!](#)

[Chapter 521: Fleeing From Might!](#)

[Chapter 522: Opportunity!](#)

[Chapter 523: L4! Promotion to Level 70!](#)

[Chapter 524: Promotion! Second Order Devil Flame!](#)

[Chapter 525: Pointing towards Yan Zhou!](#)

[Chapter 526: Attacking Yan Zhou!](#)

[Chapter 527: Unstoppable!](#)

[Chapter 528: Pursuit!](#)

[Chapter 529: Gaining Yan Zhou!](#)

[Chapter 530: Evolving Liquid!](#)

[Chapter 531: Railroad!](#)

[Chapter 532: Ji Qing Wu Heavily Injured!](#)



[Chapter 533: Biological Armor!](#)  
[Chapter 534: Type 5 Mutant Beast!](#)  
[Chapter 535: Japan!](#)  
[Chapter 536: Xenophobia!](#)  
[Chapter 537: Blade Beam!](#)  
[Chapter 538: Dispute!](#)  
[Chapter 539: Type 3 Liger Beast!](#)  
[Chapter 540: Killing The Liger Beast!](#)  
[Chapter 541: Takama-ga-hara!](#)  
[Chapter 542: Surrender!](#)  
[Chapter 543: Valley](#)  
[Chapter 544: Battle in the Night!](#)  
[Chapter 545: Defeating the 3-clan alliance!](#)  
[Chapter 546: Enjoyment](#)  
[Chapter 547: Clash!](#)  
[Chapter 548: Annihilating the Arai Clan!](#)  
[Chapter 549: Alliance](#)  
[Chapter 550: Rascal](#)  
[Chapter 551: 5 Evolvers!](#)  
[Chapter 552: Training!](#)  
[Chapter 553: The Viciousness of the Thunder Fighter!](#)  
[Chapter 554: Instant Killing Julius!](#)  
[Chapter 555: Cluster Bomb!](#)  
[Chapter 556: Destroy the Thunder Fighters!](#)  
[Chapter 557: Repelling the Zombie Horde!](#)  
[Chapter 558: Type 4 Nuclei!](#)  
[Chapter 559: Chaotic Battle in the Night!](#)  
[Chapter 560: Takama-ga-hara's 4 Demons!](#)  
[Chapter 561: Beheading Gun Demon!](#)  
[Chapter 562: Battling Tenpyo Saka!](#)  
[Chapter 563: Capturing Tenpyo Saka!](#)  
[Chapter 564: Defeating the 2 armies!](#)  
[Chapter 565: Jasper Green Lotus!](#)  
[Chapter 566: Concentration Camp!](#)  
[Chapter 567: Envoy from Takama-ga-hara!](#)  
[Chapter 568: Attack of the Sea Mutant Beasts!](#)  
[Chapter 569: Aircraft Mothership!](#)  
[Chapter 570: Into the Yokosuka Base!](#)  
[Chapter 571: Zombie Horde's Odd Movements!](#)

[Chapter 572: Army of Sea Mutant Beasts!](#)  
[Chapter 573: Appearance of the Entire Marine Biology!](#)  
[Chapter 574: Escape the Base!](#)  
[Chapter 575: Mer-people!](#)  
[Chapter 576: Corpse Amaterasu!](#)  
[Chapter 577: War between Zombie Horde and Sea Clan!](#)  
[Chapter 578: Tyrannical Corpse Amaterasu!](#)  
[Chapter 579: Mer-people Royal Family!](#)  
[Chapter 580: Hitting Corpse Amaterasu Hard!](#)  
[Chapter 581: Killing the Type 4 Sea Jellyfish!](#)  
[Chapter 582: Electromagnetic Gun](#)  
[Chapter 583: Country A!](#)  
[Chapter 584: Mixed-Chinese!](#)  
[Chapter 585: Hell on Earth!](#)  
[Chapter 586: Massacre!](#)  
[Chapter 587: Slavery!](#)  
[Chapter 588: Country A Northern Coalition!](#)  
[Chapter 589: Defeating the Country A Northern Coalition!](#)  
[Chapter 590: Swallowing 2 cities!](#)  
[Chapter 591: Back to Japan!](#)  
[Chapter 592: Port Fang Cheng!](#)  
[Chapter 593: Pressure!](#)  
[Chapter 594: Forceful integration!](#)  
[Chapter 595: Recruiting Lie Ming Yi!](#)  
[Chapter 596: Strange Blood Lotus!](#)  
[Chapter 597: Mutant Infected Womb!](#)  
[Chapter 598: Clash of 2 Tigers!](#)  
[Chapter 599: Striking while the iron is hot!](#)  
[Chapter 600: The ovum of the Mutant Infected Womb!](#)